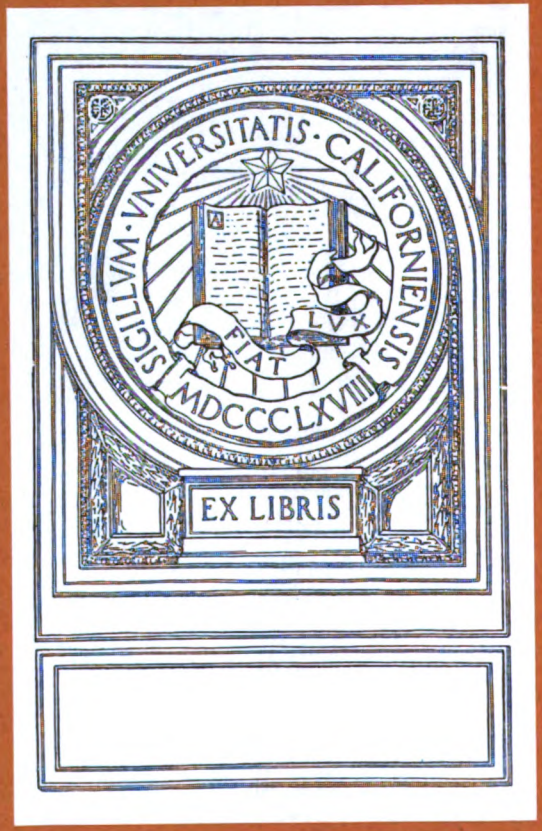
This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

https://books.google.com

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Photo by Mr. G. C. Beresford.

FIELD-MARSHAL SIR WILLIAM R. ROBERTSON, BT., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., K.C.V.O., D.S.O., Colonel The Greys.

Digitized by Google

THE CAVALRY JOURNAL

WITH THE SANCTION OF THE ARMY COUNCIL.
UNDER THE DIRECTION OF
FIELD-MARSHAL THE EARL HAIG, K.T., G.C.B., ETC.
(COLONEL ROYAL HORSE GUARDS AND 17TH/21ST LANCERS),
LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR R. S. S. BADEN-POWELL, BT., G.C.B., G.C.V.O.
(COLONEL 13TH/18TH HUSSARS),
LIEUT.-GENERAL SIR P. W. CHETWODE, BT., K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.,
COLONEL COMMANDANT A. E. W. HARMAN, C.B., D.S.O.,
LIEUT.-COLONEL SIR A. LEETHAM, K.C.V.O., C.M.G., F.S.A.

Vol. XIV

JANUARY to OCTOBER, 1924

Published at
ROYAL UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION, WHITEHALL, S.W.1
LONDON
1924.

Digitized by Google

UE 1
C3
v.14

HONORARY EDITORS AND SUB-EDITORS

Managing Editor:

Major-General T. T. PITMAN, C.B., C.M.G.

Editor:

Captain R. H. O. HANBURY, M.C., 15th/19th Hussars.

Sporting Editor:

Colonel R. J. P. ANDERSON, C.M.G., D.S.O

Sub-Editors:

Royal Horse and Royal Field Artillery.—Lieut.-Colonel WILFRID JELF, C.M.G., D.S.O., Roya! Horse Artillery.

Yeomanry.—Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. WHITMORE, C.M.G., D.S.O., T.D., Essex Yeomanry.

Royal Tank Corps.—Bt.-Lieut.-Colonel W. D. CROFT, C.M.G., D.S.O., Commandant Royal Tank Corps Centre, India.

Royal Air Force.—Squadron Leader W. R. READ, M.C., D.F.C., A.F.C., R.A.F. (late King's Dragoon Guards).

Australia.—Bt. Lieut.-Colonel W. J. FOSTER, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., Department of Defence, Melbourne, Victoria.

Canada.—Brigadier-General R. W. PATERSON, C.M.G., D.S.O., Winnipeg.

Egypt.—Colonel-Commandant C. L. ROME, D.S.O.

India.—The Commandant, Equitation School, Saugor.

New Zealand.—Lieut.-Colonel C. G. POWLES, C.M.G., D.S.O., A.D.C., N.Z. Staff Corps, Wellington.

South Africa.—Major R. S. MAXWELL, 1st South African Mounted Rifles, Pretoria.

Published at

THE ROYAL UNITED SERVICE INSTITUTION, WHITEHALL, S.W.1

Director of Publicity:

C. GILBERT-WOOD, F.R.G.S., F.R.S.A., M.J.I., ETC.,
11, Red Lion Square, W.C.1.

Printers:

EYRE and SPOTTISWOODE, LTD., East Harding Street, E.C.4.

Digitized by Google

INDEX.

Addington, Captain the Hon. R. A.: A Cavalry March, 416
Air Mail from Cairo to Baghdad, The (*Illustrated, Map*). By *Captain R. de la Bere*, 301.
Aleppo during the Armistice. By *an ex-A.D.C.*, 456
Arab Rebellion, The (*Map*). By *Lieut.-Colonel E. B. Maunsell*, 280
Australian Cavalry Leaders, Some (*Illustrated*), 231

Battle Honours, 246, 355, 467
Beaman, Major Ardern, D.S.O.: Hat Trick, The, 442
Man Who Did, The, 336
Portrait, A, being a Reminiscence of 1917, 212
Belgian Cavalry School, Ypres, The (*Illustrated*), 400
Bere, Captain R. de la: The Air Mail from Cairo to Baghdad (*Illustrated, Map*), 301
Big-Game Hunter in East Africa, Extracts from the Diary of a (*Illustrated, Map*), 31, 294
Bridles and Headstalls, Some, used by the British Cavalry since the Formation of the present Standing Army (*Illustrated*). By *Harry Payne*, 312
Byl, Major C. Van der (*late 16th Lancers*): The Sword, 108

Canadian Dragoons, Royal, Action at Bois de Moreuille, 354
Catch as Catch Can on the Frontier. By *Major H. F. Whitby, 19th K.G.O. Lancers*, 223
Cats, Mont des, The Capture of the, October 1914 (*Maps*), 386
Cavalry:
Club, War Memorial, The, 473
Fight near Aleppo, A, October 26, 1918 (*Diagram*). By *Lieut.-Colonel W. J. Lambert, D.S.O., Royal Deccan Horse*, 314
Journal Committee, The, 1
March, A. By *Captain the Hon. R. A. Addington, 8th K.G.O. Light Cavalry*, 416
War Memorial, The Unveiling and Dedication of the (*Illustrated*). By *Lieut.-Colonel Sir Arthur Leetham, K.C.V.O., C.M.G., F.S.A.*, 121, 263
Church Bells which record Military History. By *Lieut-Colonel Sir Arthur Leetham, K.C.V.O., C.M.G., F.S.A.*, 233

De Lisle, Lieut.-General Sir Beauvoir, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.: Regimental Polo, 207, 321
Disbanded Cavalry Regiments. By *Major H. G. Parkyn, O.B.E.:*
21st, 24th, 27th Light Dragoons, 472
28th–33rd Light Dragoons (*Illustrated*), 342

M86381

Digitized by Google

Russian Army, Operations of the Second (*Illustrated, Diagrams*), 135
Russian Cavalry Operations in East Prussia, in 1914 (*Illustrated, Diagrams*) By *Major-General Sir Edmund Ironside, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.*, 5

Scinde Horse, The, Prince of Wales's Own (*Illustrated, Maps*). By *Lieut.-Colonel E. B. Maunsell, p.s.c.*, 38, 167
Second Cavalry Division, The Operations of the (with Canadian Cavalry Brigade attached) in the Defence of Amiens (*continued*). Attack on Rifle Wood, April 1, 1918 (*Diagrams*). By *Major-General T. T. Pitman, C.B., C.M.G.*, 48
Sporting Notes, 127, 253, 360, 475
Steele, Captain Russell V.: Hussars (*Illustrated*), 236
Sword, The. By *Major C. Van der Byl* (*late 16th Lancers*), 108

Teichman, Major O., D.S.O., M.C.: A Dragoon of the Guard, 439
Tiger Hunt in the Central Provinces, A (*Illustrated*), 391
21st Light Dragoons, The, "The Royal Foresters" (*Illustrated*). By *Walter Evelyn Manners*, 82

Vickers Gun Training, Notes on (*continued*) (*Diagrams*). By "*Yeoboy*," 97, 121

Whitby, Major H. F., 19th K.G.O. Lancers: Catch as Catch Can on the Frontier, 223
Whitmore, Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C., C.M.G., D.S.O., T.D.: English and Foreign, Writers, on Military Instructions for Cavalry (*Illustrated*), 234
"Militarie Instructions for the Cavallrie" (*Illustrated*), 74
Writers, English and Foreign, on Military Instructions for Cavalry (*Illustrated*). By *Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O., T.D.*, 234

"*Yeoboy*": Notes on Vickers Gun Training (*continued*) (*Diagrams*), 97
Yeomanry Badges (*Illustrated*). By *Major H. G. Parkyn, O.B.E.*, 324, 450

Digitized by Google

PLATES.

Field-Marshal Sir William R. Robertson, Bart., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., K.C.V.O., D.S.O.	*Frontispiece*	
General Rennenkampf	*To face page*	6
The River Inster at Krau Pischken	,,	6
A Caucasian Cossack	,,	7
Officer of Dragoons	,,	7
Polish Village, North of Ostrolenka	,,	10
A Masurian Lake	,,	10
Type of Steamer used on the Masurian Lake	,,	11
"The Elephant, seemingly, stupefied"	,,	34
Pygmies, with Congo Natives	,,	36
Kilinbuzi, March 22, 1922	,,	37
The Scinde Horse:—		
Charge at Khushk-i-Nakhud, Afghanistan, 1879	,,	38
The Sortie of Deh Khoja, Kandahar, 1880	,,	38
Convoy Duty, with the Bolan in Flood, 1879	,,	39
Outpost Duty on the Helmund, 1879	,,	39
Officer in Fighting Costume, 1848	,,	42
"Instructions for the Cavallrie"—Reproductions	,,	76–77, 234–235
21st Light Dragoons, "The Royal Foresters" 1760–1763	,,	82
Seluki Hounds	,,	88
The Dorset Yeomen at Agagia, February 26, 1916	,,	135
Operations of the Second Russian Army, 1914	,,	142
Captain Jonas Hunt, 4th Light Dragoons	,,	184
Some Australian Cavalry Leaders	,,	231

Digitized by Google

HUSSARS (CONTINENTAL) . . . . . *To face page* 240, 241
THE CAVALRY WAR MEMORIAL, UNVEILING AND DEDICATION . . . . . ,, 263
BIG GAME IN EAST AFRICA . . . . . ,, 298
THE AIR MAIL FROM CAIRO TO BAGHDAD . . . ,, 304
CAVALRY BRIDLES AND HEADSTALLS, 1660–1924 . . ,, 312
HEAVY AND LIGHT CAVALRY, CLOAKED, 1815 . . ,, 342
"THE PILOT" . . . . . ,, 373
"STEEPLECHASING" . . . . . ,, 379
LIEUT.-COLONEL FRANCIS A. DANIELL. . . . ,, 390
A TIGER HUNT IN THE CENTRAL PROVINCES . . ,, 394
THE BELGIAN CAVALRY SCHOOL—YPRES . . . ,, 400
THE SECOND AFGHAN WAR, 1879–80, LIFE AT THUL CHOTIALI . . . . . ,, 410
TROOPER OF THE SIND HORSE, 1880 . . . . ,, 411
THE LAST OF THE MAMELUKES . . . . . ,, 438
THE CAVALRY CLUB WAR MEMORIAL . . . . ,, 473

Digitized by Google

THE

CAVALRY JOURNAL

JANUARY 1924

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA

THE CAVALRY JOURNAL COMMITTEE

THE annual meeting of the Committee took place in the Council Room of the Royal United Service Institute on November 15.

In the unavoidable absence of Field Marshal Earl Haig of Bemersyde, the Chair was taken by Lieut.-Gen. Sir Philip Chetwode, Bart. (G.O.C.-in-C., Aldershot Command). The following officers were present:—Lieut.-General Sir Robert Baden-Powell, Bart.; Major-General Sir Nevill-Smythe, V.C.; Major-General T. T. Pitman; Colonel Commandant A. E. W. Harman; Colonel-Commandant G. A. Weir; Lieut.-Colonel Sir Arthur Leetham; Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore; Lieut.-Colonel W. W. Jelf; Lieut.-Colonel T. B. Phillips; Lieut.-Colonel Geoffry F. H. Brooke; Major P. M. Kerans; Squadron Leader W. R. Reed.

The minutes of the last meeting having been read, the statement of accounts, as circulated to Commanding Officers, was examined and passed.

Lieut.-General Sir Robert Baden-Powell proposed a vote of thanks to the retiring Managing Editor, Major-General Sir Nevill-Smythe. The motion was seconded by Colonel-Commandant A. E. W. Harman and carried unanimously.

Digitized by Google

Major-General T. T. Pitman consented to undertake the duties of Managing Editor. There is no other change to report in the Editorial staff.

A vote of thanks to be communicated to all contributors who are not on the staff of the JOURNAL was proposed by Colonel-Commandant Weir, seconded by Lieut.-Colonel Jelf and carried unanimously.

It was decided that an index of the 13 volumes of the JOURNAL should be compiled and put on sale.

The following matters were also dealt with:—JOURNAL sales; advertisements; paid services (clerks).

A hearty vote of thanks was accorded to the Chairman and the meeting terminated.

Digitized by Google

FIELD-MARSHAL SIR WILLIAM R. ROBERTSON, BART., G.C.B., G.C.M.G., K.C.V.O., D.S.O., p.s.c., THE GREYS

'DISCIPLINE in the rank and file becomes loyalty in the officer' is a remark made by Sir William Robertson in one of his final addresses to the senior students of the Staff College, and this sentence is very typical of him.

No one who has read his book 'From Private to Field-Marshal' can fail to appreciate in his character an exceptional honesty and a phenomenal power of concentration. Under what, to the casual acquaintance, may appear to be rather a gruff manner, he conceals a deep sympathy and an unfailing sense of humour.

One of his staff accompanied the C.I.G.S. to Paris for an Allied Conference of importance during the war, and was somewhat perturbed that not only did the C.I.G.S. fail to make any remark, but the only response to his efforts at conversation was a species of grumbling back; on the way from the Gare du Nord to the Hotel, the Chief turned to him with a smile, so well known to his real friends, and remarked that they had accomplished a most satisfactory journey! The silence was merely the result of some serious and concentrated thought.

Anyone that served with him during the war will remember with what extraordinary interest and affection Sir William followed the doings of officers who had served under or with him in the past, and how greatly he was affected if they were killed or wounded.

Really proud of being a Cavalryman, very fond of horses and horse exercise, and with a memory like blotting-paper,

Digitized by Google

the Field-Marshal surprised many Cavalry leaders when inspecting, during and after the war, by his keen observation and his detailed knowledge even of the multitudinous regimental customs of Lancer regiments.

We are not at a sufficient distance from the Great War to get a true perspective, but the future historian will surely find it difficult to decide whether the greater credit is due for the achievement of the Q.M.G. of the B.E.F. in feeding the Army during the early days of the war; for the resuscitation and reorganisation of the General Staff at the War Office in 1915, and the accompanying work of the C.I.G.S. during more than two critical years of the war; or to the Commandant of the Staff College from 1910 to 1913, who turned out 180 of the Staff Officers that, during the war, carried out the difficult job of expanding the Army tenfold and assisting that Army to bring the war to a successful conclusion.

Digitized by Google

RUSSIAN CAVALRY OPERATIONS IN EAST PRUSSIA IN 1914

By Major-General Sir Edmund Ironsides, K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.

The fate which overtook the majority of the old Russian Regular Officers has left us with little detail upon which to build up the story of the disastrous Russian advance into East Prussia in August, 1914. The following study of the campaign, from a Cavalry point of view, is the result of the discovery of several accounts by Russian officers who took part in the advance, and of a visit paid to the theatre of war in 1922. German accounts always err in overstating Russian numbers, and one is left wondering what it was that rendered the German victory so complete. The facts which follow may help to clear up matters. Several of the orders issued by the Russian Commanders have been included in this account, so that officers may draw their own conclusions, based upon facts to which they have not before had access. Any comments which are made are presented with all due deference to Cavalry readers.

The mass of Cavalry available for the advance raised high hopes of success in Russia. The three chief Commanders concerned, Jilinsky, Rennenkampf and Samsonoff, were all Cavalry officers. The two latter had commanded large Cavalry units in the Manchurian War, and opinion in Russia was divided as to which of the two was the leading Cavalry expert.

1. *Russian Cavalry Organisation.*—The peace and war establishments of the Russian Regular Cavalry were pract-

Digitized by Google

ically identical. There was, therefore, no disorganisation at the outbreak of war, due to the absorption of a number of reservists and unfit horses. Service was for four years with the colours. All were armed with sword, rifle, bayonet and lance, the latter weapon being carried by the front rank only. The rifle, the same as the long Infantry rifle, was carried slung across the back. Each man carried 45 rounds on his person, there being 223 rounds per rifle in the field. The weight of the Cavalry man's clothing, equipment, arms and saddlery was 137 lbs. The horse had to carry an average of 20 stone.

A Squadron consisted of 150 men.

A Regiment (six squadrons) had a fighting strength of 850 sabres.

A Division consisted of 2 Brigades, each of 2 Regiments. The fighting strength was 3,500 sabres, 12 guns, and 8 machine guns.

Although attached to Army Corps in peace, the Regular Cavalry Divisions were employed independently of the higher Infantry units. The Army Corps were left to depend upon 2nd and sometimes 3rd category Cossack squadrons, or sotnias, for internal duties. These sotnias, hastily mobilised at the outbreak of war, were much inferior to the Russian Regular Cavalry. The regiment of six squadrons, which should have been with each Corps, in many cases never materialised, owing to the unexpectedly early advance into East Prussia. The Russian Corps, therefore, found themselves inferior in mounted troops when opposed to similar German units, where the allotment amounted to from six to eight squadrons of first-rate Cavalry per Corps.

2. *Personnel.*—The great mass of the Russian people being illiterate, individual training, even with a period of four years' service, was very backward. Attention was devoted to the training of two groups in each regiment, each of sixteen men. The first group was for scouting, reconnaissance

Digitized by Google

GENERAL RENNENKAMPF.

THE RIVER INSTER AT KRAU PISCHKEN, WHERE THE RUSSIAN CAVALRY DROVE BACK THE 6TH GERMAN LANDWEHR BRIGADE.

Digitized by Google

A CAUCASIAN COSSACK.

OFFICER OF DRAGOONS.

Digitized by Google

and long-distance work, while the second group was for pioneer and communication work. Training in wireless, telephone and telegraph had only just been introduced in this second group.

From a British Cavalry point of view, the Russian Regular Cavalry must be regarded as badly equipped with specialists, and distinctly less well trained.

There had always been a difficulty in finding N.C.O.s of sufficient education; and neither for them, nor for the officers, did any sufficient reserve exist from which to replace casualties.

If there was one particular form of training in which the Russian Cavalry was exercised more than another, it was in that of carrying out long-distance raids. Both men and horses were accustomed to undergo hardships even in time of peace.

3. *Position at the Outbreak of War.*—Owing to various reasons, the Russians did not intend to carry out an immediate offensive against the Germans. They were carrying out an offensive on a large scale against the Austrians.

The situation on the Western Front, combined with the demands of the Allies for early action against Germany, caused the Russian General Staff to change their plans, and they decided to improvise an advance into East Prussia. A new command, called the N.W. Front, was organised to direct the operations of the First and Second Russian Armies, designated for this offensive.

4. *Theatre of War.*—From the Russian point of view, the dominating feature in the theatre of war was the line of the Masurian Lakes, which divided the front available for manœuvre into two parts.

Taking this front from north to south, we can divide it up as follows:—

(i) *Königsberg Area.*—A more or less fortified area extending over the Königsberg peninsula.

Digitized by Google

From Labiau, along the River Deime to Tapiau, the river offers an excellent line of defence. It is navigable for small river steamers and not fordable. The banks are always marshy. There are bridges at Labiau and Tapiau for roads, and a bridge just east of Labiau for the Tilsit–Königsberg railway, but no others. The western bank has a considerable advantage in height, and excellent observation of all exits from the forest, which runs close up to the eastern bank.

From Tapiau to Brandenburg, and thence to the fortified port of Pillau, small field works had been erected, forming the trace of a good line of defence, capable of being quickly strengthened.

In the centre lay the fortress of Königsberg, with its obsolete inner works, strong against anything but heavy artillery. Access to Königsberg was available to ships by the canal from Pillau.

Thus the Königsberg area formed an *enclave* of a depth of 19 miles from north to south. It could hardly be forced, in the absence of heavy artillery, without considerable loss of time and heavy casualties. It could be reinforced at any time by sea, and formed a formidable flanking position from which to menace any force passing it to the south.

(ii) *Insterburg Gap.*—A gap of 43 miles between Tapiau and Angerburg, down the centre of which runs the Insterburg–Allenstein railway. The country is on the whole flat, the general undulations never assuming a height of more than a hundred feet. There are several forest areas, notably those of Rominten, near the frontier, and the district just south of Wehlau. Although these forests are carefully tended and have many paths, they offer a considerable obstacle to the advance of large bodies of troops. The remainder of the country is open, large farms and small villages, each with its clump of trees, being dotted about the fields of corn and fodder, none of which are enclosed. The country is suitable

Digitized by Google

for the movement of all arms, except at a few points where there are marshy bottoms. These are easily distinguishable by the presence of small heaps of black peat put out to dry.

The field of view is often extensive, and, apart from the forest areas, the *terrain* offers an excellent chance for observation from the air, especially in summer, when the dust is excessive.

The River Angerapp, running north from Angerburg, blocks this gap. It forms an excellent line of defence, the right flank resting against the impassable Lake Mauer. Though fordable, the river is a distinct obstacle, the banks being marshy and the eastern commanded by the western. The Germans had reconnoitred this position thoroughly, and it was being strengthened.

(iii) *The Masurian Lake Position.*—A line of practically continuous lakes, stretching from Angerburg to the Russian frontier south of Johannisburg, a distance of 50 miles. The gaps were being busily strengthened by the Germans. Fort Boyen, guarding the Lötzen Gap, though obsolete, could only be reduced by heavy artillery, owing to the impossibility of approach across an open glacis. The lakes are everywhere navigable, and there were many small steamboats for general traffic. These had either been turned into miniature gunboats or removed by the Germans. The shores of the lakes often rise to a hundred feet in height, the forest and marshy reed lands running close up to the water in many places.

The line of the lakes thus presented an impregnable front, capable of defence by very few troops, and offering an excellent screen from behind which the German troops could operate to either flank.

(iv) *The Johannisburg–Soldau Front.*—A distance of 75 miles along the frontier running east and west. On the Russian side of the frontier, the country is a sandy forest waste, intersected with marshy streams, and inhabited by a few Polish peasants. The forest areas are badly tended, and the roads

Digitized by Google

mere tracks. This area had been deliberately left a waste as a defensive measure against Germany. On the German side of the frontier, the good Prussian roads cease as if by magic. As the frontier is left behind, the country becomes more cultivated and more densely inhabited, but it is nowhere enclosed. The important forest areas of Johannisburg and Grünfliess, between Willenberg and Neidenburg, are military obstacles, though better tended than those on the Russian side. Towards Hohenstein and Allenstein the country becomes more undulating, with small areas of forest and several lakes. These lakes run mostly from north to south in narrow strips, and prevent lateral communication between parallel columns marching northwards.

The country was suitable for the movement of all arms, except in the forest areas, and the field of view towards Neidenburg and Soldau often extensive.

Taken as a whole, the areas free for manœuvre, such as the Johannisburg–Soldau front and the Insterburg Gap, were suitable for the employment of large bodies of Cavalry. The going in August was good, and the undulations sufficient to screen movement.

On August 13, 1914, at 8.50 p.m., from the town of Volkovisk, General Jilinsky, the Commander of the N.W. Front, issued his Instruction No. 1, which set the two Russian armies in motion.

It is sufficient to say here that the calculations for the concentration of the Infantry were outrageously optimistic, and resulted in the advance being carried out with many deficiencies in the Corps, notably amongst the Corps Cavalry and Infantry transport.

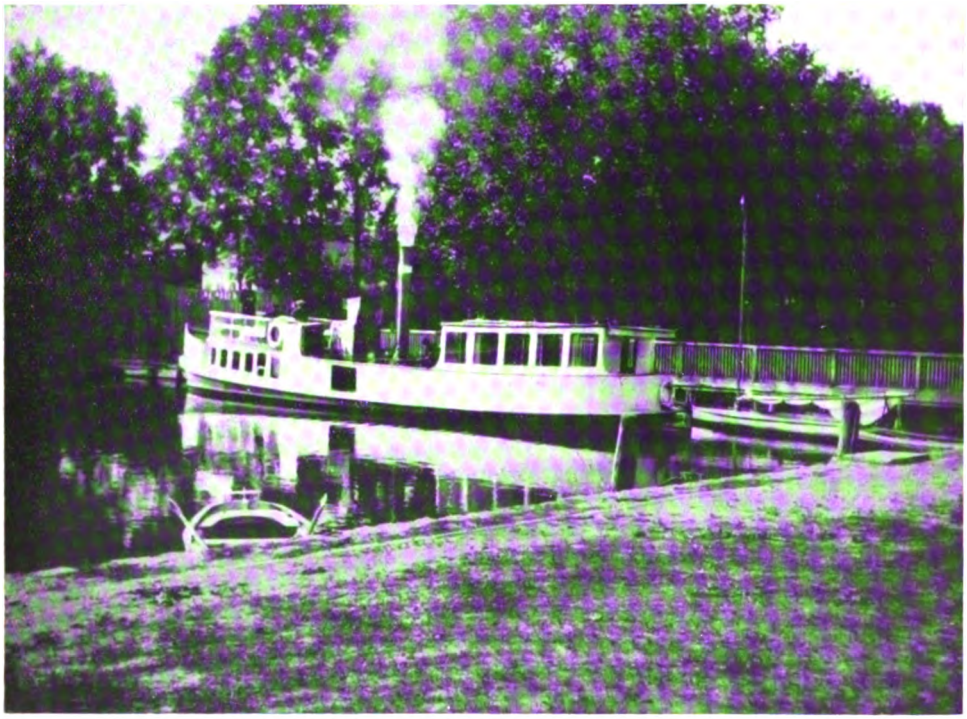
The concentration of the Army Cavalry presented no difficulty, owing to its more complete organisation. The Army Cavalry, in fact, had been able to move up to the frontier with full transport, a few days after the order for general mobilisation had been issued.

Digitized by Google

POLISH VILLAGE, NORTH OF OSTROLENKA.

A MASURIAN LAKE.

Digitized by Google



TYPE OF STEAMER USED ON THE MASURIAN LAKE.

Digitized by Google

(v) *Jilinsky's Instruction No.* 1.—The Instruction ran as follows :—

'The enemy has directed the main portion of his forces against France. According to information received, he has available in East Prussia from three to four Corps, together with some Reserve Divisions and Landwehr Brigades. His advanced guards have moved forward to the frontier, but his main force is undoubtedly situated on the line of the Lakes.

'I intend to assume a vigorous offensive against him, with the object of destroying him, cutting him off from Königsberg, and seizing his communications to the Vistula. For this purpose the First Army will advance from the line Wierzbolowo–Suwalki to the line Insterburg–Angerburg, turning the Masurian Lakes to the north; while the Second Army will advance from the line Augustow–Grajewo–Myszyniec–Chorzele to the line Lötzen–Arys–Rudczanny–Ortelsburg, the main strength being directed from the line Myszyniec–Chorzele to the line Rudczanny–Passenheim, and thence northwards against the rear and flank of the line of Lakes.

'Thus, the advance will be carried out by turning both flanks of the enemy situated in the region of the Lakes, the First Army on the north, and the Second Army on the south.

'In pursuance of the above order, I direct the Second Army to push Cavalry across the frontier along its whole front, on August 18, supported by Infantry wherever possible.

'The main bodies of Corps will follow on the 19th, the main strength of the Army directed to the west of the Masurian Lakes, from the line Myszyniec–Chorzele to the front Rudczanny–Passenheim and further, to the line Rastenburg–Seeburg.

'Owing to the particular importance, during the impending operations, of the Augustow–Grodno region, and the unfinished state of the Fortress of Grodno, I consider it essential that the IInd Corps should cover this region in its advance west-

Digitized by Google

wards from Augustow. I attach particular importance to the energetic execution of this advance during the first few days of the operations, in order to ascertain what forces the enemy has at his disposal.

'For the impending operations advantage may be taken of the 2nd Division, now at Novo Georgievsk, leaving the 1st Rifle Brigade and the Brigade of Frontier Guards as garrison of the Fortress. In addition, the 79th Division, which is concentrating at Malkin on the 22nd day of mobilisation (August 21), will be directed upon Novo Georgievsk, without detraining at Malkin.

'During the advance to the west of the Masurian Lakes, it is essential to keep in view the possibility of an enemy attack from the direction of Allenstein against the left flank of the Second Army, and, therefore, the most intensive reconnaissances will be carried out in this direction. I give the Cavalry the task of screening from the enemy the direction of advance of our Corps, the seizing of particularly important points and crossings, and of penetrating far in rear, in order to prevent the removal of rolling-stock from the railways.

'The First Army will cross the frontier with its main force on August 17, the left flank corps being directed from Suwalki on Angerburg, with protection towards Lötzen.

'The enemy will be engaged vigorously wherever met.

'These instructions do not include the fortifications of Lötzen. If this place is to be attacked, special instructions will be issued.

'The dividing line between armies will be the villages of Lupowka–Polommen–Soltmahnen–Lötzen, inclusive to the Second Army.'

JILINSKY,
General of Cavalry
Commanding N.W. Front.
ORANOFSKI,
Chief of Staff.

Digitized by Google

The plan of the Russian campaign was, therefore, to move the two Armies north and south of the Lake position. Rennenkampf's First Army was to cut the Germans from Königsberg and drive them southwards into the arms of Samsonoff's Second Army advancing to cut their communications to the Vistula.

The operations of the two Armies were independent until Rennenkampf's First Army turned the line of the Lakes to the north.

The operations will, therefore, be examined separately.

Operations of the First Russian Army.

(a) *The Advance to the Battlefield.*—There had been skirmishing on both sides along the frontier from the outbreak of war, but with little material result.

On August 15, Rennenkampf issued First Army Order No. 2 and Instruction No. 1 to his Cavalry. They ran as follows:—

First Army Order No. 2.

Vilna. *August* 15, 1914.

1. Information has been received that units of both Divisions of the German Ist Corps are concentrating on the line Pillkallen–Pillupönen, with a Cavalry Division (six regiments) on the left flank at Pillkallen.

2. In accordance with Instruction No. 1 of the N.W. Front, the Army will cross the frontier on August 17 and will occupy on that day, with the main bodies of Corps, the line Willuhnen–Stallupönen–Germingkehmen–Dubeningken–Kowahlen.

3. Cavalry.—(*a*) General Oranofski will protect the right flank of the Army, reconnoitring to Tilsit–Kraupischken, occupying Schillenen by the evening of August 17.

(*b*) General Khan Nachichivan and General Gourko will carry out the orders in my Instruction No. 1.

Digitized by Google

4. The zones of advance, requisitioning and operations of Corps will be bounded as follows :—

XXth Corps - *North.*—Schirwindt – Willuhnen – Pillkallen–Kussen.
South.—Eydtkuhnen-Stallupönen–Gumbinnen exclusive.

IIIrd Corps - *North.*—The southern line of the XXth Corps inclusive.
South.—Kopsodzie – Wicknaweitschen – Enzuhnen–Walterkehmen exclusive.

IVth Corps - *North.*—The southern line of the IIIrd Corps inclusive.
South.—Przerosl – Goldap – Darkehmen exclusive.

5. The 5th Rifle Brigade is placed under the orders of General Gourko.

6. Headquarters of Corps will pass the night as follows :—
XXth—Wladyslawow.
IIIrd—Eydtkuhnen.
IVth—Przerosl.

7. Reports will be sent as follows :—
Up to 3 a.m. on the 17th to Vilna; after that to Wierzbolowo.

8. Communications *viâ* Imperial Telegraph.

9. Next for command Lieut.-General Mileant, General of Infantry Smirnoff.

Instruction No. 1.

To carry out the orders of the Commander-in-Chief, North-west Front, the Commander-in-Chief of the First Army issues the following orders :—

1. The Army Cavalry will advance in two groups on August 16 :—
(*a*) The right group—on Insterburg, turning Stallupönen and Gumbinnen to the north.
(*b*) The left group—to protect the left flank of the

Digitized by Google

Army, firstly from the direction of Marggrabowa, and secondly from Lötzen.

(*c*) The 1st Independent Cavalry Brigade will protect the right flank of the Army, reaching Schillenen on August 17.

The Cavalry must, moreover, screen the movement of Corps as much as possible and prevent the removal of rolling stock from the railways.

2. On August 17, the main bodies of Corps will reach the line Willuhnen–Stallupönen–Germingkehmen–Dubeningken–Kowahlen.

MILEANT,
Chief of Staff.

The First Russian Army crossed the frontier with the following forces :—

3 Corps (86 battalions and 14 squadrons).
5½ Cavalry Divisions (106 squadrons).

The three Corps, therefore, started with a deficiency of 17 per cent. in their normal complement of Infantry, and their rear services were also incomplete.

Comments upon Rennenkampf's Orders and Instructions.

The three Corps of the Army were to advance in parallel columns of Divisions (six) on a front of 35 miles. At the Battle of Mons, General Von Kluck struck the British Army with six Divisions on a front of 17 miles, and at Le Cateau with eight Divisions on the same breadth of front. Rennenkampf's frontage was certainly too extended for operations against a well-trained enemy, and he would have been better advised to have closed his Corps, by moving them all north of the Forest of Rominten, leaving only inconsiderable forces south of this almost impenetrable obstacle. Not only would his front have been less extended, but he would have brought his main strength into a better position to secure his strategic objective, that of cutting the Germans off from Königsberg.

Digitized by Google

Still, accepting the distribution of the three Corps, we will now examine the grouping of the Russian Cavalry.

The Corps Cavalry amounted to fourteen squadrons of weak and ill-trained troops. This force was barely sufficient to supply the protective duties for such an extended front.

Von Kluck had eighteen squadrons at Mons and twenty-four at Le Cateau.

No other Cavalry was employed in front of Corps.

Rennenkampf grouped his Army Cavalry in three groups, retaining them all under his own command. He thus increased the number of units to which he had to send orders to six. These Cavalry Groups were as follows :—

(1) An Independent Cavalry Brigade to protect the right flank (twelve squadrons).

(2) A Cavalry Division with eight battalions to protect the left flank (twenty-two squadrons).

(3) A Cavalry Corps to turn Stallupönen–Gumbinnen, with Insterburg as objective (seventy-two squadrons).

All through the operations in East Prussia, the Russian Commanders detailed special forces for the protection of the flanks of their advance. These forces were nearly always maintained under the hand of the superior commander. The system of communications was uniformly defective, and in actual practice the orders to these flanking detachments arrived too late to be of value. It would have been preferable to allot an increased proportion of mounted troops to the Flank Corps, thus enabling them to protect the flanks of the advance themselves. The number of units under the superior command would thus have been reduced, without overloading the Flank Corps in this respect. Had Rennenkampf followed this system, he would have had four units with which to deal, leaving the Flank Corps with three each. However, taking into account that Rennenkampf's special attention had been directed towards Lötzen in the south, and that enemy forces had been signalled at Tilsit, this large percentage of mounted

Digitized by Google

troops for employment on the flanks may perhaps be accepted. There still remained the Cavalry Corps of 72 squadrons, 48 guns and 32 machine guns.

There was a complete default of aviation upon the Russian side, which necessitated the employment of the Cavalry well to the front. The collection of accurate information as to the enemy's grouping was the first essential for the success of the advance. Without this, it was impossible to direct the march of Corps, so that they could mutually support one another in case of need, and concentrate towards the areas in which the enemy was in strength, outflanking his groups, and forcing them to retire or be isolated.

Rennenkampf had merely given each Corps a limited supply of protective Cavalry, allotted them a zone down which to advance, and bothered himself no further about the enemy's grouping.

As they stand, his Instructions to his Cavalry Corps are most inadequate. The Corps was directed on Insterburg, moving north of Stallupönen and towards the supposed position of the German Cavalry Division at Pillkallen. In which direction were the twenty-four squadrons of the enemy to be driven? What information was required? What was the Cavalry Corps to do when it reached Insterburg? There are no Instructions upon any of these subjects.

Cavalry, being necessarily detached for long periods without orders, requires the most careful instructions before being moved to the front. It is the duty of the Superior Commander to think out the tasks he requires of his mounted troops, He should then group those available according to the importance of each task. Each group should then be informed of the objective of the formations with which it is operating, and the timing of their movements, being given complete liberty of action to carry out its allotted task.

Rennenkampf had issued no orders to his Corps as to their hours of starting, or as to any line which they were to

Digitized by Google

pass at a given time. The Cavalry could not, therefore, time their operations properly.

The wide front upon which the Army was moving, combined with the fact that the distance from the frontier at which the enemy's advanced troops might be expected was short, pointed to the necessity of dividing the Cavalry Corps into two groups. The only restriction upon the division of the Corps being that a sufficient body should be left to deal with the German Cavalry Division at Pillkallen, it being certain that this was the only body of Cavalry available to the enemy at the moment.

Rennenkampf's objective was the line Insterburg–Angerburg. Between these two places ran the River Angerapp, an historical defensive position. The southern flank of this position rested upon an impassable obstacle. It was essential to ascertain whether the Germans intended to oppose the advance in this position or in front of it, and where the northern flank rested. The First Russian Army was to cut the Germans off from Königsberg and so drive them away from the line of communication through that place to the River Vistula.

It is suggested that Rennenkampf should have grouped his Cavalry as follows:—

(1) *Right Group.*

Strength:—Three Cavalry Divisions.

Objective:—Pillkallen, driving the German Cavalry southwards.

Information required:—

(*a*) Did the enemy intend to oppose the advance between Stallupönen and the River Angerapp?

(*b*) If not, did the enemy intend to hold the River Angerapp; and, if so, where did the northern flank rest?

If the River Angerapp was not held by the enemy, the crossings between Insterburg and the point where the Inster-

Digitized by Google

burg–Gumbinnen railway crosses it to be seized and held until the arrival of the Infantry. Reconnaissances to be sent forward to ascertain whether the enemy was retreating westward or coming up to hold the River Angerapp. If retreating westward, the direction of his march should be ascertained, and every effort made to drive him southwards.

The railway line to be cut in succession west of Stallupönen, Gumbinnen and Insterburg, to prevent the removal of rolling stock.

(2) *Left Group.*

Strength :—One Cavalry Division.

Objective :—Goldap.

Information required :—

(*a*) Did the enemy intend to oppose the advance east of the River Angerapp?

(*b*) If not, did the enemy intend to hold the River Angerapp?

If the River Angerapp was not found occupied, the crossings at Darkehmen to be seized and held until the arrival of the Infantry. Reconnaissances to be sent forward towards Nordenburg and Gerdauen to ascertain the direction of the enemy's march.

These instructions would have given Rennenkampf information as to the initial concentration of the enemy, so that he could make any necessary adjustments to his plan of campaign.

(b) *The First Contact with the Enemy.*

(1) *Events of August* 17. (Sketch A.).—On the 17th, the hours of starting varied from 8 a.m. in the IIIrd Corps to 2 p.m. in the IVth Corps, and no *liaison* appears to have taken place between neighbouring Divisions. The Corps Cavalry failed utterly to reconnoitre in front of the various columns, and, as a result, the 27th Division of the IIIrd Corps found itself attacked in rear by five German battalions with numerous guns, moving up from the south. The left flank regiment, the 105th Orenburg Regiment, was annihilated and

Digitized by Google

the remainder of the Division withdrew in disorder to the frontier once more. At the moment this action was taking place, the 40th Division, the next on the left to the 27th Division, was crossing the frontier some 8 miles further south, and considerably behind its neighbour on the right in point of time.

The remainder of the Russian advance encountered little opposition, the objectives for the day being reached, except in the case of the 27th Division mentioned before. This Division lost some 3,000 prisoners, and suffered heavy casualties in addition.

The Cavalry Corps gained no contact with the enemy, moving wide to the north of Pillkallen. The Cavalry Corps Commander, Khan Nachichivan, reporting pathetically: 'The enemy avoided mounted action and retreated quickly.' The Corps covered 14 miles on this day, and settled down for the night north of Pillkallen.

(2) *German Dispositions.* (Sketch A.).—The German dispositions for this frontier protection may be taken as a good example of what this kind of defence should be.

All roads leading to the frontier were watched by motor detachments, provided with quick means of communication to the headquarters of the various Frontier Protection Detachments.

These were situated as follows:—

(i) Goldap - - - 5 Battalions Infantry.
2 Batteries Artillery.
1 Company Pioneers.

with advanced posts

at { Kowahlen - 1 Machine Gun Company.
3 Batteries Artillery.
2 Squadrons Cavalry.

Gurnen - 1 Battalion Infantry.
1 Battery Artillery.
1 Squadron Cavalry.

Digitized by Google

(ii) Tollmingkehmen -	6 Battalions Infantry.
	6 Batteries Artillery.
	1 Squadron Cavalry.
	1 Pioneer Company.
(iii) Stallupönen - -	9 Battalions Infantry.
	12 Batteries Artillery.
	4 Squadrons Cavalry.
	1 Company Pioneers.
(iv) Pillkallen - -	1 Cavalry Division.
(v) Tilsit - - -	1 Landwehr Brigade.

Thus, a front of 42 miles was observed by a Corps and a Cavalry Division, the Cavalry being placed in the north on the exposed flank. Detachments were of all arms, and sufficiently strong to prevent them being brushed aside before they could obtain the necessary information.

Had the Cavalry Corps moved early on the 17th resolutely towards Pillkallen, it must have driven in the German Cavalry and, moving southwards, would have discovered the strong detachment at Stallupönen and perhaps cut across its rear between that place and Gumbinnen.

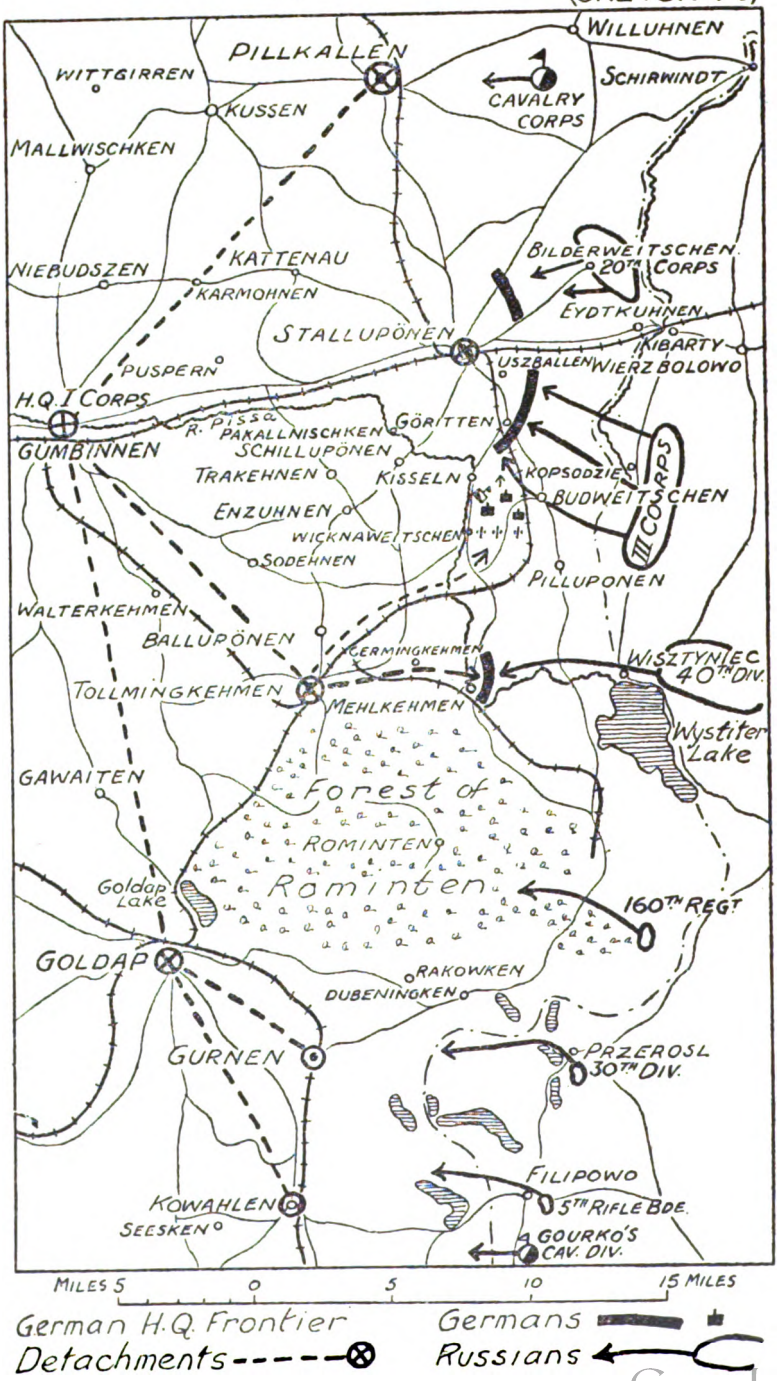
The disaster to the 27th Division could only have been prevented by reconnaissance on the part of the Corps Cavalry, and was due to their incompetence as well as to the over-extension of the front.

No attempt was made by the Russians to follow up the retreating enemy on the 17th, and the disaster to .the 27th Division delayed the sending out of orders for the 18th until the early hours of that morning. No start was, therefore, made until late in the day.

(3) *Events of August* 18. (Sketch A.).—The Russian Cavalry Corps, during the afternoon of the 18th, had some skirmishes with German Infantry and cyclists at Wittgirren and Mallwischken. On this day they covered some 15 miles, making no attempt to locate the enemy left flank, which lay somewhere near Pakallnischken, and no attempt to reach Insterburg.

Digitized by Google

GERMAN FRONTIER PROTECTION.
GERMAN FLANK ATTACK ON 3RD RUSSIAN CORPS.
17TH AUGUST (SKETCH A)



Digitized by Google

The Independent Cavalry Brigade under Oranofski received no orders, and remained all day of the 18th at Schillenen, far in rear.

Gourko's left flank group reached Seesken, having gained no contact with the enemy.

On the night of the 18th, the advanced troops of Corps reached the line Mallwischken–Stallupönen–Pillupönen–Rakowken.

Orders for the 19th and 20th reached units during the early hours of the 19th and in mutilated form. It is curious to relate that the Germans picked up correctly the wireless of the First Russian Army and knew what was about to happen, whereas the Russian units did not.

The line to be occupied on the 19th was given as : Uszballen–Karmohnen–Puspern–Sodehnen–Goldap.

A general halt was to take place on the 20th.

(4) *Events of August* 19. (Sketches B and C).—The Cavalry Corps, hearing that Kraupischken was occupied by German Infantry, moved forward towards that place, coming into contact with the 2nd Landwehr Brigade at Kauschen. The Cavalry attacked, driving the Germans back across the River Inster, and capturing two guns and some prisoners. These two guns were captured by Count Wrangel, then commanding a squadron of Guard Cavalry, and later to be Dennikin's successor in South Russia. Satisfied with this success, the Cavalry Corps then withdrew to the north to Lindental, preparatory for a halt on the 20th.

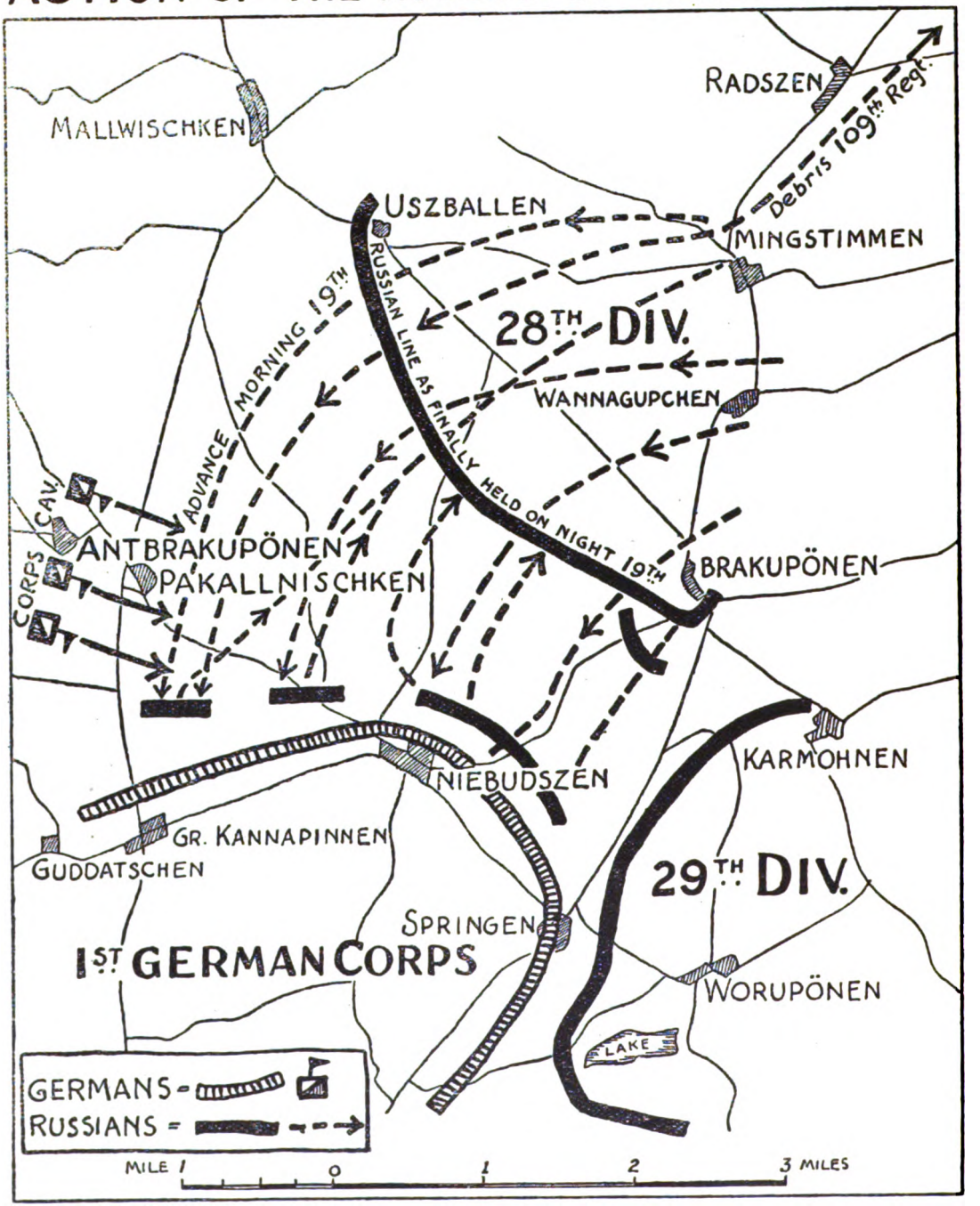
They had covered 19 miles on this day.

As a general rule, Cavalry withdraw at night from the zone between two armies about to become closely engaged, in order that they may not be at the mercy of an enemy night-attack. They withdraw either to the flank of, or behind the troops they are covering. The operation must be properly timed, and full information must be given to the Infantry units in the vicinity, so that they themselves may undertake

Digitized by Google

SKETCH B.

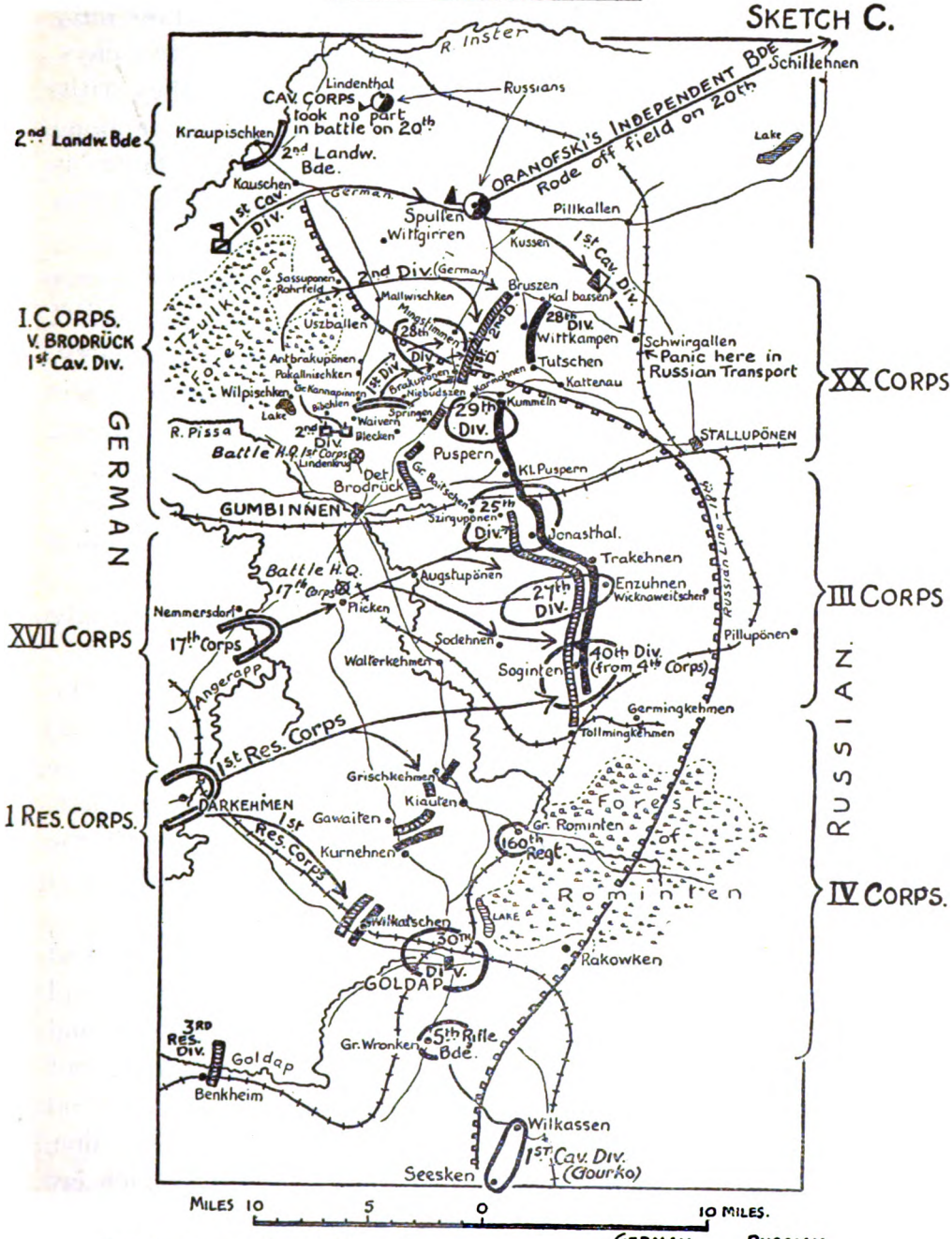
ACTION OF THE RUSSIAN 28TH DIV. 19TH AUGUST.



Digitized by Google

BATTLE OF GUMBINNEN.
20TH AUGUST, 1914.

SKETCH C.



Positions on the night 18th August shewn GERMAN RUSSIAN.
" " " " 19th " "
" " " " 20th " "

Digitized by Google

the service of security and reconnaissance in the narrowing zone between the armies.

In this case, the Independent Cavalry Brigade, whose duty it was to protect the right flank, had been absent for two days. The Cavalry Corps must have known this, and yet they withdrew from in front of Kraupischken about 3 p.m., making no attempt to pursue the Landwehr. The River Inster is no obstacle, being some few feet wide and a foot deep at this point.

They made no attempt to move west of the Tzullkinner Forest on Insterburg, or east of it towards the enemy's left flank, to which the approach was over good Cavalry country. The Cavalry Corps, in fact, meant to make ready for their halt next day. This general halt, which included the Cavalry, had been ordered because the Infantry transport was failing. That the Cavalry should halt also seems inexplicable. Their transport was in good order, and they had covered 48 miles only in three days (17th, 18th and 19th).

The effect of their withdrawal to Lindental became quickly felt on the 28th Division. (Sketch B.)

During the morning, this Division, which was on the extreme right of the Russian line, came into contact with the advanced troops of the German Ist Corps on the line Pakallnischken–Niebudszen—blundering into them, in fact, since they allowed the squadron of Cavalry acting with the Division to move straight into bivouac, whilst the advanced guard moved on without them.

The finding of the Germans dug in in front of them had been reported by neither the Army nor Corps Cavalry, and was quite unexpected. The Russians extended further and further round the German left, seeking to envelop it, but always found the Germans making face to them. In the end there were no more troops with which to extend the line, and no reserves to protect the right and right rear, which lay completely exposed. At that moment the Corps Cavalry of

Digitized by Google

the Ist German Corps came over the hill at Antbrakupönen and crumbled up the Russian line. The Russians retired in disorder, losing some prisoners and many dead and wounded.

The Army Cavalry had withdrawn without reporting, and the Corps Cavalry had not been employed at all, with the result that the Infantry were surprised.

(c) *The Battle.* (Sketch C.)

The Germans learnt of the intention of the Russians to halt before reaching the River Angerapp through the careless use of wireless, and decided to attack at once.

On the German left, the Commander of the Ist German Corps executed a night march through the Tzullkinner Forest with one of his Divisions during the night of the 19th/20th. He had intended to employ the 1st German Cavalry Division on the left flank of this march, but the German Cavalry had moved up northwards to meet the Russian Cavalry Corps near Kauschen, and did not receive their orders. They bivouacked to the east of the River Inster for that night.

The German Infantry attack against the Russian right developed early in the morning, with complete success. The 1st German Cavalry Division, hearing the bombardment to the south, moved down to Spullen, where they encountered the Russian Independent Cavalry Brigade, which had just arrived from Schillenen. A few rounds from the German Horse Artillery were sufficient to drive the Russian Brigade from the field, and the German Cavalry Division penetrated still further southwards to Schwirgallen, where they charged the Russian transport and completed the defeat of the Russian right wing.

The German Cavalry had moved to the sound of the battle and had co-operated successfully with the operations found in progress. They only marred their fine action by not reporting their presence to the left flank German Division, with the result that they were for some time mistaken for

Digitized by Google

Russian Cavalry. The easy defeat of the Russian Independent Brigade of Cavalry, which had no Artillery to oppose to the three batteries of Horse Artillery with the Germans, illustrates the danger of employing Cavalry independently without a proper complement of Artillery.

The Russian Cavalry Corps, which had spent the night at Lindental, made no move on the 20th. It is true that they had been ordered to halt on that day, but the sound of the battle must have been plainly audible, and there can be no excuse for their inaction. In default of orders, they might have been expected to move on Insterburg in accordance with their original orders, or to move southwards to the sound of the guns. A force of 14,000 sabres and 48 guns might well be considered strong enough to place itself across the communications of the enemy, had it been the Russian plan to advance; but since a halt had been ordered for the 20th, the Russian Cavalry Commander should have realised that something unexpected was happening and his most natural course should have been to move down and attack the German left wherever found. Had he done so, he would undoubtedly have prevented the German Cavalry Division from attacking at Schwirgallen, and might even have destroyed the German 2nd Division between Bruszen and Mallwischken while reorganising after their successful attack.

The Germans were not so successful in their attacks south of the Ist Corps. Miscalculations as to the duration of the night marches bringing the XVIIth and Ist Reserve Corps up into line, led to disjointed attacks, which were repulsed by the Russians. Alarming news as to the march of the Second Russian Army, far away to the west of the Masurian Lakes, led to the German Commander ordering a withdrawal on the night of the 20th, in order to prevent his communications through Allenstein being cut.

The Germans had failed in their objective, that of fighting a decisive battle with the First Russian Army.

Digitized by Google

(d) *The Pursuit.*

Although the Russians had been roughly handled at Gumbinnen, there remained in the hand of their Commander a force of 4 Cavalry Divisions on the right, and 1 Cavalry Division and about 1½ Divisions of Infantry on the left, which had not been engaged with the enemy. All the Cavalry were in good condition. Here were troops enough to exploit any success which had been gained.

Rennenkampf issued no orders for his Cavalry to move forward, and even touch was not maintained with the withdrawing Germans. During the 21st, 22nd and 23rd, German units were entraining at stations within 20 miles of the battlefield without hindrance from the Russians. It was only late on the 23rd that the Russians moved forward once more, and then the Cavalry Corps was ordered to protect the right flank.

Rennenkampf sent in the most optimistic reports as regards the disorder in which the retreating Germans actually were, but he made no attempt to verify any of his assumptions, chiefly made upon the reports of friendly Polish inhabitants. The actual situation was much otherwise, as will be seen from the story of the operations of the Second Russian Army.

(e) *Comments upon the Operations.*

The Russian Cavalry had had little effect upon the operations. It is true that the absence of the mass of Army Cavalry from the field of battle on the 20th was construed into a threat against his rear by the German Army Commander, but this can hardly be placed to the credit of the Russians.

Rennenkampf had failed to communicate his strategical requirements to his Army Cavalry, thus initiating the invertebrate action which ensued. Troops cannot be blamed for bad operations if they do not know what is expected of them. Rennenkampf's Instructions to his Cavalry are purely passive, and he seems to have been more concerned with screening his own movements than with ascertaining those of the enemy.

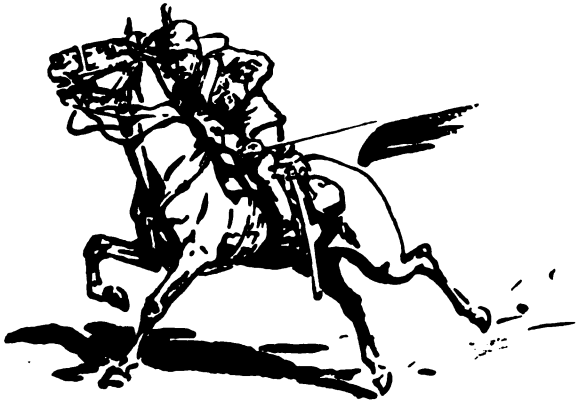
Digitized by Google

Apparently, he expected to be able to issue daily orders to his Cavalry, a method of command which will seldom be possible, even with the best means of communication.

Khan Nachichivan proved himself thoroughly incompetent as a Cavalry leader. Despite his inadequate instructions, he does not appear to have identified himself with the rest of the Army. His troops were fresh, and he took no steps to take advantage of the situation on the 20th, by creating an opportunity for tactical action in conjunction with the rest of the Russian Army, which was heavily engaged with the Germans. As soon as it was realised that the Germans were withdrawing, immediate pursuit was essential, in order to delay them and ascertain their condition and the direction of their withdrawal. No orders from superior authority were required for this, and there can be no excuse for his not even keeping touch with the enemy.

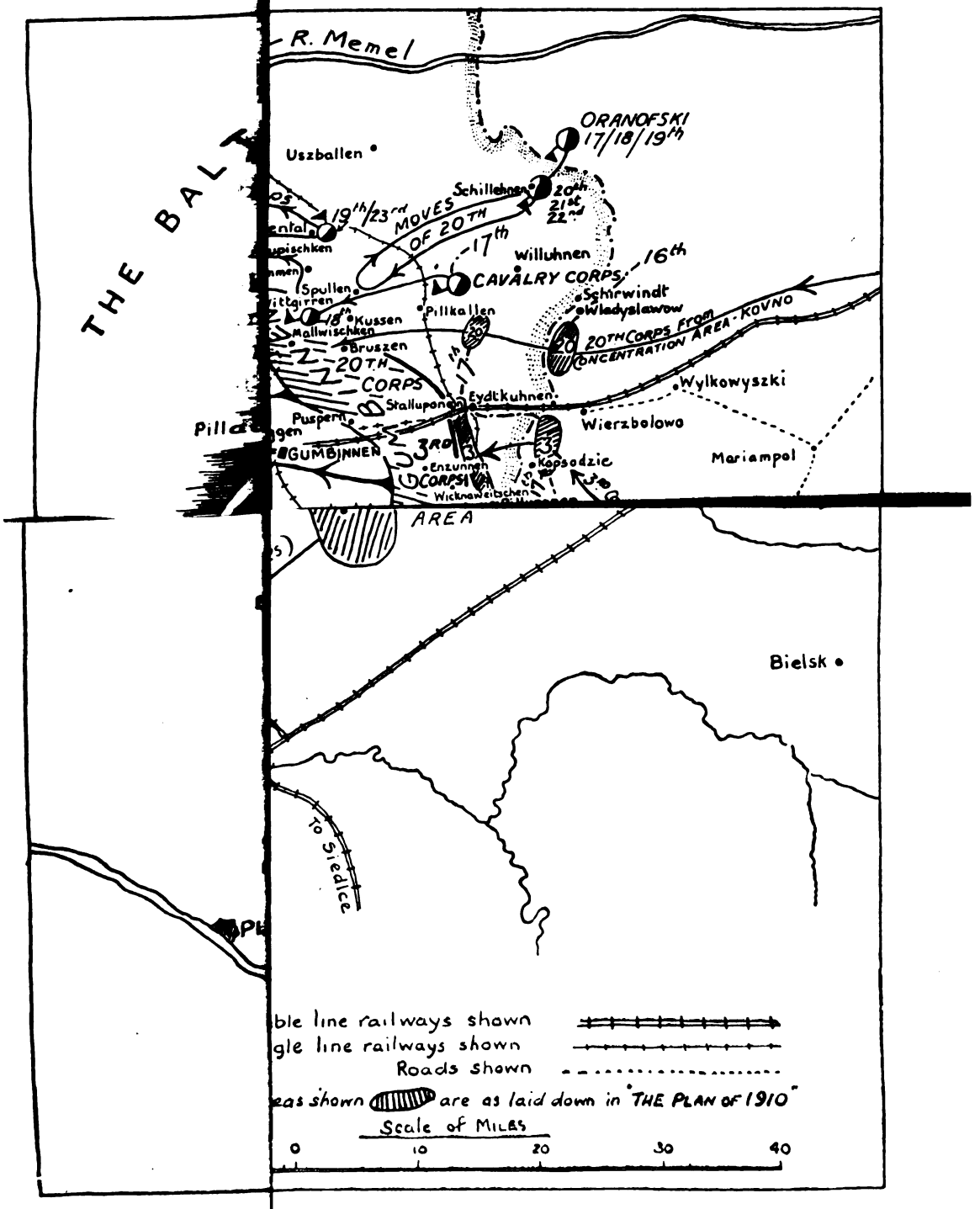
The Russian Corps Cavalry failed utterly in their tactical reconnaissance and allowed their Infantry to be surprised. The Russian Corps were advancing blindly forward without knowing what was in front of them, and for this the Russian Commanders were to blame.

On the other hand, the German Cavalry had made good use of their opportunities, despite being in great inferiority.



Digitized by Google

RUS: Theatre of Operations illustrating in August of that Year.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

EXTRACTS FROM THE DIARY OF A BIG GAME HUNTER IN EAST AFRICA

MAJOR G. H. ANDERSON, M.C., late 18th Hussars, who has had considerable experience of big game hunting, has kindly placed his diaries and photographs at the disposal of the CAVALRY JOURNAL.

The first of the extracts which follow refers to his first hunting expedition, undertaken in 1912–13 in company with Mr. Sutherland, the well-known elephant hunter. The trip took place in the Belgian Congo, in the area west of Lake Albert, and extended as far as the sources of the Wille River, the northern branch of the Congo. The southern portion of this area consists of virgin forest, and the northern, about the Wille River, of more open bush country. The hunters had some difficulty in getting the necessary permission to shoot from the Belgian officials.

We eventually got licences to shoot thirty-five elephant, and, after many ups and downs, we started north through the Ituri Forest on the upper reaches of the Congo River. This is the home of the pigmy, of whom we saw many. They are a quaint, shy little people, living right in the heart of the forest, moving about in small bands, living by hunting and snaring the small animals of the forest. They have no fixed villages, only building small huts of sticks covered with leaves; remaining in these for a short time and then moving on to fresh hunting-ground.

After nearly six weeks' trekking, to find the best district

Digitized by Google

to hunt the elephant in, we finally settled down in the Gombari district. The country there is forest, thick bush, and long elephant grass which grows to from 12 ft. to 20 ft. high. My first experience of elephant-hunting in the Congo was an exciting one.

One morning, whilst Sutherland and I were having breakfast, the local natives came into our camp and reported elephant about 4 miles away—one bull by himself and three bulls in another direction; so Sutherland went after the three bulls, and I after the single one.

After about one-and-a-half hours' trek, we came on the spoor, or tracks, of the large bull, which I followed for some way through long grass and thick bush, when suddenly I heard him crashing and smashing through the bush, but, owing to the dense thickness of the foliage, I could see nothing; he had evidently got our wind and cleared. My tracker and self then tried to get round him, keeping to leeward of the place where we thought he had stopped; but this was impossible owing to the denseness of the bush, so the only thing to do was to follow his spoor. This we did for about another 200 yards, when he cleared again, this time with a loud scream. It is almost impossible to realise the denseness of this African bush, and that you cannot see an elephant even half a dozen yards away. Accompanied by my gun-bearer and local tracker, we went on for about another two hours, keeping on his spoor. Suddenly we came to a small clearing and my tracker, seizing me by the arm, pointed excitedly at the bush and disappeared. The next thing I heard was a crash and loud scream, and the elephant burst through the thick bush nearly on top of me. All I remember seeing was a pair of large tusks and a mass of green coming at me. I just had time to put up my rifle and blaze off both barrels into his face; in the excitement of the moment I let off both barrels at the same time, and the force of the recoil, owing to my standing in wet mud, sent me over backwards,

Digitized by Google

the elephant, luckily for me, falling at the same time. More by good luck than by good shooting, one of the bullets had reached the brain. So, picking myself up, I put a couple of shots into him to finish him off, and then went and inspected his tusks. They stuck out about 4 ft. from his head, and were of enormous thickness. He was indeed a fine fellow. I then returned to camp, very tired but happy, and with a much greater respect for the King of the Forests than I had when I started out.

The next day I went with the boys to cut out the ivory, and found the tusks to weigh 113 lbs. and 109 lbs. respectively, and so ended my first, and, by far, the biggest elephant I have shot. On this trip we got about 2¼ tons of ivory.

In December, 1922, the proclamation reproduced below was issued in Uganda :—

NOTICE.

HIS EXCELLENCY THE ACTING GOVERNOR is prepared, in order to reduce the number of ELEPHANTS in certain areas where they cause damage to cultivation, to issue special licences to approved elephant hunters.

Such licences will be valid for a period of six months from the 1st January, 1923.

2. THE LICENCES will be subject to the following conditions :—

(1) Every licensee shall specify the number of elephants he desires to shoot and shall pay the fees specified below in respect of such elephants, or furnish a bank guarantee.

(2) No licensee shall be allowed to take out more than twenty elephants at any one time, but further licences may be issued to him on application.

(3) The licensee shall not be required to take out the ordinary game licence issued under the ordinance.

(4) Licensees must undertake to shoot with rifles of not less than ·375 calibre.

(5) The following fees shall be payable in respect of elephants shot :—

(*a*) For every pair of female tusks not exceeding 20 lbs. in weight, or for every pair of male tusks not exceeding 40 lbs. in weight - -	Shgs. 50

Digitized by Google

(*b*) For every pair of female tusks exceeding 20 lbs. in weight, or for every pair of male tusks exceeding 40 lbs., but not exceeding 70 lbs. in weight. -	Shgs. 100
(*c*) For every pair of tusks exceeding 70 lbs. in weight - - - - - -	Shgs. 150

3. ALL LICENCES are liable to be withdrawn at any time without notice should any of the above conditions not be complied with.

By command of His Excellency
The Acting Governor,
E. C. ELLIOT,
Acting Chief Secretary to the Govt.

Entebbe, Uganda.
15th December, 1922.
(S.M.P. 7329.)

Major Anderson obtained a special licence and, starting from Kampola on the Victoria Nyanza, followed the road to Fort Portal for about 100 miles and then struck south on to the Katona River. Here the country is of a rolling character, rather like Salisbury Plain, with all the depressions covered with thick bush and forest, and patches of bush were scattered about on the higher ground.

He made two trips in the same district; on the first he walked, but on the second he made use of a mule as far as possible, though it was often necessary to send it round by long detours to avoid belts of 'fly.'

Kiuga, February 13.

I left camp at 6 a.m. and, just as I was leaving, a local native came running in to say he had seen some elephant. On my way I met the local headman in a great state of excitement, saying the 'elephant had his shamba destroyed,' and begged me to go and shoot them; so I told him that's what I was going to try to do. After about an hour's walk the local native said the elephant were down in the valley below in very thick bush. So, as the wind was right, I thought I would try and drive them out, getting some of my men and local villagers to go in a line across the valley and 'raise

Digitized by Google

'The elephant seemed stupefied with the shooting in front and the shouting behind.'

The position of frontal brain shot lies midway between the points of the tusks in this drawing.

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF
CALIFORNIA

Digitized by Google

Cain ' shouting. On my way to an open space in the valley about a quarter of a mile further on, I saw a bull elephant; but as he walked away from me I could not get the chance of a vital shot, so went on and took my stand up on the side of the hill in a clearing, where I thought the elephant most likely would break when my men started the shouting. After waiting for about five minutes with my gun-bearer and the local *fundi* (local hunter), out came a cow, which I dropped with a heart shot. Then about thirty elephant came out about 40 yards away, and I started firing, dropping a young bull and one or two others. As another lot of about twenty came out of the bush higher up above me, my gun-bearer, a soldier who seldom speaks English (as I can speak Swahili), in the excitement, said 'it was time to go upstairs.' I quite agreed, as the elephant were getting all round us, and in a case like that are very likely to stampede down hill, which is very like a dozen run-away traction engines coming at you; however they all turned back into the bush again. Another wait, and my men still shouting in the valley, when out the whole herd came, about sixty this time. I was a little higher up the hill. I kept firing at the elephant, still advancing right towards me. When about 20 yards away, they turned off—for which I was very thankful—and passed me, and I got several others as they passed. In all I got seven elephant in the space of less than ten minutes. I may say I was using a double-barrel ·577 and a magazine ·425, both by Wesley Richards. My gun-bearer behaved excellently, loading and handing me my rifle when I had finished firing. In all I got four bulls and three cows.

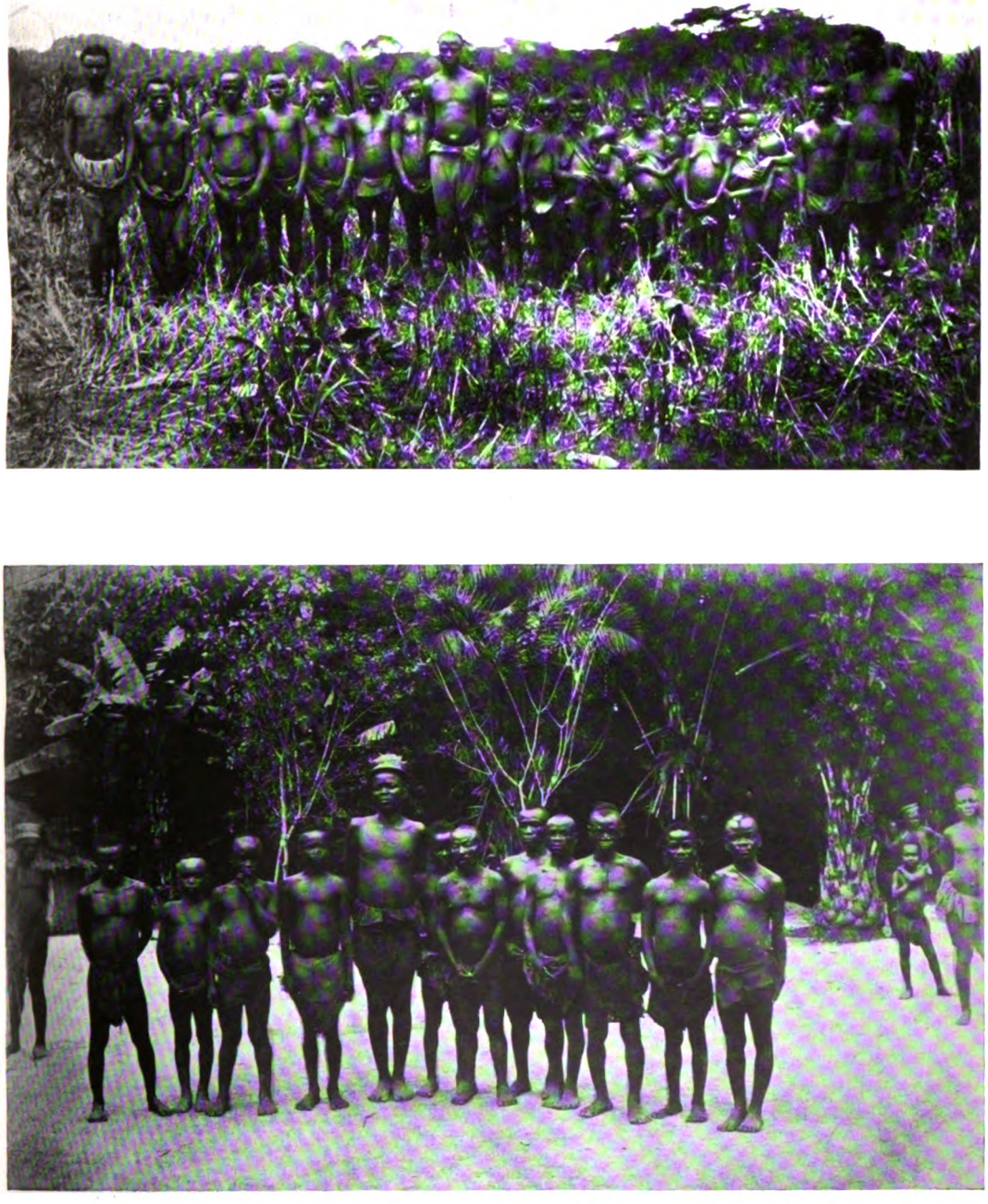
The elephant seemed stupefied with the shooting in front and the shouting behind. In all cases I took the brain shot and heart shot. At the end of it, my rifles were so hot that they blistered my hands. So ended the most exciting time I have ever had in shooting—and I have done a considerable amount—also a very profitable morning's work.

Digitized by Google

Kilinbuzi, March 22.

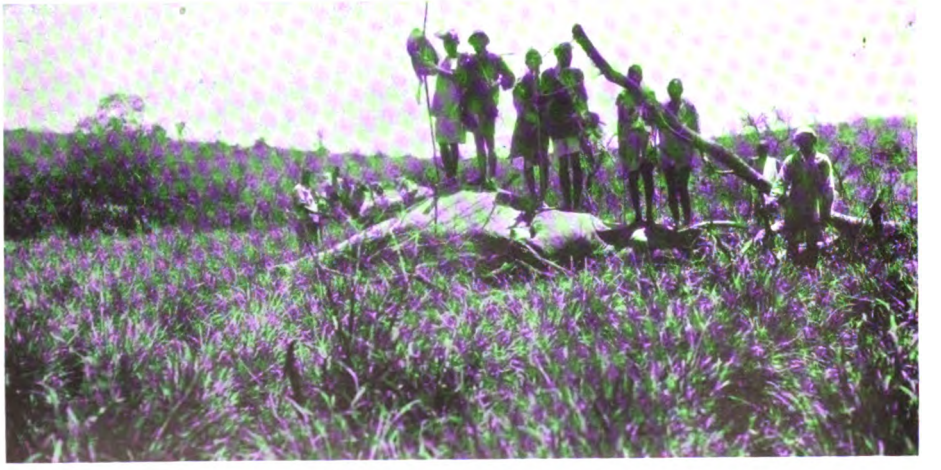
Left camp at 6.5; after going until 7.30 came across first spoor of herd of elephant; soon heard cows screaming. We got the wind right and cut towards where we thought they were. Saw about thirty right in the open; rode up within 300 yards, and then got off my mule. Two bulls in view, but they disappeared over the hill; followed on and then came over the hill into a valley, and there must have been quite two hundred elephant, scattered over an area of a quarter of a mile. As they were moving slowly from me, I could not get nearer than about 130 yards. I was afraid to get on my mule and trot as they would have heard the noise, so I took a shot at a bull, which ran about 30 yards and fell; much to my surprise several elephants rushed forward and helped the bull on his legs, and off they all went. It was impossible to fire, as it simply meant blazing into a mass of elephant. The whole herd then went off, with the exception of a small herd of about thirty, which turned off left-handed to me; so I followed them, got a shot in, and dropped a large cow. Got on to my mule and followed the herd over the hill. Came on them again in the valley, so dismounted and got within about 70 yards, dropped another three; one of the elephant fell, and another one came up and gave it a prod with its tusks (this was one of those I got); off went the herd again and, after I had finished off the three, I got on the mule and, with my boys running, followed up the herd. Came on them again after about another mile; put several shots into one, but he did not come down. Off again and on to the mule, boys running and elephant running. One going very sick, so I dismounted and dropped it. On again for about another quarter of a mile; came up with herd again, dropped another cow; and off again after the herd, after finishing the elephant off with a couple of shots into the brain. About another half-mile saw the elephant across the valley; fired at what I thought was the

Digitized by Google



PYGMIES PHOTOGRAPHED WITH NORMAL CONGO NATIVES, SHOWING DIFFERENCE IN SIZE.

Digitized by Google



KILINBUZI, MARCH 22nd, 1922.

Digitized by Google

largest, and they came half across me. On to the mule again and after them; as they crossed about 140 yards away, put some bullets into another and dropped that. The herd then went off like the very devil, and I followed up for about another quarter-mile, only to see them going over the hills about 2 miles away. Rode on for about half a mile, in case I came across another wounded one, and saw another one standing under some bushes—put three or four shots into it and dropped it. I returned to where I had shot the first lot of elephant and left my boys, took breakfast, and then followed up the large herd, as I thought I might get the bull which I had first hit; but no sign. On the way I came across the boys carrying the tusks of the elephant I had shot on my last *safari*, a large cow. Returned to camp 2.45. In the evening the chief of the district came up to the camp. I gave him tea, biscuits, etc. The distance I must have covered after shooting the first elephant, about 5 miles; dead elephant all along the route.

Got two other elephant out of this herd—in all ten. One with stump of tail, with only one tusk. This is the only time I have seen elephant in an open country, several miles from thick bush, and I had the luck to come on them when they were making their way to some dense jungle on the Kitonga River.

(To be continued.)

Digitized by Google

THE PRINCE OF WALES'S OWN SCINDE HORSE

By Lieut.-Colonel E. B. Maunsell, *p.s.c.*

In 1845 Napier decided on his campaign against the Boogties. The theatre of operations was to be the same as that of Billamore's campaign of 1839. The regiment accordingly marched back to its old haunts about Jacobabad.

To open the campaign it was decided to make a dash for the desert village of Shahpur, where a gathering of hostile Sardars was reported. The village was forty-four miles from Jacobabad by the route taken.

Jacob, however, seized it, despite a strong resistance, after a most skilful march, a feat Napier mentioned in his despatches.

The regiment was employed in keeping the plain area quiet and did not actually accompany Napier into the hills. There were, nevertheless, several spirited encounters with marauders, notably the action of Jemadar Gafoor Mohamed. This officer, with twenty men, was treacherously fired on by a greatly superior number of Baluch. He promptly charged, and after a stiff fight, succeeded in utterly destroying the hostile party.

The regiment, on conclusion of the expedition, returned to Hyderabad after an absence of seven months.

It was then decided to raise a second regiment, to be also commanded by Jacob. This corps was generally known as Jacob's Horse before the amalgamation, the first regiment being the Scinde Horse.

It was formed in 1846 by splitting the first regiment into two. At this period the composition of the corps was almost entirely of men from Hindustan, the Mussulman predomi-

Digitized by Google

From a painting by Major G. D. Giles, Scinde Horse.

CHARGE OF THE SCINDE HORSE AT KHUSHK-I-NAKHUD, AFGHANISTAN, 1879.

Digitized by Google

Etching by Major G. D. Giles, 1st Scinde Horse.

THE SCINDE HORSE AT THE SORTIE OF DEH KHOJA, KANDAHAR, 1880.

Digitized by Google

THE SCINDE HORSE ON CONVOY DUTY, WITH THE BOLAN IN FLOOD, 1879.

Digitized by Google

Etching by Major G. D. Giles, Scinde Horse.

SCINDE HORSE ON OUTPOST DUTY ON THE HELMUND, 1879.

Digitized by Google

nating. Jacob held strong views on the recruitment of Pathans and Baluchis. He also considered the Sikhs were inferior as soldiers to Hindustanis. It is quite probable that the best classes of these races did not care for service in Scinde and that a good class of recruit was not forthcoming. It is of interest to note, however, that Hindustanis are once more being recruited in the regiment.

By now, Upper Scinde was in a state of chaos.

The troops stationed there were shut up in mud forts and were inactive. Raid had succeeded raid and no man's life was safe. To such a pitch had the passive conduct of the troops reached that they had to be rationed as on board ship, no supplies being procured locally, everything coming up by convoy.

A highly successful raid by no less than 1,500 Baluch had penetrated the British posts to within a few miles of Shikarpore and the Cavalry regiment sent in pursuit had shirked engaging them.

John Jacob was then placed in charge of the frontier and the Scinde Horse marched up from Hyderabad.

A different *régime* at once became apparent. The forts were abolished and troops kept constantly on the move. A thorough intelligence system was inaugurated and a service of expert Baluch trackers and guides introduced. In February Dafadar Rahim Bux with eighteen Sowars came upon 200 raiders late in the evening. He charged them without hesitation, dispersing them and cutting down many.

In May, at the hottest time of the year, a body of raiders was reported to have carried off some camels from a point 35 miles away. Jemadar Somail Khan, commanding nearest the post, started in pursuit and, after a march of 70 miles, came up with them close to the hills. The camels were recovered but the raiders got away.

In September the Boogties began to give trouble and several raids took place. Lieut. Merewether on October 1,

Digitized by Google

hearing that the whole tribe had entered the plains, took about 120 sabres and came upon them to the number of some 700 in some broken ground, with heavy jungle a short distance to their flank. He moved between them and the jungle, when they quitted the broken ground to attack him. He charged and overthrew them with tremendous loss, pursuing them to the foothills. The destruction was so great that only 120 Boogties are said to have escaped. The remainder of the tribe then made its complete submission. In this action we are told that the carbine did great execution.

Jacob had by now thoroughly organised the corps. Judging from contemporary accounts, it was far better equipped than most irregular horse, and a letter from Lord Melville from the Punjab in 1853 states other regiments were beginning to copy it. Its system of transport, in particular, was excellent, each man being compelled to maintain his own, none ever being hired. It was half camel and half pony, no carts being allowed. The men, in the cold weather, were clothed in an olive-green coat reaching to the knee, with pantaloons of the same colour, and long boots of English leather. The belts and pouches were of black leather. All ranks had poshteens. The British officers wore silver helmets and do not appear to have suffered from the sun.

In the native ranks the pagri was red and, as the older native officers had previously served for a long time in the Mahratta Horse, tied in Mahratta fashion.

The carbine was carried on a hook on the belt, muzzle down, with a steadying strap round the leg.

It was not until 1850, however, that Jacob introduced the double-barrelled carbine and, for officers, the double-barrelled pistol made by Swinburne & Co., of London.

Jacob believed in the cutting sword in preference to the thrusting. He had had his arm nearly broken at Meeanee while running a Baluch through the body. As a result the men had curved tulwars, the blades being made in England. He

Digitized by Google

emphasised the importance of wooden scabbards so as not to dull the edges.

The horse furniture was of native pattern, the Hussar saddle being introduced in 1871.

Every man carried a leather water-bag under his horse's belly, apparently a novelty, judging from inspection reports.

The regiments could get on the move, complete with transport, for a long campaign, in twelve hours,—a feat few, if any, irregular corps in the neighbourhood would seem to have been able to do.

This capacity was suddenly tested when the urgent demand came from Herbert Edwardes for assistance before Multan in September, 1848.

At this period the organisation was of strong troops, not of squadrons.

In order to furnish men it was decided to send two troops of the first regiment and three of the second, so as to make up a complement of 500 sabres without disorganising the arrangements for the protection of the frontier. They marched under Lieut. Merewether, Jacob being required to remain as Political Officer.

Shortly after arrival at Multan a large body of the enemy was encountered outside the city and charged by the regiment. Apart from this action, duties were such as might be expected from Cavalry with a besieging force, being chiefly escort duty.

After the storming of the town the regiment marched with the Bombay column to join Lord Gough's Army, which it reached, after a forced march, two days before the battle of Gujerat.

It was posted on the extreme left during the advance to that battle.

During the action the British left was threatened by a large body of Afghan Horse, estimated at 4,000, and extremely well mounted.

Sir Joseph Thackwell ordered the regiment and a squadron of the 9th Lancers to attack them.

Digitized by Google

The charge was brilliantly executed, a great number of Afghans being slain. The regiment captured two standards on this occasion. This charge was greatly commented on in the House of Parliament, among others by the Duke of Wellington.

The regiment, with the other Cavalry, followed in pursuit till late at night, capturing several guns.

The day following the battle the Scinde Horse advanced with the Bombay column, crossing the Jhelum ten days later.

It was an advanced picquet of the corps that received the Sikh chiefs when they came in to surrender outside Rawal Pindi.

The pursuit of the Afghan element was carried on as far as the mouth of the Khyber, the regiment accompanying the advanced Cavalry.

Several skirmishes with Afridi and other raiders took place between Peshawar and the Khyber, but the raiders were in every case unsuccessful when they encountered the Scinde Horse.

From old despatches it appears that the discipline, dash and organisation of the regiment excited great admiration in the Punjab.

On the Scinde border, meanwhile, the balance of the corps were hard put to it, as the Punjab Army detachment did not rejoin for a year.

Among other extraordinary patrol exploits, however, is that of Ressaldar Fateh Maneer, who, with forty men, marched 127 miles in twenty-eight hours in pursuit of raiders the party unfortunately losing their tracks at the end.

In April, 1849, a body of Baluch, estimated at some 450 men, marched 40 miles in the night and attacked Kusmore, where there were some forty of the Scinde Horse and some Jutt encampments close by.

The enemy's information was evidently good, for they knew the geography of the camp and were, apparently, aware

Digitized by Google

OFFICER OF THE SCINDE IRREGULAR HORSE IN FIGHTING COSTUME, 1848.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

that a new relief had marched in late that evening and that there would be a good deal of movement of transport in consequence.

The country was very close and the enemy's approach was comparatively easy to conceal. About fifty succeeded in penetrating the post by a rush at 3.0 a.m., and a desperate fight was the result, the Scinde Horse losing very heavily; but the resistance was so stout that the enemy cleared out. Meanwhile the relieved forty men, under Ressaldar Karam Ali, heard the firing when about four miles off. The Ressaldar, leaving eight men with his transport, instantly turned about, and galloped back; it was getting light when he came upon about 300 Baluch horsemen driving off at least 1,000 camels. Aided by the bad light, he instantly charged, killing many and recovering the whole of the plunder.

In September, a party of the Regiment chased some marauders 60 miles and caught them up in the hills. The booty was all recovered, but the robbers escaped up a mountain.

The effect of the enormous amount of hard work on the limited numbers available caused great sickness in the Corps, and in October Jacob had to ask for the return of the detachment, then at Peshawar.

This detachment arrived in early 1850.

As an example of the high *morale* existing, the conduct of Jemadar Doorgah Singh is given.

This officer received a report that some camels had been carried off near his post. He started off with 20 men and found the tracks. Having proceeded about 30 miles at a very fast pace, seven of his horses having dropped dead from exhaustion *en route* he came upon the enemy.

The latter abandoned the camels, but continued the flight. The Jemadar clung on to them till he had only two sowars and a Baluch guide left with him. Just then about fifty Baluch appeared, but the Jemadar and the two sowars attacked without hesitation, but were literally cut to pieces.

Digitized by Google

The Baluch guide alone escaped, severely wounded. The place of the Jemadar's death is pointed out to this day with unfeigned admiration by the Baluch, and is known as Durga Kushta—no small tribute to an Indian officer of Irregular Horse.

In the meantime Ressaldar Hyder Khan, of a neighbouring post, heard that Durgah Singh had moved out. He saddled up and, moving out with due prudence, succeeded in arriving on the scene of the Jemadar's death very shortly after him, recovered the wounded and booty, and returned without losing horse or man.

In April, 1853, Ressaldar Shaikh Karim, at Kusmore, received information of a party of raiders.

It was 2.0 in the afternoon, and intensely hot.

He started with forty men and some Baluch Guides in pursuit. Owing to the heat several horses had to be left behind *en route*, but the Ressaldar caught the raiders up by nightfall. The latter numbered some eighty men, the Scinde Horse then numbering thirty.

Nevertheless, the Ressaldar ordered the charge, when the enemy turned to meet it, and a hand-to-hand combat in the dark ensued. The enemy, however, made off to hills close by, where there were several footmen. With exhausted horses, the officer could not follow. A great many of the enemy were killed, but in the dark it was impossible to ascertain the number. The Scinde Horse lost in this affair nine killed and two wounded. The Ressaldar was then 30 miles from his starting point. Nevertheless, he succeeded in bringing back the dead bodies of his comrades and some mares taken from the enemy. The stolen cattle were abandoned by the raiders during the pursuit. The detachment returned to Kusmore at three in the morning after a feat of gallantry and endurance seldom equalled or surpassed in war.

Despite Jacob's comments on the undesirability of the Baluch as soldiers, it is curious to note how bravely and well

Digitized by Google

they fought when in our service as guides. In most of the patrol affairs in which the corps took part there is mention of Baluch guides being 'in at the death.'

The casualties in horses from heat or exhaustion appear to have often been heavy; and on the occasion when Jacob had to move out with 400 sabres to counter an expected raid, no less than 116 succumbed to sunstroke in forty-eight hours.

Jacob gives his opinion that on this particular day the heat was exceptional, the temperature standing at 106 in a good house. He, at the same time, states that heat alone would not suffice as an explanation, for he had on many occasions been out with parties at the hottest time of the year and nothing happened, while at other times a sudden puff of air had struck both men and horses dead even in the middle of the night.

The Baluch themselves were not immune, and many cases were reported of raiders and their horses dying.

Officers acquainted with Scinde will testify to the dread natives have of the 'Loo,' or hot wind.

The Corps, like all Irregular Horse, was silladar, that is, the men provided their own horses. In the Scinde Horse the men bought the animals where they pleased, receiving, on approval by the Commandant, Rs. 100 from the Regimental Fund to assist.

At this period the two regiments watched a frontier 185 miles long, the posts being about 15 miles apart, with average garrisons of thirty-five or forty.

The nearest other troops were at Shikarpore, 30 miles in rear. These troops were practically valueless, as they were immobile. There were, at most, six white officers in the whole of the two regiments, which amounted to 1,600 sabres.

The responsibility thrown on the native officers was, therefore, very great.

In 1855 the Aden Troop was formed from a nucleus supplied by both regiments.

Digitized by Google

In 1857 the aggressive conduct of Persia led to our declaring war, and an expedition under Outram was despatched. Jacob was to command the whole of the irregular horse accompanying it. The first regiment formed part.

It landed at Bushire with part of the Force, and sent on a detachment up the Shat-el-Arab to Muhammera with the other part. When Outram advanced against the Persians from Muhammera, the latter hastily abandoned their camp and fled.

The detachment of the Scinde Horse headed the advance in pursuit, until recalled by Outram.

Meanwhile Jacob had remained in command of the force left at Bushire.

The force was returning to India when news of the Mutiny reached Karachi. Part of the regiment had recently landed there. Of this, 200 sabres were sent on to Jacobabad in great haste, as the Bengal troops at Shikarpore and Sukkur were on the verge of mutiny. Merewether, commanding the Scinde Horse at Jacobabad, however, had the regiment well in hand, and there were no signs of trouble. It is well known that the tone of native regiments during this period was greatly dependent on the personality of the commander and the discipline prevailing. If the tone was good, native troops, even if of the same class as the mutineers, usually proved faithful to their salt. It was the same in the case of the Scinde Horse, which was, incidentally, composed almost entirely of men recruited in Hindustan, where the mutiny was at its worst. John Jacob had got into trouble four years previously through articles he had written drawing attention to the general indiscipline prevailing among the Bengal troops and prophesying a mutiny. The authorities now had to eat their words. As the balance of the regiment arrived from Persia, they were pushed on to Bombay.

This portion operated with various columns in Central India, but the only serious action in which it took part was at the storming of Kotah.

Digitized by Google

There was a large body of Cavalry with the force which had been posted to watch one exit from the town.

The enemy, however, escaped by another, which was separated from it by 2 miles of gardens and jungle.

It would seem that the Cavalry force available, numbering 1,400 sabres, might have well been divided to watch both exits.

The following day also the pursuit started late, with the result that no rebels were intercepted.

Jacob had been selected to command the Central India Field Force, but had not been able to return in time from Bushire, where he had been commanding. The command was, therefore, given to Sir Hugh Rose. Jacob's presence was urgently called for on the frontier, where things were again getting troublesome and, on arrival from Bushire, he was sent back to Jacobabad. His health had begun to trouble him, and overwork finally killed him in December, 1858.

He had had no leave for years, and life on the Scinde Frontier was not conducive to longevity. He was only forty-six.

With the death of Jacob the first phase in the existence of the Scinde Horse ends. The Frontier became comparatively quiet.

Officers whose duty compels them to visit the most out-of-the-way districts of the Baluch country will even now hear the name of John Jacob spoken with reverence.

Digitized by Google

THE OPERATIONS OF THE SECOND CAVALRY DIVISION (WITH CANADIAN CAVALRY BRIGADE ATTACHED) IN THE DEFENCE OF AMIENS

(Continued from previous Article.)

ATTACK ON RIFLE WOOD, APRIL 1, 1918

By Major-General T. T. Pitman, C.B., C.M.G.

Orders were received from the XIX Corps at 8 p.m. on the 31st, as follows:—

'2nd Cavalry Division will restore to-morrow morning the line running from northern corner of Moreuil—Eastern edge of wood—point 104—Hangard. Instructions regarding Artillery support, etc., will follow.'

General Pitman spoke to XIX Corps on telephone and pointed out that the objective which the 2nd Cavalry Division was to attack was over 7,000 yards in length and at some points nearly a mile deep. The available troops for this attack amounted to 1,200 rifles.

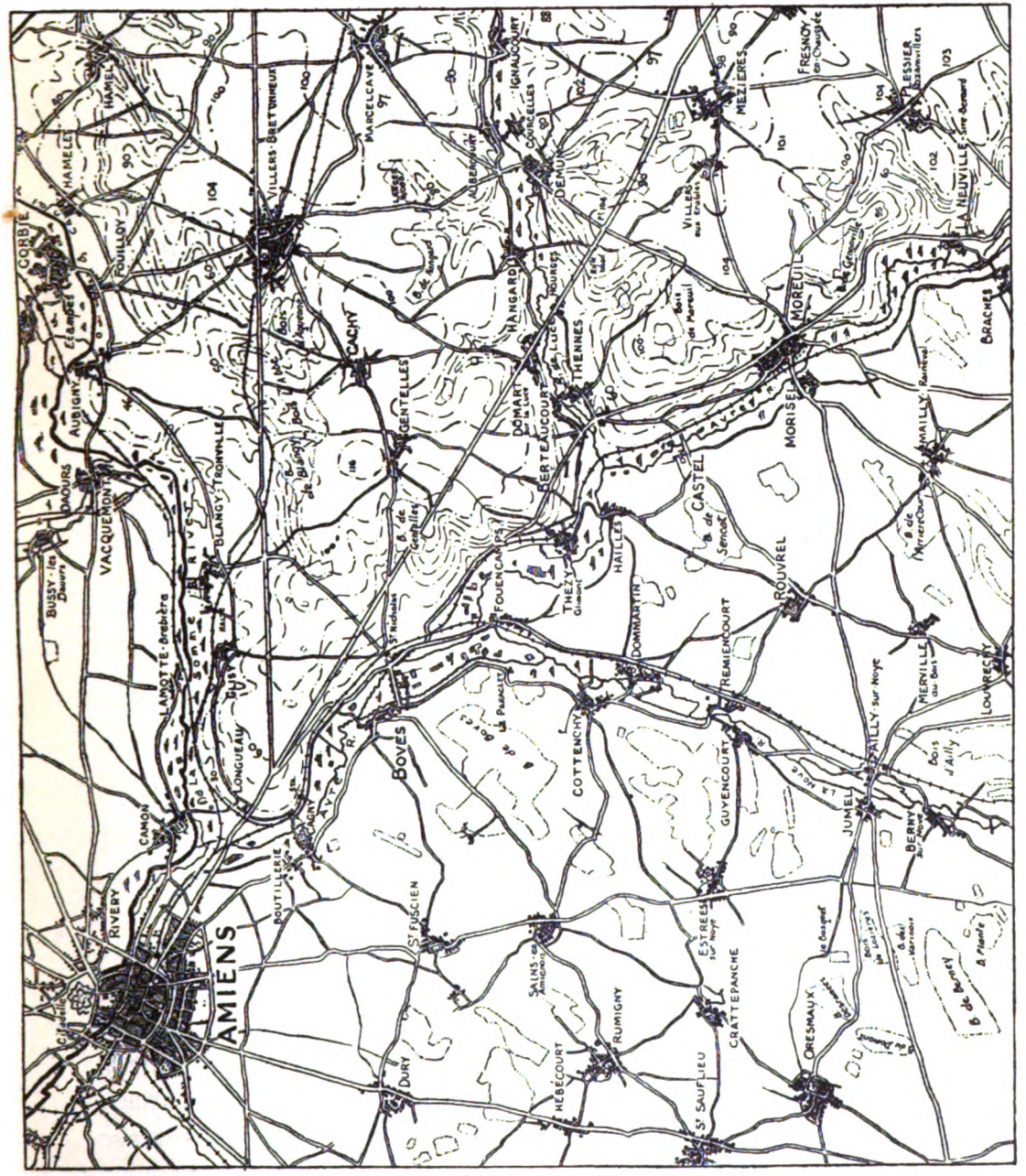
This order was subsequently cancelled, and at 9.20 p.m. the following order was received from the XIX Corps:—

'2nd Cavalry Division will establish to-morrow morning the line C 15 Central—C 16 Central—to point 104 in C. 11 d, thence north of Hangard exclusive; (in other words, a continuation of the line taken up by General Bell Smyth and passing east of Rifle Wood to Hangard.) Arrangements have been made for Artillery preparation on the area involved and neighbouring areas up to 5.38 a.m.'

This hour was subsequently altered to 9 a.m., so that the

Digitized by Google

MAP A.



Digitized by Google

Commanders should have a chance of reconnoitring the ground by daylight.

A conference of Brigadiers was held at advanced Divisional Headquarters, Gentelles, during the night, when the proposed operations were considered, and orders issued.

German Dispositions.—(*See* Map C.)—On the morning of April 1, the German dispositions appear to have been as follows:—

The 74th Infantry Regiment of the 19th Division held the line southwards from the Domart–Beaucourt Road, inclusive. Rifle Wood was held by the 2nd and 3rd Battalions, with the 1st Battalion in reserve. The other two regiments of the 19th Division were stated by prisoners to be present, but not in the line.

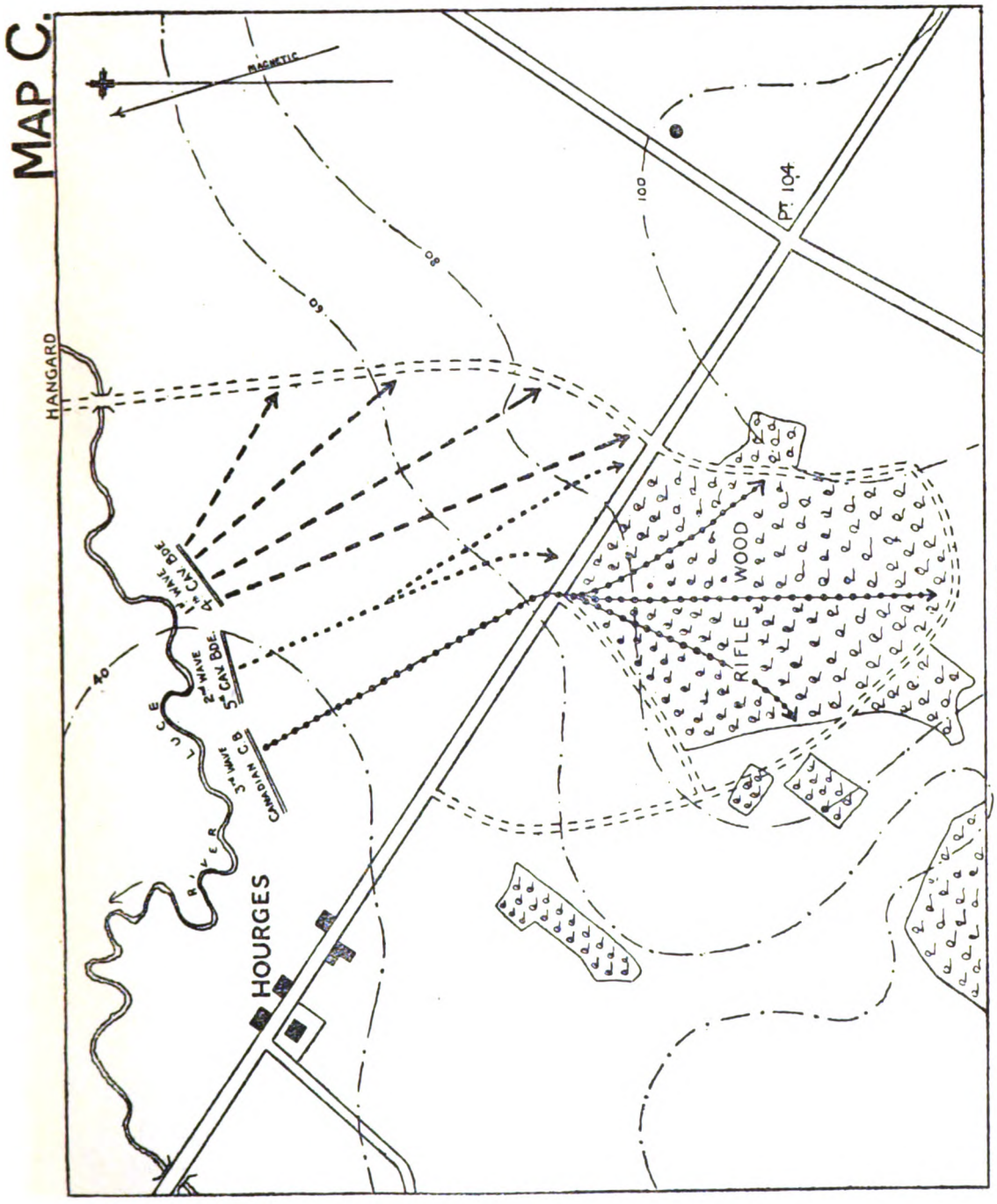
South of the 74th Infantry Regiment, prisoners believed, was the 237th Reserve Regiment of the 199th Division.

(The above information was, of course, only received after the action.)

Plan.—As the enemy had excellent observation of the slopes running from Gentelles to the River Luce, the G.O.C. decided to assemble the Division before dawn (less Carabiniers and one squadron 3rd Hussars and the whole of the 3rd Brigade, who were already holding the line) under cover in the low ground between Hourges and Thennes; also to get 'D,' 'E,' and 'J' Batteries, R.H.A., into position before dawn, from which they could cover the attack. It was decided to attack the wood from the north and north-west under cover of an artillery and machine-gun barrage.

The co-operation of the artillery of the 29th Division (French) was asked for and willingly given. The targets given were: North edge of Moreuil Wood, also copses S.E. of Rifle Wood. XIX Corps arranged for artillery preparation on the area involved and neighbouring areas. The bombardment from 8.25 a.m. to 9 a.m. to be as intense as possible.

Digitized by Google



D 2

Digitized by Google

3rd Brigade, R.H.A., barrage was arranged as follows (zero hour being 9 a.m.) :—

'E' Battery, R.H.A. (Battery position near small wood 1,000 yards S.E. of Gentelles).

Zero — 8 to zero + 5		N.E. face of Rifle Wood.
„ + 5 „ „ + 8		Centre of wood but clear of road.
„ + 8 „ „ + 14		South edge of wood.
„ + 14 „ „ + 18		Road running N.E. and S.W. through point 104. Continue on flanks, open a gap in centre, 200 yards each side of point 104.

'J' Battery, R.H.A. (Battery position N. of Berteaucourt). Woods east of Moreuil–Demuin Road.

'D' Battery, R.H.A. North face of Moreuil Wood.

Machine-gun Dispositions.—Machine guns were placed so as to carry out barrage as under :—

3rd M.G. Squadron (Squadron position near Domart).—Barrage on Rifle Wood.

Cana. M.G. Squadron.—Barraging north-eastern edge of same wood, lifting on to point 104 until further lift necessary.

5th M.G. Squadron.—Barraging road running south from Hangard to Rifle Wood, lifting on to road running N.E. from point 104.

4th M.G. Squadron.—Counter machine-gun work and ready to repel counter-attacks. This was subsequently altered, and the 4th M.G. Squadron furnished forward guns with the third wave.

Orders for the Attack.—The attack was ordered to take place in three waves :—

First Wave.—4th Cavalry Brigade (less troops holding line, *i.e.*, Carabiniers and one squadron 3rd Hussars), to seize objectives, T roads at N.E. corner of wood to road at C 5 Central.

Digitized by Google

2nd Wave.—One regiment, 5th Cavalry Brigade (20th Hussars), to seize N.E. edge of wood along main road, where they were to establish themselves in the wood, forming strong points at each corner.

3rd Wave.—Canadian Cavalry Brigade to pass through 2nd Wave and establish themselves round perimeter of wood, sending standing patrols to point 104 if possible.

Reserve.—Two regiments, 5th Cavalry Brigade (Royal Scots Greys and 12th Lancers), reserve near Hourges.

2nd Field Squadron were to enter the wood as soon as possible after it had been cleared, to assist in consolidation.

As soon as the Canadians had taken the wood, the 3rd Cavalry Brigade, who were already in the line, were to link up their position about C 9 central to S.E. corner of wood.

The Carabiniers (4th Cavalry Brigade) were to advance from their position in line west of wood to take over the eastern edge of wood from the Canadians.

Brigadier-General Seely, commanding Canadian Cavalry Brigade, was placed in command of the dismounted units detailed to attack, consisting of :—

4th Cavalry Brigade (less Carabiniers and 1 squadron, 3rd Hussars).

5th Cavalry Brigade.

Canadian Cavalry Brigade.

The Attack.—The 4th Cavalry Brigade, consisting of two squadrons 3rd Hussars and the Queen's Own Oxford Hussars, organised as a battalion under the command of Lt.-Col. Willcox, 3rd Hussars, formed the leading wave, with the objective the line of the road from C 11 a 7–2 to cross roads at C 5 C 9–9.

Starting from the line east of Hourges, with its right close to the main road at 8.55 a.m., the Brigade advanced with

Digitized by Google

the Oxford Hussars on the right and the 3rd Hussars on the left, both regiments being formed in three waves on the same alignment, with 200 yards' distance between the waves.

These waves were organised as follows :—

1st Wave.—Line of riflemen with a few scouts in front.

2nd Wave.—A few riflemen and the Hotchkiss rifles.

3rd Wave.—Riflemen, carrying picks and shovels.

Machine guns were brought up on packhorses behind the 3rd wave.

Very heavy machine-gun fire was encountered, especially from the N.E. side of the wood, but the advance was continued without a halt or check of any sort, and the objective was gained at 9.10.

Losses were comparatively light owing to the enemy's fire being at first very low and then very high. When nearly at the objective, the enemy were seen streaming away from the wood. The machine guns came rapidly into action and did excellent execution.

2nd Wave.—Consisting of 20th Hussars under Capt. Hall, had as their objective the seizing of the N.E. edge of the wood, on the main road, where they were to establish themselves in the wood, preparing points at each corner of the wood.

This wave advanced from the jumping-off point C 4 b 4·2 and incurred many casualties from the enemy's machine-gun fire, but gained their objective soon after the 4th Brigade had gained theirs.

As the first Canadian wave was by this time close up, the 4th Brigade and 20th Hussars continued their advance in spite of very heavy machine-gun fire from N.E. and N.W. of wood, and reached their objective, where hand-to-hand fighting took place, the enemy retiring well into the wood.

3rd Wave.—Canadian Cavalry Brigade under Colonel Paterson, which had been following up the 2nd wave, then came up and passed through the 20th Hussars, accompanied by about a platoon of the 20th Hussars, fought their way to their

Digitized by Google

objective on the perimeter of the wood. On Colonel Paterson asking for reinforcements, a platoon of the 20th Hussars was at once sent up to the line C 17 a 0·8–C 11 c 6·0, where it remained until the Carabiniers arrived as reinforcements and took over from the 20th Hussars about an hour later.

At 10.30 a.m. a platoon of the 12th Lancers was sent up to reinforce the 20th Hussars, and was sent on to the line C 11 c central—S.E. corner of wood, where it remained until relieved during the night. The Carabiniers, who had been ordered to take over part of the perimeter of the wood after the Canadian Cavalry Brigade had secured it, and who had been relieved by the 12th Lancers, then came up and completed taking over by about 11 a.m., when the line was held as follows :—

2 Squadrons Carabiniers occupying line C 11 c 5·9 to C 11 c 5·0; then some Fort Garry Horse, and then 3rd Squadron Carabiniers to C 17 a 1·9. Remaining Squadron 3rd Hussars, which had been holding the line and did not take part in the advance, rejoining its regiment in line about 2 p.m.

Action of the 5th Cavalry Brigade (less 20th Hussars), under Major Duguid McCombie (Royal Scots Greys).

(*a*) About 9.45 a.m. the Royal Scots Greys moved forward from position of assembly just west of Hourges to prolong the right flank of the Canadians. They deployed from the S.E. exit of Hourges village and advanced to their objective, the 1st wave, having orders to keep its left on the wood at C 10 d 4·3, the remaining waves to conform and prolong the line to the right to about C 10 c 4·7. While deploying, the Royal Scots Greys came under heavy shell fire, and up to the time the objective was reached were subjected to heavy machine-gun fire, which caused numerous casualties. They consolidated on their objectives and remained there all day under direct observation of the enemy's machine guns until relieved at night.

(*b*) About 10.45 a.m., 12th Lancers (less one platoon) took over from the Carabiniers and held line running along

Digitized by Google

tracks from C 9 c 7·4 to junction of tracks in C 9 b 3·9, thence to C 9 b 8·5, joining up with a body of Infantry (about 50) of various units on their right, who joined up with the line held by the 3rd Cavalry Brigade. During the whole day, their line was subjected to a severe and accurate bombardment and heavy casualties would have been incurred if they had not dug in promptly.

2nd Field Squadron R.E.—Followed the 3rd wave into the wood and assisted to consolidate the position won round the wood under very heavy fire. Major Swinburne, who was in command, was killed during the action.

3rd Cavalry Brigade.—Owing to the tactical situation, none of the 3rd Cavalry Brigade who were holding the line could be withdrawn, as every available man had already been brought up to strengthen their line, which was very weak. None of the Brigade was, therefore, available to take part in the attack, but protected the right flank of the attack.

7th Cavalry Brigade (in Bois de Gentelles).—Owing to the extensive front of operations and to heavy losses incurred by the division, one Brigade of the 3rd Cavalry Division was placed under the orders of General Pitman at 11.10 a.m. The 7th Cavalry Brigade was the Brigade detailed, and the Inniskilling Dragoons were ordered forward as a reinforcement into Rifle Wood, where they took over the line from C 10 d 3·5 to C 16 b 7·9. They moved down astride the main road at a gallop from the Bois de Gentelles to Hourges, where they dismounted and made their way up to the wood on foot, their horses returning at the gallop. The 7th Dragoon Guards were also later ordered forward; they came under shell fire while moving down the road, and a number of their horses were hit. The 7th Dragoon Guards took over part of the line held by the Carabiniers, who had suffered heavy losses. The line taken over ran from C 17 a 5·9 to C 11 c 5·8.

General.—The attack was carried through with dash and gallantry, and reflected the greatest credit on all ranks,

Digitized by Google

especially when it is considered that the Division had been in action since March 21, during which time they had suffered very heavy losses and not had time for rest or refitting. The enemy machine-gun fire, also artillery and trench-mortar fire, directed on the wood all day, was severe and caused very heavy casualties. Between 11.30 a.m. and 3 p.m. the Germans were on several occasions seen massing for counter-attack in large numbers and were engaged by artillery, machine-gun and rifle fire. The principal concentration of Germans was about 2.30 p.m. on this occasion; the casualties inflicted on them by our artillery were very severe, as good targets were obtained on Germans marching along roads in heavy columns, and were fired on with direct observation; as much as 2,000 rounds being fired by a single battery R.H.A.

From 9 a.m. onwards the Divisional Commander established a battle headquarters on slope N.W. of Domart, from which the whole battlefield could be seen and telephonic communication established with General Seely, as well as with advanced Divisional Report Centre at Gentelles. The telephone line to General Seely at Hourges was frequently cut by artillery fire, and despatch riders formed the principal method of communication.

German Losses.—The large number of German dead in and outside of Rifle Wood prove the German losses to have been very heavy, and many more were caused by 'D,' 'E,' and 'J' batteries R.H.A., assisted by artillery of the 29th French Division, artillery of the XIX Corps, and by the 19th Siege Battery, which was in action just outside Gentelles and which on numerous occasions took under their fire places where the enemy were reported concentrating. The targets offered to the Horse Artillery by heavy columns moving in the open were taken full advantage of, and very heavy casualties must have been inflicted.

Relief.—The Division and attached Cavalry Regiments were relieved without incident during the night 1st/2nd by

Digitized by Google

the 133rd French Division and the 14th British Division, when each brigade returned to its horses. The relief was not completed until 4.30 a.m. on the 2nd.

The above gives an accurate account of the action, but, like all reports, lacks atmosphere and description of surroundings.

The position which we took for our battle headquarters was an ideal one. Our observation post, a little grass mound at the end of the spur, gave us a magnificent view of the whole of the area involved. We were in position by 8.30 a.m., and the headquarter's horses were tucked away in a small quarry behind the bank. At first there was a haze, but, luckily, it cleared just as the advance commenced. It was a wonderful sight to see the waves go forward. A good many shells seemed to burst amongst them, but they appeared to take no notice and pushed on steadily to their objectives. Perhaps one of the finest sights of the day was to see the Inniskillings go forward at a gallop. They had to move for the best part of a mile over the open before they disappeared into the hollow ground, and then their led horses came back at a gallop, while at the same time you could see the dismounted troops filing slowly up the hollow to the wood. When the 7th Dragoon Guards came to repeat the operation half an hour later, the Germans had got a balloon up in prolongation of Gentelles Wood and Hourges Road.

The 7th Dragoon Guards came in half sections down the road, and the German artillery opened on them just as they reached our headquarters: two shells burst right in the middle of where we were standing and knocked out fourteen horses. Only two men were hit. After this we shifted our headquarters about 50 yards to the west, a little further away from the main road.

We telephoned to the XIX Corps that the German balloon was causing us considerable inconvenience, and within half an hour we had the pleasure of seeing it go up in flames and

Digitized by Google

the occupant coming down in a parachute. One of the features of the day was the work of our aeroplanes: they were like a swarm of birds all day, and during the operations we watched many combats. Our men always seemed to get the best of it. In the evening a single Bosch plane came right over our headquarters, not 1,000 feet up. Immediately he seemed to be surrounded by our planes, and we thought his escape would be impossible, but he dodged the whole of them and got right away. We saw quite plainly with our glasses, and in fact with our naked eye, whole battalions of Germans coming along the main road on the sky-line from Moreuil Wood towards point 104. As each battalion appeared, our guns opened on them, and we saw all the shells bursting amongst them; but no sooner was one battalion scattered than another appeared, only to meet the same fate. Reports also came in of German troops moving in the direction of Rifle Wood from the direction of Mézières. These also were dealt with by our artillery. The forward machine guns, which had gone up with the third wave and established themselves at the S.E. edge of the wood, also got on to the advancing troops at 600 yards range, so it was not surprising that none of these threatened attacks ever developed. Our aeroplanes, which flew over the wood the following morning, said that the whole country was strewn with German dead. The weather kept fine throughout the day, which was just as well, as our headquarters did not boast of any cover.

Batches of German prisoners were brought into our headquarters from time to time, from whom we extracted all the information we could as regards the position of their reserves, etc., and passed them back to the Corps. Twenty-six unwounded prisoners in all came through our headquarters, but many more wounded were passed straight in through the ambulance.

Thirteen machine guns were captured in the wood.

A dressing station was established at Hourges village,

Digitized by Google

where all wounded were collected and sent on in ambulances without delay. They had a very hard time, as Hourges was shelled continuously all the day, but the medical officers and *personnel* of the field ambulances did most splendid work.

General Seely, who was in command of the dismounted troops' attack, established his headquarters in Hourges village, and carried out his part in a most able manner. As soon as the Canadians had gained the far edge of the wood, he himself went up into the wood and saw the situation.

The perimeter of the wood which our troops had to hold was about two thousand yards in length, and, considering how weak the units were by the time they had reached their objectives, it is no wonder that so many reinforcements were required to make certain of being able to hold on in the event of a counter-attack.

Our casualties were heavy; but when one considers the issue that was at stake, and the result gained, no price could have been called too high.

The Germans had been advancing steadily at an average of about 5 miles a day since March 21, and were within 12 miles of Amiens. Our action at Moreuil Wood on the 29th had steadied them, but the action of April 1 settled them once and for all.

We remained at our battle headquarters until dusk, when all was quiet, and then rode back to Gentelles.

The following extract from the report of the Oxford Hussars gives an idea of the heavy casualties incurred by the Hotchkiss Rifle detachments (a Hotchkiss rifle detachment consists of three men—the No. 1 and No. 2, who work the automatic rifle; and No. 3, who brings up the ammunition).

The Oxford Hussars were on the right of the 4th Cavalry Brigade, who formed the 1st wave. They were disposed in three lines. The Hotchkiss were mostly the second line, and on the right flank. They went into action with seven Hotchkiss rifles.

Digitized by Google

'*D*' *Squadron.*

No. 1 Gun.

No. 1 was killed before going 100 yards, and No. 2 was wounded. Pte. Timms picked up the rifle and took the tool bag from No. 2.

No. 2 Gun.

No. 1 was wounded, at once dropped the gun. No. 2 went to pick the gun up, and was killed; another man picked it up, and carried it until the objective was gained.

No. 3 Gun.

No. 1 was wounded after going 100 yards. No. 2 was wounded (has since lost a leg) and started to go back with tools, and Corporal Watson took the tools from him, and when the officer gave the order for the Hotchkiss to come into action and return the fire of the Germans (*i.e.*, after the line advanced 250 yards) Corporal Watson joined up with Pte. Timms, and they fired twelve strips before they had to stop on account of the advance of the Canadians.

'*A*' *Squadron.*

No. 1 Gun.

No. 1 died of wounds on reaching the objective.

No. 2 wounded crossing the open.

No. 2 Troop Gun.

No. 1 wounded on reaching objective.

No. 2 wounded on reaching objective.

The two guns worked well all day, and were brought back in the evening.

'*C*' *Squadron.*

No. 1 Troop Gun.

Damaged by a man falling on it just after the start.

No. 1 and 2 wounded.

No. 2 Troop Gun.

No. 1 wounded in the open.

No. 2 wounded in the wood.

Digitized by Google

COPY OF TELEGRAM RECEIVED AFTER THE ATTACK ON MOREUIL WOOD, MARCH 29, 1918.

2nd Cavalry Division.

Wire from Army Commander begins: 'Please convey my warmest thanks to 2 Brigades of 2nd Cav. Div. for their successes of yesterday. They have rendered invaluable services, and I am deeply grateful to them. I trust their losses have not been severe. 2 ends.

(Signed) XIX CORPS, 10.50 a.m.

31st March, 1918.

From G.O.C., 61st Division (with reference to operations of 5th Cav. Bde. on March 30 in front of Gentelles).

2nd Cavalry Division.

I wish to express to you my high appreciation of the help given to the 61st Division by the Cavalry yesterday. This not only helped the Division to maintain its own line, but afforded valuable assistance to 39th and 66th Divisions' fronts on our right. Throughout the day it was noticeable that the support and appearance of the Cavalry gave the Infantry increased confidence, which at times was most valuable.

(Signed) COLIN MCKENZIE,
Maj. Gen.
Commanding 61st Division.

31st March, 1918.

COPIES OF TELEGRAMS RECEIVED AFTER THE COUNTER-ATTACK ON APRIL 1.

From G.O.C., 19th Corps.

To G.O.C., 2nd Cavalry Division.

My heartiest congratulations and thanks to you and all concerned in the fine achievement of your Division to-day. The great success attained has a most important bearing on the whole operations.

Digitized by Google

From The Army Commander (General Sir H. Rawlinson).

I am anxious to express to the 2nd Cavalry Division my admiration and warmest thanks for their successful counter-attack this morning, and I congratulate all ranks most heartily on their brilliant achievement. I fear they have suffered heavily, but their victory has been invaluable at this critical juncture.

From The Commander-in-Chief.

Convey my congratulations to the 1st, 2nd and 3rd Cavalry Divisions on the good work done during the recent operations. Please inform all ranks.

2ND CAVALRY DIVISION.

Casualty Return.

March 27 to April 1 (both dates inclusive).

—	Officers.			Other Ranks.		
	Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.	Killed.	Wounded.	Missing.
Div. Hd. Qrs. -	—	—	—	—	1	—
2nd Fld. Sqd. -	1	1	—	1	3	—
3rd Cav. Bde. -	4	5	—	11	94	4
4th Cav. Bde. -	2	9	1	27	152	5
5th Cav. Bde. -	—	10	—	18	148	9
Can. Cav. Bde. -	3	18	1	72	319	75
Innisk. Dgns. } 7th Dgns. - }	—	5	—	16	64	—
TOTAL -	10	48	2	145	781	93

	Officers	Other Ranks
Total, 21st to 26th -	60 51	1,019 888
TOTAL - - - - -	111	1,907
Deduct attached - -	27	546
TOTAL, 2ND CAV. DIV. -	84	1,361

Digitized by Google

SUMMARY.

The above account of the operations of the 2nd Cavalry Division should be of particular interest to those who wish to study the Cavalry work on the Western Front, as they bring out many valuable Cavalry lessons, of which some of the most important are (in addition to those already mentioned):—

(1) *The Value of the Mobile Reserve.*—On September 30, two Cavalry Brigades, suddenly ordered up in support, turn out and cover 6 miles in 1½ hours. On April 1, the Inniskilling Dragoons had reached a threatened point, 4 miles from their bivouac, in half an hour from receipt of order.

(2) *The Moral Effect of the Cavalry.*—On April 30, Major Timmis's Squadron, drawing a heavy fire all along the northern face of the wood, though eventually compelled to take cover, had such an effect on the Germans that when, a quarter of an hour later, Lieut. Flowerdew's Squadron followed in their tracks, not a shot was fired, and the Germans were found to be in full retreat. Lieut. Flowerdew took immediate advantage of the opportunity to use the *arme blanche.*

(3) *Moral Support to our own Infantry.—See* General McKenzie's report.

(4) The casualties when actually mounted were small compared to similar actions on foot.

(5) The tactical handling of the Canadian Cavalry Brigade at Moreuil Wood on March 30 must not be taken as an example of how to make use of available troops. Units were split up in a manner which cannot possibly be upheld. Time, however, was such an important factor that there was perhaps some justification for the leading regiment having been launched on three objectives a mile apart—an operation which eventually took two Brigades. The final success, however, was gained by the 'Cavalry spirit,' which, without organised combination, helped all units to reach their final objectives.

Digitized by Google

REMINISCENCES OF SOLDIER JOCKEYS IN BYGONE DAYS

By Lieut.-Colonel T. B. Phillips, O.B.E.

In the old days, many soldiers could hold their own against the best professional jockeys, which I put down to regimental races. In those days every Cavalry regiment had their races at the end of the season, and every officer was expected to produce his best hunter and go round the course. After winning a few regimental races, the officer got more ambitious and blossomed out into riding horses in open races, and, after a little practice, found he could do as well as most people. The press in those days were rather down on the amateur, and I am afraid they still are. It is not nice to read in the papers the next day that you rode a d—— bad race, and rather apt to put youngsters off; and I suppose, for many years past, soldier jockeys have read similar criticisms in the papers. The keen ones did not care and carried on, and many of them made good.

The first I knew well was Bay Middleton. I was hunting in Cheshire, and that season the Empress of Austria rented Combermere Abbey for the hunting season, and 'Bay' was her pilot. The Empress was a beautiful horsewoman, and wherever 'Bay' went she followed. His one idea was that every fence was jumpable in any part, and there were very few runs that they did not see the best of. On one occasion the meet was at Tarporley. All the world decided to go there to see the Empress, and when I arrived every road into Tarporley was chock-a-block with vehicles of every sort. 'Bay' had an idea that this would happen, so he and the

Digitized by Google

Empress went off and had a day with Sir Watkin, and the crowd were disappointed. The Empress had a curious habit of always carrying a large yellow fan out hunting. She hated being stared at and used to hide her face behind it.

Captain G. W. Hunt (Jonas) originally joined the 12th Lancers. Just before they sailed on the ill-fated 'Birkenhead,' Jonas got a transfer to the 4th Light Dragoons, and shortly after this he proceeded with his new regiment to the Crimea. I believe he was about the only officer who never missed a day's duty throughout the whole campaign. On one occasion he was going round inspecting the picquet, and found a sergeant asleep at his post; he woke him up, put him under arrest, and told him the penalty for sleeping at his post was death and that he was certain to be shot. The man begged for mercy, but Hunt was adamant. On returning to camp he thought it over, kept the sergeant in suspense for about twelve hours, then sent for him and told him that he had had a good lesson and that on service a live soldier was better than a dead one, and told him that he would not report him. The man was very grateful, and said that he hoped some time to do the Captain a good turn. A short time after, the famous charge of Balaclava took place. Hunt, when he arrived at the Russian guns, jumped off his horse, and proceeded to cut the traces of the gun-teams; the sergeant, seeing him on the ground, jumped off his horse. At that moment a Russian galloped at Captain Hunt; the sergeant had just time to jump between them; he received the lance full in his chest—a fatal wound. His last words were, 'Captain, I have paid my debt!'

After the war was over, Jonas retired from the service, which he always said he regretted for the rest of his life. He then settled down, mostly in Paris, and rode a great deal on the Continent, both in France and Belgium. He did not often ride in England, but in 1859 won the Gold Cup on his own horse, Goldsmith. In 1860 he ran a horse in the Grand

Digitized by Google

National which was ridden by Captain Townley; Huntsman was only beaten a neck by Anatis. Jonas was a tremendous gambler all his life. He died in 1906.

Wenty Hope-Johnstone, of the 7th Hussars. The first time I met him was riding in a race up Cumberland way. I was surprised, as he had had a very bad fall about two years before and no one thought he would ever ride again; however, he started and rode many more winners. One of his favourite rides was on old Champion; when I first saw the horse he was a dark grey, but he went on winning races until he was quite white. I can see him now, jumping the Liverpool fences. Champion, in his time, started in 99 races, won 37, second 33, and third 8 times. The first time Wenty rode in the Grand National was in 1873, on a horse called Revirescat, and his first ride in public was at Windsor in 1866. In 1876 he headed the winning gentlemen riders with 45 wins; in 1877, 55 wins out of 114 rides.

Next I remember Billy Morris, of the 7th Hussars. He was quite at the top of soldier-riding in his day. We were quartered at Manchester, and on the first day of one of the Manchester Race Meetings I met Billy Morris, who was then adjutant of the Cheshire Yeomanry. I told him that I could put him up in Barracks if he cared to stay for the second day's racing; he very nearly accepted, but eventually decided he would go back to Cheshire and hunt instead. I wish he had accepted the invitation, as the next thing I heard was that he had been killed out hunting on that day. The curious part of it was that someone had undone his collar and tie, but to this day no one knows who did it. The presumption is that someone jumped on him and, when he found that he was dead, in a fit of the funks rode away, and said nothing about it. The body was not found till late in the afternoon, and no one else saw the accident. Billy, in his younger days, rode a great deal in Ireland when his regiment was quartered there. In 1879 he won the Irish Grand Military at Punches-

Digitized by Google

town on Witch Hazel; he also won the Grand Military Hunt Cup in 1880 on May Bloom, and the Gold Cup in 1897 and 1898 on Chilblain. I think he only rode once in the Grand National, when he was third to Empress on a horse called Downpatrick in 1885.

Captain Boyce, of the 19th Hussars, was just making a name as a good rider. One day, at Sandown, I saw him take a very bad toss. That night, to my surprise, I met him at dinner at what the cabbies used to call the 'in and out Club.' Noticing that he seemed rather dazed after dinner, I put him in a cab and sent him home. The following day I heard he had died very shortly after getting to his rooms.

Captain F. Barton first joined the Bays, and then transferred to the Scots Guards. He always said The Saint was the best horse he ever rode, and won many races on him. This horse, however, was the cause of putting Barton on his back for a long time. At Sandown, in 1888, The Saint, carrying 13 st. 10 lbs., gave him a very bad fall, which fractured his spine, from which he never really recovered. I used to see him, immaculately dressed, being drawn about the park in a bath chair.

Lee Barber (the Shaver), of the 3rd Dragoon Guards, was one of the best soldier jockeys for many years. He might have gone on much longer if he could have got out of the habit of playing cards all night. On one occasion he was staying with us for a race meeting, where he had several mounts. In those days we played whist, and at about 2 a.m. we shut down. Jonas Hunt, a very famous horseman and gambler, who had ridden in the Charge of Balaclava, was also one of the party; and when we had decided to go to bed, those two decided to play écarté, and started. We could not leave our guests, so had to sit up till 7 a.m. watching them play, and they were not playing for nothing. The Shaver appeared at breakfast as if he had had a long night's rest, but it could not last. The man who gave him most of his

Digitized by Google

riding got sick with him and refused to put him up any more, as he could never be certain that the Shaver had had one hour's sleep.

A good story is told about the Shaver. A noble duke was staying at Newmarket for one of the meetings, and arrived home one morning about 6 a.m. At breakfast, his hostess asked him what he had been doing. He replied, 'Oh, I was playing cards at the rooms with three very nice youngsters.' When asked who they were, he said he had no idea. All he knew was: 'One was called Tops, another Putty, and the third the Shaver.' And he added that if it had not been for the Shaver having to attend a prize fight at 6.30 that morning and afterwards ride several gallops, he imagined they would still be playing cards.

The Shaver won three Irish Grand Militarys, one on his own horse Jupiter Tonans, who also won the Irish Grand National. In 1877 and 1878 he headed the winning list of jockeys in Ireland; he also won the Gold Cup in 1881 and 1883. I suppose the best horses he ever rode, and they were all very good, were Ireland, Innisfail, Coronet, Royal Fern, Ivanhoe, and his own horse, Jupiter Tonans.

During the Great War, the Shaver, at the age of well over sixty, took on a job as draft-conducting officer, and stuck to it as long as the War lasted. I could write much more about the Shaver; but, as he is still very much alive, he might not like it.

Sir Cuthbert Slade, Scots Guards, whose early death everyone regretted, was one of the best riders of his day. He was connected with a very famous horse called Æsop, which ran and won many races. He was never quite good enough, however, to win the Grand National. In 1893 he won the National Hunt Steeplechase at Sandown with Van der Berg. Another of his best horses was Climb Axe: he rode this horse in thirty races, winning sixteen of them.

Captain Orr Ewing (the Weazel), of the 16th Lancers,

Digitized by Google

rode a lot in his time, with fair success. I remember attending a sale at Tattersall's when he sold his horses. I went into one box and saw what I considered one of the best types of steeplechase horse I had ever seen. He had won a regimental race in Ireland. I could not tear myself out of the box for a long time, and decided to buy him if he went at a reasonable price. When he came up for sale, I think the price was £1,500, so other people admired the horse as well as myself. If only the last 0 could have come off the price, the horse would have been mine. This was Cloister, and in my opinion the best steeplechase horse we have seen in the last thirty years. Manifesto ran him close, but I put Cloister first. With any luck he might have won the National three times. He won it once. Roddy Owen, when second on him, admitted he rode a bad race, and ought to have won. Another time he was second, carrying 12 st. 7 lbs. On this occasion, if he had been given a pull in the last half-mile, I think he would have won; 12 st. 7 lbs. is a big weight to ask a horse to carry 'in front' over the National course.

How the Weazel would have liked to ride him in all his races!—but it was not to be. Orr Ewing 'went west' rather early in life. At different times the Weazel ran several horses in the Grand National. Ford of Fyne was about the best of them, and ran third to Manifesto one year and was second when that horse won his second National.

On one occasion, I and about a dozen Cavalry officers were told off to attend what was called a 'grave-diggers'' class at Chatham. We were all supposed to live there, and not to visit the 'village' without leave; needless to say, most of us had rooms in town. In those days there were some very well-managed night clubs in London, and the only crab the authorities had against them was that most of the lady members belonged to the oldest profession in the world. We used to spend the night at these clubs, and catch an early train to Chatham, with the result that the greater

Digitized by Google

part of the day was spent in the royal game of 'shut-eye' instead of at work. The authorities did not like this, and usually refused leave whenever asked for.

Purefoy, of the 3rd Hussars, was a member of this class. In those days he used to ride a bit. He was running a horse, I think, at Croydon, and applied for leave, which was refused; but, not to be beaten, he sent a doctor's certificate from London saying he was ill, and went off to the races. On his return the Commandant enquired after his health, and seemed very pleased to hear that he had recovered. Then an awkward question was asked: 'You sent the certificate from London; how was it you were there without leave?' Then the fat was in the fire. Purefoy still races in a small way, but at one time was the head of a very powerful racing establishment.

Micky McFarlane, of the 9th Lancers, was also one of that class. As a youngster he rode a good deal in soldier races, but got too heavy to ride. He was a great gambler, and eventually went broke. He then went to Rhodesia, and for years was Secretary to the Buluwayo Club. He died a short time ago in London.

Freddy Bailey, of the 4th Hussars, was also there. Later he bred Ilston, a very good steeplechasing horse. Master Freddy got us all rather disliked at Chatham. The first night at mess he got a bit 'fresh,' with the result that after dinner there was a regular rag, senior officers got chaffed and mess furniture came to grief. We were not popular after this, and most of us did not get certificates to record that we knew all about 'grave-digging.'

Roddy Owen was one of the best soldier jockeys of my day. He was often asked why he had joined an Infantry regiment. He always replied that he wanted leave to attend race meetings, which he thought would be easier to get as an Infantry officer than one in a Cavalry regiment, where most of the officers were always asking for leave. He had method in his madness, and I suppose for years he had more

Digitized by Google

leave and did less soldiering than any other officer in the British Army. Roddy was a good-looking man, and rather fancied his appearance. He was about the first officer to wear the present turn-over collar, which was really invented by Sugden the actor. I can remember how chaffed one was the first time one appeared in such.

Roddy at one time was A.D.C. to Sir Evelyn Wood when commanding at Aldershot. Wood, who was rather a stickler for regulations, issued an order that all officers in his command should, according to regulations, wear a moustache. Roddy was always clean shaven. A Colonel of a certain Cavalry regiment, on receiving this order, wrote to the General to say that he would do his best to carry out the order, but that he would be much obliged to know what the General's A.D.C. was using to produce the necessary moustache; if informed, he would instruct his officers to follow the same method. The General was in a hole, and Roddy was ordered to grow one. This did not suit Roddy at all, and he resigned his appointment as A.D.C. rather than grow a moustache. On one occasion the General had a Field Day, and Roddy was to ride at Sandown that day. The Field Day wore on, and Roddy discovered that he had just time to catch his train. He did not like to ask for leave at the critical moment of the battle. Something had to be done. In desperation he jambed his spurs into his charger and pretended that he was run away with, and made his best way to the station and caught his train. Roddy always admitted that he did not care a d—— about hunting, saying one race gave him more pleasure and excitement than a dozen good hunts. We rather think that this was owing to his not being able to afford both sports. Roddy was very keen to win his races, and took every legitimate advantage he could. This rather put the wind up with some of the professionals. Harry Beasley told him one day that certain jockeys had decided to put him over the rails, and to look out for trouble. This had no effect

Digitized by Google

on Roddy, and if anyone took a liberty with him he usually got the worst of it.

His chief ambition was to ride the winner of the Grand National, and then he said he would do a bit of soldiering. He would admit that he rode a bad race on Cloister and ought to have won the National on him, but eventually he won the race on Father O'Flyn. I don't think he ever rode again, but went to the Egyptian Army and died on active service, of cholera, when commanding the post at Ambigal Wells. He had been unwell for some time, and his last words were: 'A thousand to one against me from the start.'

Bob Sandeman started life in the 6th Dragoons, but later on transferred to the 10th Hussars. In his early days he rode a great deal in India, getting one very bad fall, which kept him out of the saddle for a long time. After leaving the Service, he went to live for three years with that great friend of soldier jockeys, Arthur Yates. In 1885 he started a stable of his own near Ludlow. He was a most successful rider, and one year was head of the list of winning jockeys, including professionals. All his life he has been very keen on sport of all kinds, a very fine shot with the scatter gun and also with the rifle; he has won a great deal at Bisley, and still attends there every year. After leaving the Service, he joined the Gloucestershire Hussars and became Colonel of them.

Colonel Yardley, 6th Dragoons, spent some years in South Africa, and raced partly in partnership with the present General Rimington. Some of the best horses he owned in South Africa were J. D. B., Spy, and Coachman. In 1892 he rode a horse of General Beresford's called Faust in the Grand National; the race was won by Cloister, and Faust finished on three legs. Yardley always said if it had not been for the accident, he would have won the race. In his time he broke nearly every bone in his body. He was a great big-game shot, and also for several years was Sporting Editor of the CAVALRY JOURNAL.

(*To be continued.*)

Digitized by Google

'MILITARIE INSTRUCTIONS FOR THE CAVALLRIE'

Compiled by LIEUT.-COLONEL F. H. D. C. WHITMORE, C.M.G., D.S.O., T.D.

PART I. of the above instructions, which are contained in Captain John Cruso's Illustrated Cavalry Drill Book published in the year 1644, was dealt with in the three preceding numbers of the CAVALRY JOURNAL.

Part II. is devoted to Marching. Part III., Encamping. Then follows Part IIII., 'Of Embattelling.' The whole of this part is full of interest, but space does not allow its reproduction in full. The instructions contained in these essays are preceded by 'The Argument.' They occupy nine chapters, some of which, together with the Conclusion, are reproduced herewith.

CHAP. II.

Of giving the charge.

TO know rightly how to charge the enemy, is a matter of great consequence. If you meet the enemie marching in the day time, and he retreat, whereupon you resolve to charge him; you are first to send a troop of Harquebusiers to charge him on the rear, as followeth. The Lieutenant shall first give on with 25 horse charging the enemie upon a full trot or gallop: him shall the Captain follow with the rest of that troop. These are to be seconded by a company of Cuirassiers, as fittest to sustain the enemy, if he resist. But if the way be narrow, the said Cuirassiers shall follow immediately after the first 25 Harquebusiers, and then the Captain with the rest of them. The other troops shall second these, keeping alwayes a hundred paces distance between every company.

If you meet a troop of the enemies horse, your self having also but one troop, both of equall number, and that it so fall out that the

Digitized by Google

enemy retreat; you are to send your Lieutenant with twenty horse to charge him in the rear, following him with fifty to the same effect, closed as firm as may be: the rest must follow at a good distance under a good Corporall, which shall not engage himself to fight, (though the enemy turn head) unlesse he see his Captain and Lieutenant in great danger: and then he shall couragiously charge the enemy, to give time to those of his company to reunite themselves: there being nothing more dangerous in combat, then to engage the whole troop at once; because if they never so little disorder themselves, they cannot reassemble unlesse they have fresh men to sustain the enemy. Besides, the mere sight of a reserve gives a terrour to the enemy, which (upon occasion) may charge him on the flank. And if there be but fifty horse in a troop, yet some ten or twelve would be left for a reserve. If the troop which retreateth be of sixty horse, at least fifteen must be sent with the Lieutenant to charge the enemy, so as he be constrained to entertain them, to give time to the rest that follow to arrive in grosse and united: for by your sending of a smaller number, they might save themselves without losse, by leaveing onely some few to make the retreat.

CHAP. V.

How to receive the charge.

IT hath been shewed how necessarie it is, that the Corporall which is sent out with the scouts or discoverers, be a very able souldier, to know what to do upon occasion of unexpected accidents. One or more troops of horse being on their march, with their discoverers before them, if they shall meet the enemie, and perceive him to be the stronger, the said Corporall shall presently send a souldier to certifie the grosse, that they may retreat: himself with his scouts also retreating, but by differing wayes. For suppose the enemie hath received tidings of his contrarie partie, it is likely that (having discovered the said scouts) he will follow them, perswading himself that they flie to their grosse: by which means the grosse shall have time to save themselves, while the enemie is pursuing the said Corporall and his fellows.

When the enemie is much stronger, and the other partie have neither time nor convenience to put themselves in good order; the Chief shall call with a loud voice, and command every man to save himself: whereupon the souldiers disband into many parts, so as the enemie cannot charge them all: and so (especially in the night) many may escape. But this course is dangerous, and must be commanded with great judgement: howsoever, in all retreats, some of

Digitized by Google

the best mounted must be left behind under a good Commander, to make the retreat.

If passing by or through some village or wood, the first discoverers descrie the enemie, not being able to discern of what number he is, one of them shall presently come and certifie the Corporall which followeth with the other scouts, whereof the Corporall instantly certifieth the Chief of the troops; who thereupon puts his men in order, causing them to put their casks on their heads, (which otherwise in march they carrie at their saddle, or hanging on their left arm) and in some convenient place he maketh *Alto*, and resolveth according to the more certain news which the Corporall shall send him. Which since it may be such as may discourage the souldiers, the Chief, perceiving him coming that brings it, advanceth towards him, with one or two of his discreetest souldiers, and receiveth his message in private. Having heard his relation, he must presently resolve, either to retreat or to fight. If he resolve to fight (the enemie being so strong) he must give such orders as shall be fitting, especially commanding the troops to go serried close; and if there be divers troops, that they intermingle not, but observe good order: for it might so happen, that the enemie might charge him so disorderly, as he might make head and endammage the enemie, especially if he have not one or more troops of reserve following him, well united and in good order.

CHAP. VI.

Of ordering the troops for combat by single companies.

BEfore we come to shew the severall forms of battel which may be used among the Cavallrie, it will be fit to speak of their severall kinds of fighting, which they are to be practised in apart by themselves, before they be joyned with the grosse.

If a companie of Lances were to fight against foot, they were not to give their charge in an united bodie (neither upon this, nor any occasion whatsoever) because even the second rank of them hardly doth any certain execution; but they were to charge them rank after rank, wheeling off to the rear; to that end keeping large distances between rank and rank. The same order they were to observe, if they fought against horse upon the offensive. For the defensive, the companie (consisting of 64, as before, *Part* 1. *Chap.* 19.) might order themselves in this manner. Two ranks (of eight in rank) should face to the front: two to either flank, and two to the rear; leaving an open square space in the middle, they all standing back towards back, faced every way, to receive the charge wheresoever the enemie shall give on.

Digitized by Google

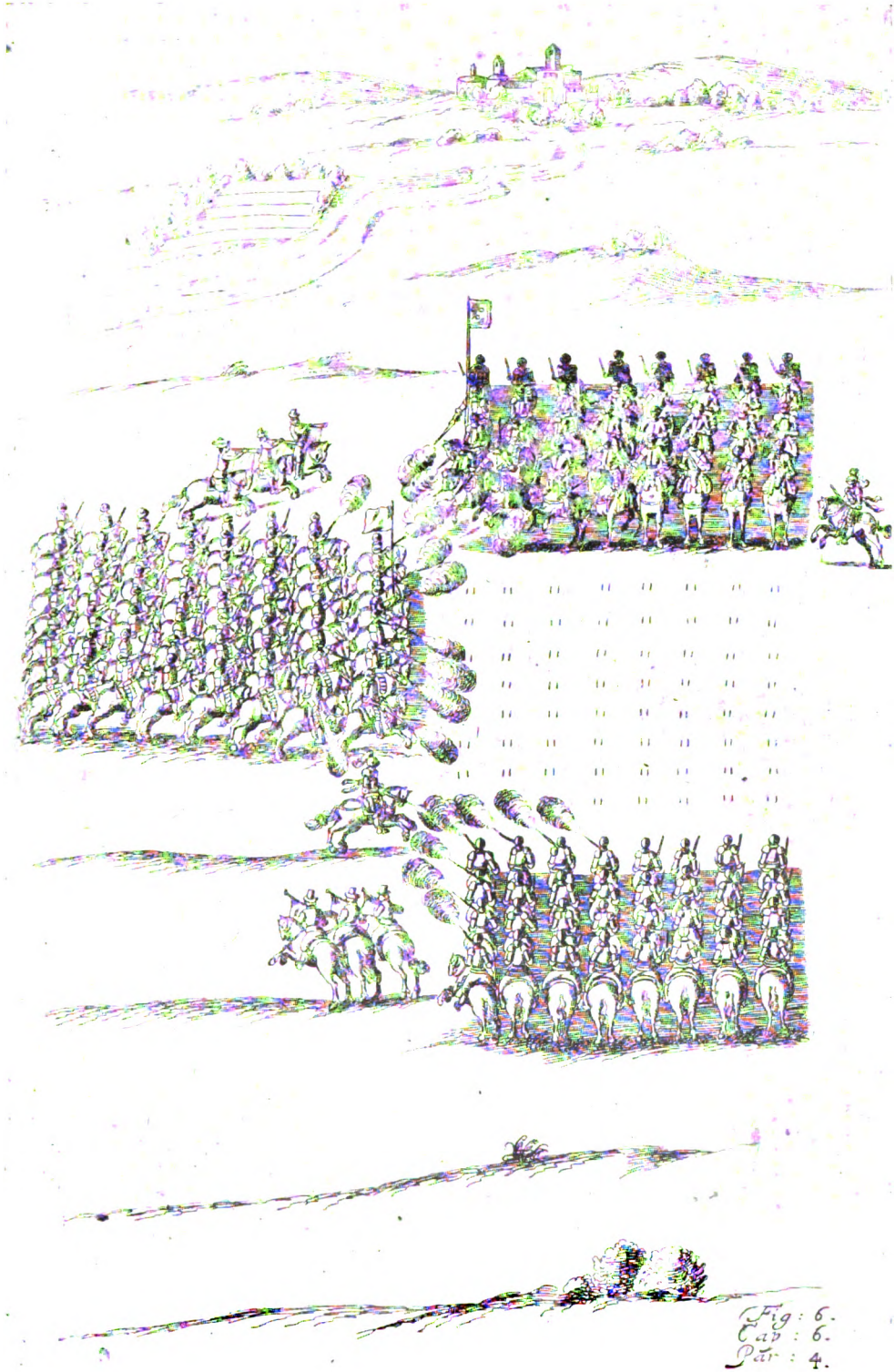
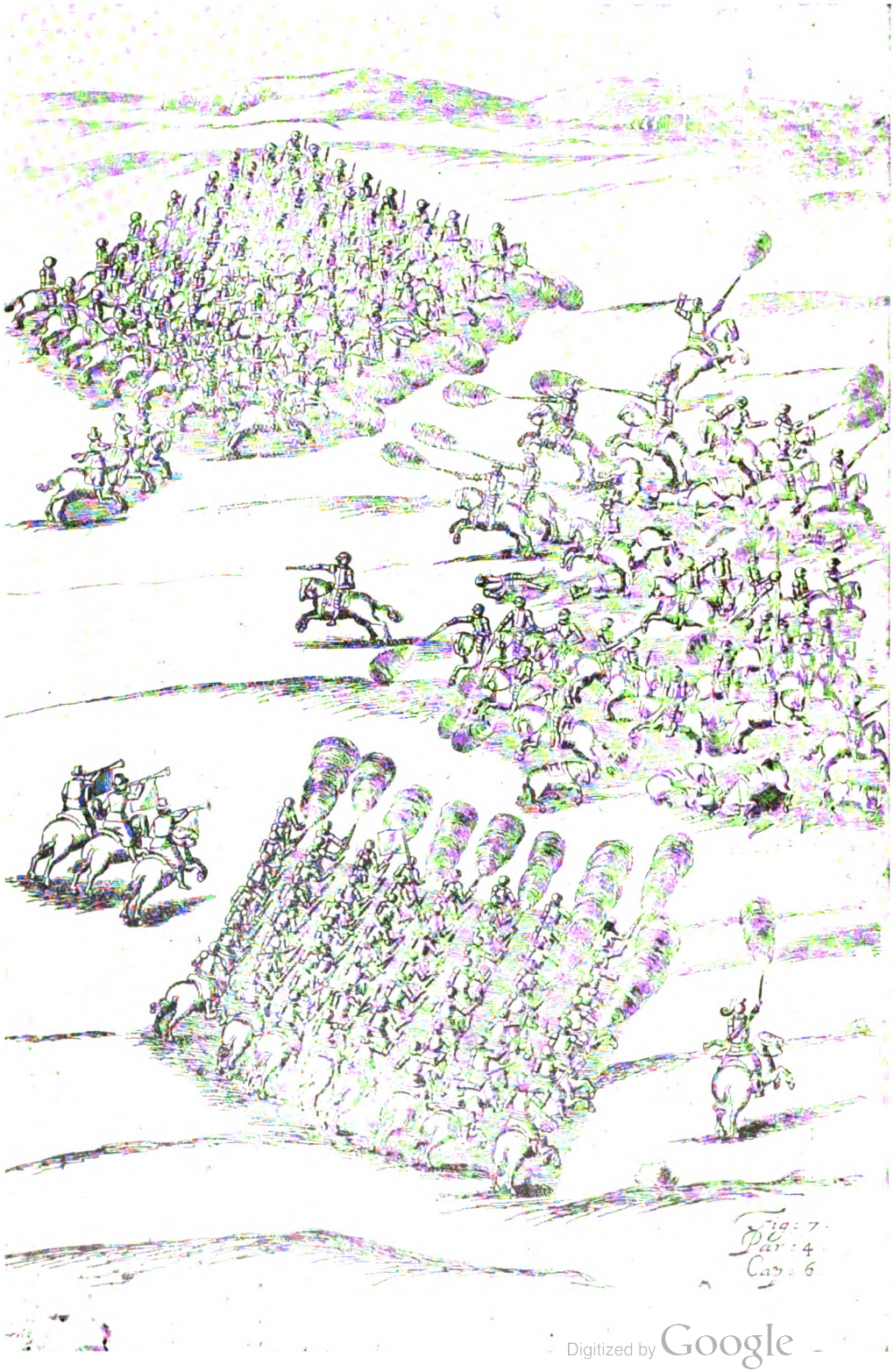


Fig: 6.
Cap: 6.
Par: 4.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

The same manner might be used in greater bodies, as should seem good to the skilfull Commander. If the Lances were to fight against Cuirassiers, they were (by two ranks together) to fetch their careers, and so to charge them, especially on the flanks and rear: every second rank forbearing the shock, till the first had done it, and was wheeled off.

If one companie of Cuirassiers be to fight against another, your enemie charging you in full career, you are to make a Carracoll, that is, you divide your bodie by the half ranks, and so suddenly open to the right and left; so as the enemie passeth through you, and you (facing inward) charge him on the flanks, as is shewed in *Figure* 6. *Part.* 4. Or if two companies fight against two other, then they observe the same manner, but keeping each companie entire, as may be seen in the same figure.

It is also to be done by the Carracoll first, and then (the enemie being within you) to wheel to the right and left inward, and so to charge him on the rear, in full career. These forms (in *Walhausens* opinion) are of speciall advantage, for the enemie (having charged you in full career while you went on upon the trot, onely on the sudden opening to the right and left) either (saith he) must run through and effect little or nothing, or (staying himself in the career) disorder his troop, and loose the force of his charge: as by *Figure* 7. *Part.* 4. appeareth. The Harquebusiers must be exercised to give fire by ranks. The first rank, having given fire, is to wheel off to the left (unlesse the ground will not permit it, but that it must be to the right) making readie and falling into the rear; the second rank immediately gives fire upon the wheeling away of the first, and so the rest successively. *Walhausen* would have them also give fire by files, the outward file towards the enemie (whether right or left) advancing before the bodie, in full career, and so firing; the rest successively to do the same, and in this manner to fight against Infanterie that might charge them on the flanks. But others do utterly reject it, as too much exposed to inevitable danger. In their firing by ranks, the first rank advanceth some thirtie paces before the bodie, first on the gallop, then in career (as some direct) and so to give fire: the second doth the same, and so the rest. The Dragoniers being a kind of Infanterie, and doing their chief services on foot, (as hath been shewed *Part* 1. *Chap.* 31.) it will be needlesse here to shew how they are to be exercised for skirmish, partly in regard there is no want of books for the practising of the foot (though I dare say they exceed rather in number then in weight) and principally, because I desire to confine my self to that which properly belongeth to the Cavallrie. How they are to dispose of their horses in fight, hath been shewed *ibid. cap.* 31.

Digitized by Google

CHAP. VII.

How the Cavallrie are to fight against foot.

A Commander having intelligence of some grosse of the enemies Infanterie, and resolving to set upon them, he must principally aim to encounter them in a place of advantage for the Cavallrie, that is, in an open champain. He must also use all possible diligence to charge them, before they can be ordered for battel, though they exceed him much for number.

But if the said Infanterie be put in good order at his approch, (if the ground be champain, and the number equall) yet may they be charged by the horse: First by some troops of Harquebusiers (or rather Dragons, because they do execution at a larger distance) which shall give on on their front, flanks, and rear. These were to be seconded by the Lances (in small divisions) when they were in use; but now by the Cuirassiers, who shall make their benefit of such overtures or disorders as shall be caused by the said Dragons and Harquebusiers.

If the Infanterie exceed in number, and so be serried in a grosse bodie, it will be hard for the Cavallrie to rout them, as hath been found by experience by the Swisses, which still had the better of the horse, by the reason of their grosse bodies of pikes.

If the Infanterie be ordered into severall battaillons, the horse are to charge them where they perceive them most open and naked. But if the foot have possessed themselves of some place of advantage, as some wood, trench, or covert way, then the horse are not to charge them, though equall, or somewhat superiour to them in number, in respect of such advantage.

CHAP. IX.

Of certain ceremonies before fight.

HAving shewed by these former rules and examples, how the horse are to be ordered for fight, not onely by themselves, but also when they shall be joyned with foot: that which now remaineth seemeth rather to require action then words. Indeed with antiquity, when the army was embattelled and ready for combat, it was usuall for the Generall to deliver some set speech, either from some higher place of turf or stone, or at the head of the troops, and riding amongst the Maniples to encourage his souldiers. And they either with an acclamation, lifting up of their hands, or clashing of their arms used to manifest their assenting resolution. Unto which kind of allocutions the ancient Sages use to ascribe a marvellous efficacy, not onely amongst the Grecians or Romanes, but also those whom

Digitized by Google

they then accounted barbarous, as the Britons, Gauls, Germanes, &c. as the histories of those times sufficiently testifie. Next to this, they sounded the *Classicum* (that is) a generall charge; and this was seconded by a generall shout of the souldiers, or a concussion of their arms. Moreover, a scarlet, red, or a carnation coloured coat or cassock was hung out upon the top of the Generalls tent: and a countersigne, or a word of distinction was given to the souldiers, as *Victoria*, *palma*, *virtus*, or the like, to know each other by. The Grecians used also to sing the *Pæan*, before the fight to *Mars*, and after battell to *Apollo*, &c.

Of all which ceremonies (which they duly observed, as found to be of very good use, and which were much graced by the solemne and stately manner of performing them) our times have retained very few. For as the actions of the modern warres consist chiefly in sieges, assaults, sallies, skirmishes, &c. and so afford but few set battels; so the practice of delivering publike speeches is almost grown out of use and esteem amongst our Chief commanders. Yet the late Prince of Orange at the battell of *Newport* before the conflict, delivered a pithy short speech to his souldiers: adding to his publick Oratory, publike Orisons, and riding up and down, gave courage to his souldiers. The *Classicum* is still retained (that is,) to sound a generall charge, namely amongst those troops which are to give on. And sometimes the *Clamor militaris*, or shout of the souldiers, which was not onely an acclamation or asente unto the Generalls speech, but also a loud and dreadfull kind of noise which they used to make when they gave the charge, thereby to encourage one another, and to strike a terrour into the enemies: as the Turks cry, *Bre*, *Bre*, *Bre*; the Irish, *Pharro*, *Pharro*; the French, *Sa*, *Sa*, *Sa*; the Dutch, **Wallaen Wallaen** &c. But as for the countersigne or word of distinction, that is seldome used now adayes, unlesse upon occasion of some *Camisado*, or other exploits in the night, when the souldiers may easily misse those means to know each other by, which in the day time the light, the sight of the ensigne or cornet, their skarfs (required among the Cavallry) or long acquaintance, may afford them.

But these being but ceremonies (as I called them in the title of this chapter) I willingly withdraw my self from them. Neither should I have been desirous to have meddled with them at all, but that the example of others (who have writ in this kind) led me unto it; and the respect unto my Reader (in common civility) required it at my hands; whom I could not well leave (after the sight of so many dumbe figures) without a word or two at the parting.

There remaineth onely now, that every one (according to his office, rank, and abilitie) strive for honour and victory; propounding

Digitized by Google

to himself the goodnesse of the cause, and authority of the Prince, the command of the Leaders, the vertue of the souldiers, the honour of the conquest, and the disgrace and damage of the defeat. Above all, lifting up his eyes and heart unto Almighty God, from whose hands victory, and the means to obtain it, is especially to be expected. *It is God that girdeth me with strength of warre, and maketh my way perfect. He teacheth my hands to fight, &c. Blessed be the Lord my strength, which teacheth mine hands to warre, and my fingers to fight. Through thee will we overthrow our enemies and in thy name will we tread them under that rise up against us. For I will not trust in my bow, it is not my sword that shall help me. But it is thou that savest us from our enemies, and putteth them to confusion that hate us.* And to this purpose we may (not unfitly) apply that which *Hezekias* spake to his Captains and souldiers (by way of encouragement) after that he had fortified himself against the power of the *Assyrians*. *Be strong and couragious, be not afraid, nor dismaid for the King of Assyria, nor for all the multitude that is with him: for there be more with us hen with him. With him is an arm of flesh, but with us is the Lord our God to help us, and to fight our battels.* Conformable to this was that admonition of *Alphonsus*, King of *Arragon* and *Sicily*, given to his sonne *Ferdinand*, when he sent him with an army in aid of the *Venetians* against the *Florentines*, in these words, *Nunc maximè te admoneo, fili, ne tantùm aut tuæ, aut commilitonum audaciæ tribuas, ut putes absque Dei auxilio victoriam ullam haberi posse. Victoria. (mihi crede) non hominum consilio & industriâ paratur; sed Dei Opt. Max. benignitate atque arbitrio. Scienctia igitur rei militaris ità demum profutura est, si Deum nobis pietate atque innocentiâ pacatum propitiumq; habuerimus. Deum igitur inprimis cole, in eum confide, à quo tum victoriat omnes & optima quæque provenire non dubium est. Quem si quandc tibi iratum suspicaberis, cave contendas; imò quicquid ab eo tibi accidisse videbitur, bene consule, & patientiâ atque pœnitentiâ eum placa, Solet enim Deus, quos diligit, interdum malis afficere: & quos constantes in adversis videt, rursus in meliorem fortunam restituere.* And now for a conclusion (instead of an *Omen*) I will adde that ejaculatory prayer of the Psalmist, *The glorious majestie of the Lord our God be upon us: prosper thou the work of our hands upon us, O prosper thou our handay work.*

——— non me sua servida servent
Dicta ferox; Dii me terrent, & Jupiter hostis.

Turnus ad Æneam, apud Virg. Æneid, l. 12.

THus have I briefly (according to my weak ability) run through that part of the Art military, which principally concerneth the Cavallry: Which subject I have the rather chosen to treat of, because

Digitized by Google

it is so little and so sparingly handled by those that have given us directions for warre, and lesse observed in our ordinary practise, especially in the exercise of our trained troops here at home. Wherein yet I do not presume to have attained unto that maturity which is required for the perfect knowledge and instruction of it; much lesse do I take upon my self to teach others (as I doubt not but there are many thousands that are a great deal better able then my self) but onely in hope that these my collections may serve either as a manuduction to those, that are desirous to be instructed in the first rudiments or confused knowledge of this Art: or else as an occasion to the judicious Masters of it, friendly and favourably to correct or supply what they shall find here to be amisse, or wanting. For my self, I shall account it a sufficient reward of my poore endeavours, if by my untunable jangling I may chance to toll and call in better ringers. But it is too late now (and at all times least of all expected in this kind of subject) to labour for apologies, or with Rhetoricall colours to varnish or dawb over the wants and imperfections of this discourse. *If I have done well, and as the matter required, it is that which I desired: but if slenderly and meanly, it is that which I could attain unto.*

Digitized by Google

THE 21st LIGHT DRAGOONS, 'THE ROYAL FORESTERS'

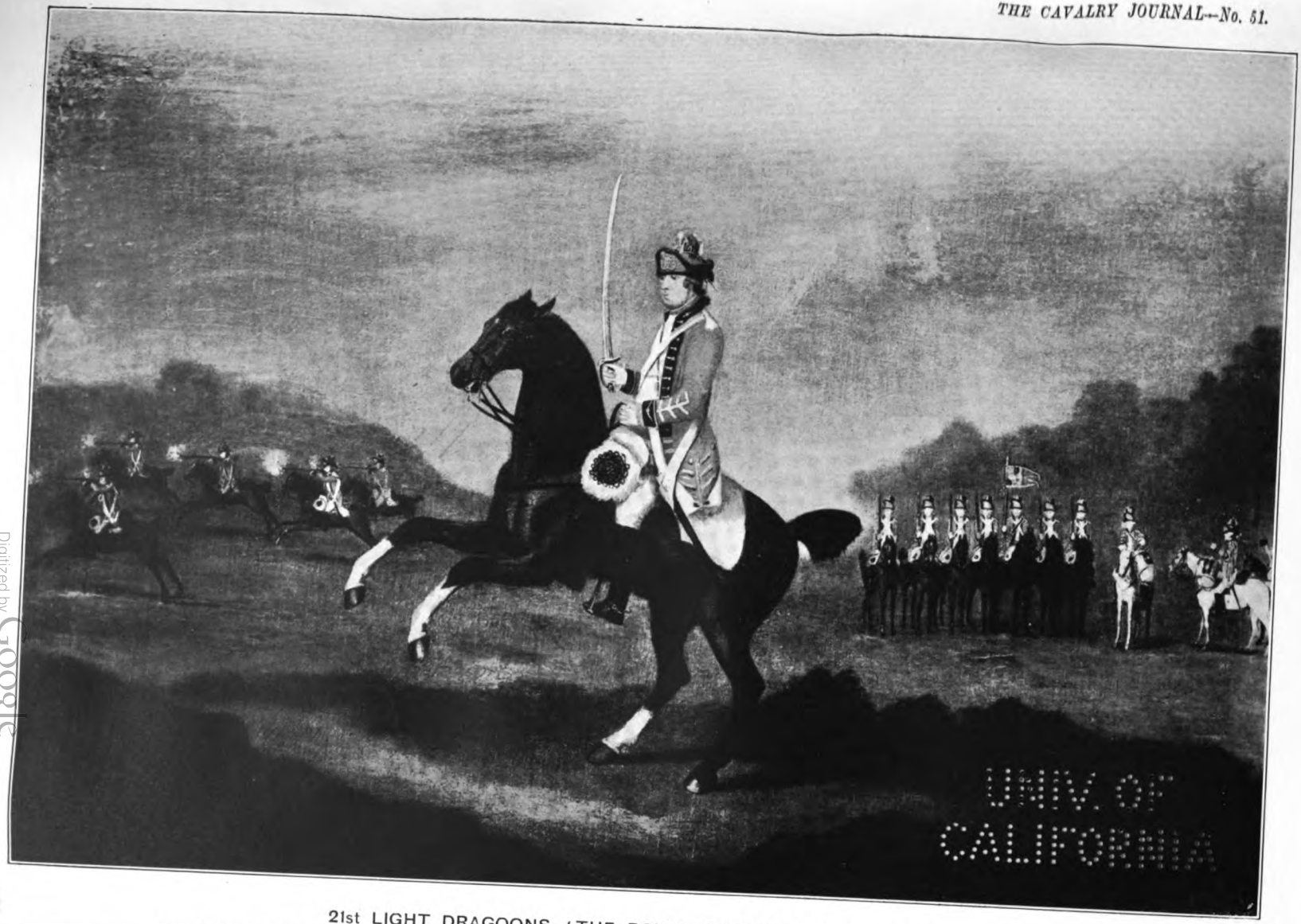
By WALTER EVELYN MANNERS

THE photograph reproduced opposite is from an oil-painting by F. Sartorius; and the regiment portrayed might have added to its motto, 'Hic et Ubique,' the trite phrase 'a short life and a merry one.' For the 21st Light Dragoons, 'the Royal Foresters,' were embodied in 1760, and disbanded in 1763. The regiment was an outcome and reflection of the immense popularity of John Manners, Marquis of Granby, Colonel of the Royal Horse Guards ('Blues'), and Commander in Chief of the British Army serving in Germany during the Seven Years' War (1756–1763).

In its origin, and the wide scope of its operations on land and sea, that war bore a strong resemblance to the Great War; but with totally different groupings of the principal belligerents and their Allies. After four years of fighting, the usual difficulties arose of maintaining the strength of the British Army. Pitt's Bill for the embodiment of the Militia by ballot caused riots and incendiarism in many counties; recruiting dwindled; and Lord Granby's repeated appeals for reinforcements wrung from Sir John Ligonier ('C. in C.' in England) a confession which 'should be wrote in cyphers'—that he had at home, in 1760, 'only two regiments of Cavalry, composed of old men and boys hardly able to manage their horses, besides eight regiments of Infantry consisting mainly of raw recruits. It is impossible to send you one man more,' declared Sir John.

* General Officers' Letter Books, Record Office.

Digitized by Google



21st LIGHT DRAGOONS, 'THE ROYAL FORESTERS,' 1760–1763.

Hon. Colonel: John Manners, Marquis of Granby. Colonel: Lord Robert Manners. F. Sartorius,

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

During March and April, 1760, Lord Granby was home on military affairs, including the court-martial on Lord George Sackville, the ever-present recruiting difficulty, and the deficiency in Germany of Light Cavalry. He returned to the war, leaving behind him a memorandum in which he 'ventured to flatter himself that many tenants and people of the counties in which his family's estates lay would eagerly enlist in a Corps under his command.' He suggested his brother, Lord Robert Manners-Sutton, as Colonel Commanding, with a Lieut.-Colonel, a Major, and six Captains. [The Army List of 1763 shows that there were also six Lieutenants and six Cornets], Lord Granby to be Hony. Colonel, and, together with the Captains, to find the men and horses without any expense to the public; he further engaged to raise them within two months of the Beating Order. Such was the inception of the 21st Light Dragoons, consisting originally of six troops of sixty men, three sergeants, three corporals, and two drummers each.

King George II. sanctioned this suggestion with alacrity, and 'was pleased to honour the Regiment with the title of Royal Forresters' (*sic*). The recruiting proceeded briskly, and the men were reported as being 'extraordinarily fine.' In a letter respecting a reinforcement, including the 4th Horse and the recently raised 'Elliot's Light Dragoons' (15th Hussars), Lord Granby expressed regret 'that my Regiment is not yet ready; but I hope as soon as it is His Majesty will be graciously pleased to add one more Favour to the many H.M. has already bestowed on me by indulging my Brother with an opportunity, at the head of my Regiment, of showing his zeal for H.M.'s service here in Germany.' Granby's constant desire was to get the Regiment out on active service, and George II. made frequent enquiries about it, eliciting sundry details; *e.g.*, that none of the men were under 5 feet 5¾ inches; whilst of the horses, none were under 14 hands, and most were above 15 hands.

Digitized by Google

On completing its strength, George II. wished the Regiment to proceed to Germany; but the War Office had decided on an addition of ten men per troop; and also joyfully realised the singular attractiveness of the Royal Foresters from a recruiting point of view, which suggested the policy of retaining it in England whilst drafting men from it to the Cavalry Regiments serving in Germany. With this object the regiment, to Lord Granby's bitter disappointment, was kept swaggering about at home, and the Marching Order books record its movements through Essex, Hertfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Nottinghamshire, northwards to York.

The uniform was scarlet, with blue facings, silver lace and buttons. A variation was introduced into the helmet of a slanting fore-peak decorated with the crown and royal cypher of 'G.R.' above the motto of 'Hic et Ubique,' and flanked with the letters 'R.F.,' executed in brass on a scarlet cloth ground. The actual headpiece of the helmet was of copper enamelled red, surmounted by a crest and red plume of short, wavy horsehair.* Lord Granby suggested that the helmet should display a unicorn (his armorial 'supporters' being unicorns); but was informed that the Board could not pass this, as the pattern for Light Dragoon regiments had been fixed as above.† The horse-furniture was of white goat's skin; that of the officers of white bear's skin, with a silver cypher of 'R.F.' on blue holster-caps. One authority says that the band, small in number at the period, wore black velvet hunting-caps, an item which would be quite appropriate to the sporting character of the regiment.

During 1761 and 1762 Lord Granby continued to beg for his regiment at the front; and Sir John Ligonier, aided and abetted by Lord Barrington, Secretary at War, continued to draft from it to the Light Cavalry in Germany, and many even to the heavy regiments on account of the men's size.

* CAVALRY JOURNAL, Vol. IX., No. 35.
† General Officers' Letter Books, Record Office.

Digitized by Google

Thus it is probable that, though the Royal Foresters won no battle honours as a regiment, its ranks may have been drafted to Germany two or three times over.

Soon after the accession of George III. and the consequent ascendency of his favourite the Earl of Bute, the continuance or abandonment of the German War became the principal bone of contention among politicians. During the late winter, and spring, of 1762, Lord Granby was in England for a considerable time owing to this indecision; and having made his reports and submitted fresh schemes regarding man-power, he betook himself to Belvoir Castle, to get all the hunting he could while the politicians tediously squabbled. So late as May, Lord Granby received orders to return to Germany, and on April 10, 1762, he had inspected the Royal Foresters, and given them a dinner at the Half Moon Inn, Hertford. His bill was as follows :—

'To eighty ordinaries, £12; Beer, £1 9*s.* 6*d.*; Servants' dinners, £1 10*s.*; Suppers for 20 gentlemen, £1 1*s.*; Suppers for Servants, &c., 7*s.*; Musicians' suppers, 4*s.*; French wines, five dozen, £7 12*s.* 6*d.*; Port wine, two dozen and eight, £2 12*s.*; Punch, £5 19*s.*; Pipes and tobacco, 4*s.*; Bottles and glasses broke, 3*s.* 6*d.*; Carriage of French wine, 8*s.*; The cook from London, £1 11*s.* 6*d.*; Wax candles, 8*s.*; Rumbo, 7*s.*; Oranges and sugar, 4*s.*; Breakfasts, 14*s.* 6*d.*; Fireing, 5*s.*; Servants, £5 5*s.*; To the six troops at 10 guineas each, £63; Total, £105 5*s.* 6*d.*

'Pay to Major Whiteford the sum of 100 guineas, and place it to the account of your friend

GRANBY.

To John Calcroft, Esq.

Received the contents, April 13, 1762,

JOHN WHITEFORD, Major R.F.'

The War dragged on during 1762 until November 3, when the Preliminaries of Peace were signed at Fontainbleau, and

Digitized by Google

the final Peace of Paris was signed in February, 1763, and ratified in March. The Royal Foresters were disbanded March 3, 1763, in the market-place at Nottingham, and the officers and men publicly thanked for their services. The former were placed on half-pay; and the troopers received six days' pay, a gratuity of £3 a head, their horse-furniture and regimentals. Their arms were returned to the Tower of London, and the horses realised an average price of £7 each. The regimental standard and two guidons are preserved at Belvoir Castle, but the only specimens known to the writer of its uniform and helmet are in the Zeughaus, Berlin.* The field-officers were originally:

Hony. Colonel, John Manners, Marquis of Granby.
Colonel, Lord Robert Manners-Sutton.
Lieut. Colonel, Russel Manners.
Major, John Whiteford.

Lord Granby, as already stated, was Colonel of the 'Blues'; Lord Robert had served with 'Kingston's Horse' in the 'Forty-five,' and the Duke of Cumberland's Light Dragoons in Flanders: he died in 1762, and was succeeded by Russel Manners, formerly of the 'Blues,' and subsequently of the 2nd Queen's Dragoon Guards. John Whiteford was previously in the 6th Inniskilling Dragoons. Most of the above details were included in the writer's 'Life of John Manners, Marquis of Granby' (1899).

* *See* Catalogue.

Digitized by Google

GAZELLE-HUNTING IN PALESTINE

By Brig.-General F. FitzHugh Lance, M.C.

An early start at 4 a.m. in the grey dawn of a September morning, the field consisting of some half-dozen British officers and about the same number of Indian officers and orderlies. A line is formed across the open plain of Esdraelon and the pack, consisting of six Selukis* and two terriers, take up their self-allotted posts, one old dog on each flank and one with the master in the centre, each accompanied by a young dog. These positions they take up quite of their own accord, and keep fairly consistently whether there is a line out or not.

In about half a mile a hare is put up, which, after a feint for the open, makes a bee line for a stony kopje some 600 yards away; two brilliant turns by Seluki, the father of the pack, and the hare and hound settle down to a race for cover. Unfortunately at this stage a young Indian orderly becomes over-enthusiastic, and joins the hunt on an impetuous horse that he cannot manage, and the hare, doubling close in under the horse, he knocks the dog flying. However, the dog is only winded, and after ten minutes is on his legs again, none the worse. We proceed over broken stony ground, covered with thorny scrub, and, though a couple of hares are sighted, we cannot get on to them, when suddenly, in the distance, a large jack is seen making from the high ground to a wadi, and some fruit gardens in the distance. We are all racing for him, but the dogs get a long lead over the rocky ground, and, as we get down on to the flat we can see Seluki, half a

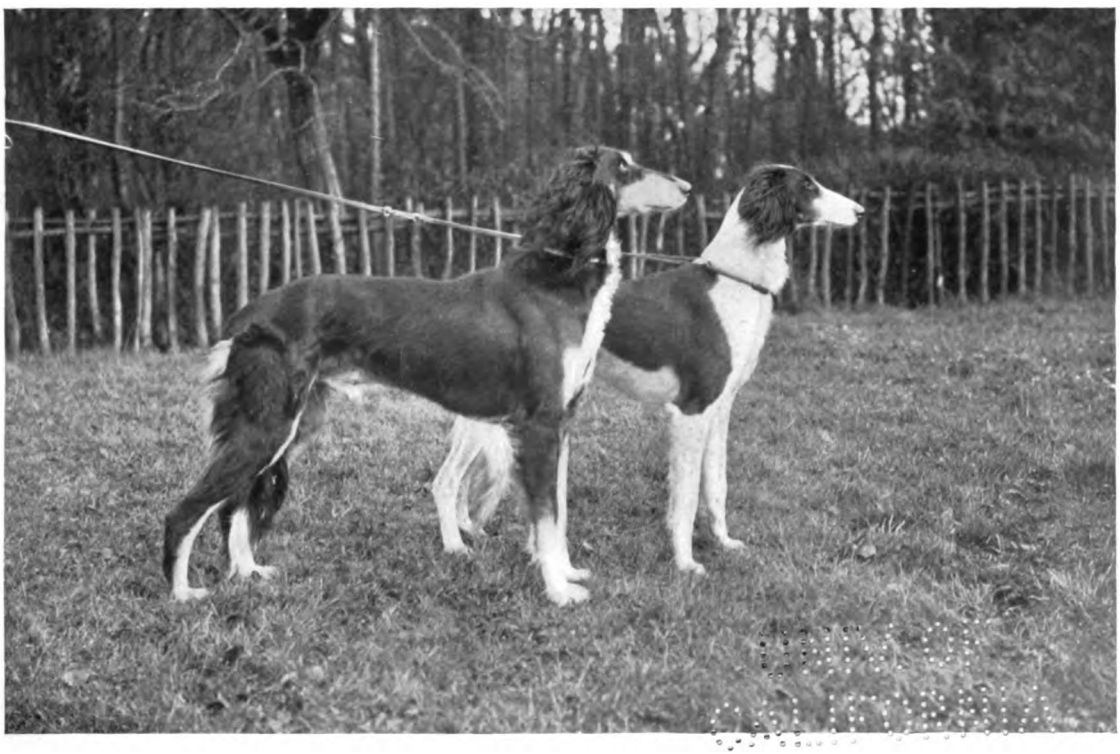
* The lop-eared greyhounds of Syria (*Salak Shami*).

Digitized by Google

mile away, run into the jack and take him by the loins; this lets up the rest of the long dogs, a running fight ensues, the jack with his back arched like a cat and his head tucked into his chest to protect his throat. Then up comes Whiskey, an imported pedigree fox terrier; he does not wait a moment, but makes a frontal attack and, getting hold of the throat, the rest soon polish him off. After this, nothing is found for a long time, and it is decided to return home, as it is now after nine o'clock and the dogs and horses are feeling the heat. A patch of rank weed is drawn on the way home and a gazelle is put up; the pack is straggling in the open ground outside the patch, but seeing a horseman galloping puts new life into it and the gazelle breaks cover some 50 yards in front of Seluki, who is leading. Then for 200 yards there is a magnificent race and it looks as if the dog would win, as they disappear from view over the edge of a shallow wadi, but the next thing we see is Seluki and Dhole, an old red dog, some quarter mile further down the wadi with their heads up. We gallop to them and see two saplings, 'Kelb' and 'Torr,' racing like mad further down the wadi. We cut off a bend to get up to them, and as we strike the wadi again we come on these two with the gazelle, which they had pulled down—a buck with good horns, which had been run down in about a mile. These gazelles are the Dorcas, and resemble very closely and are about the same size as the Chinkara of India.

In coursing gazelle and antelope, it is interesting to see how a fresh buck will often help a beaten one. The writer saw a very noticeable instance of this in South Africa when a greyhound had a spring buck apparently beaten after about a two-mile run, when a fresh buck came up from behind, went up a steep slope, ran some way abreast of the dog on one flank and then, swooping down within 20 yards in front of the dog, took him off the beaten buck. The little Stein buck will invariably go to ground when hard pressed, if he can

Digitized by Google



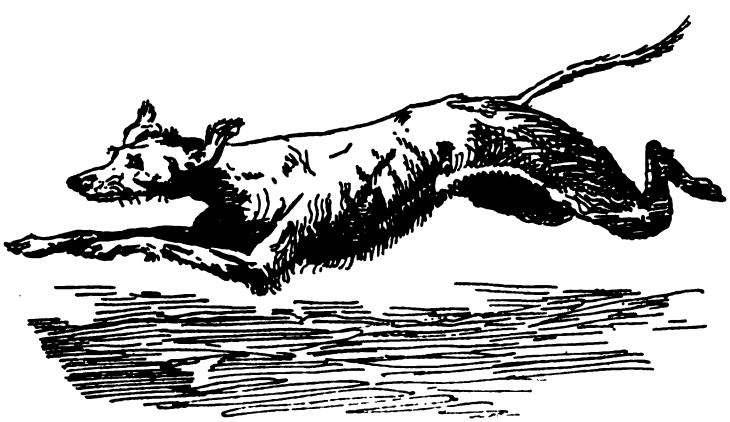
SELUKI HOUNDS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

find an ant-bear earth handy; one was dug out after it had been killed underground by a terrier 25 feet from the mouth of the hole and 9 feet deep. They are also wonderful at hiding themselves even on bare, baked ground, where there is no cover; and, after they have dropped, generally work backwards, instead of forwards as one would expect.

In any wild country, more fun can be got from the long dog and a terrier or two, than from any other breed. The foxhound is too expensive and too delicate, the shooting dog in hot countries is almost useless, but the long dog can stand the heat and can do a day's journey with a horse; and of all the long dogs the writer has had in various parts of the world (and they include everything from the progeny of Waterloo Cup winners to Australian Kangaroo hounds and Kaffir lurchers), the Arab Seluki is the best for speed and staying power combined, though as a rule he is not a great tackler; but this is only to be expected, as the Arab uses him solely for hunting the gazelle and hare.



A "Tazi."

Digitized by Google

POLO. AMERICAN ARMY v. *BRITISH ARMY*

By Lieut.-Colonel T. R. Melvill, D.S.O.

The American Army beat our representatives two games out of three at Meadowbrook on September 12, 15 and 18.

The first match was ten goals to seven in their favour; the second was won by the British, twelve goals to ten, after a desperate encounter; and the third and final resulted in a decisive American victory by ten goals to three.

As far as one could gather, the result came as a great surprise to players and spectators alike; a British victory had been confidently expected, but undoubtedly on the play the best side won.

In the first two matches the British side was: (1) Colonel T. P. Melvill, (2) Mr. W. S. McCreery, (3) Major F. B. Hurndall, (back) Major E. G. Atkinson.

In the last game Major V. N. Lockett, who had been laid up for more than a fortnight from a contused foot, the result of an accident in a practice game on borrowed ponies, felt able to play, and the 'line up' was: (1) Colonel T. P. Melvill, (2) Major E. G. Atkinson, (3) Major F. B. Hurndall, (back) Major V. N. Lockett. Major Lockett played most gallantly and showed glimpses of his very best pre-War form, but he was not physically capable of a sustained effort and fainted directly after the game. Major Atkinson, who had been a great success in the first two matches at back, was not so happy on his strange ponies at No. 2, and, although he was

Digitized by Google

put No. 3 after the second Chukker, he never found his true form the whole match.

The American side was: (1) Major Wilson, (2) Major Herr, (3) Colonel Brown, (back) Major L. Beard.

All the three games were fought out at terrific speed, the crowd was practically as big as at the last International Test Match in 1913, and excitement and enthusiasm were intense.

The disappointing results of these games from an English point of view only bear out the oft-proved maxim that a team will almost invariably beat four individuals.

This American side had been playing together for the past two years continuously. For the three months previous to the matches they had been struck off all military duty, and had devoted themselves entirely to practise and schooling their ponies. Another Officer (an ex-trainer of racehorses) was similarly struck off, and the stable management was in his sole charge.

All the ponies, with the exception of three of Major Beard's, were Government owned. They had been collected from all the Army centres, and out of the 50 at their disposal about 16 were quite first class; the remainder were good practice game ponies, and the players had sufficient spare ones to knock the ball about daily at full speed. The whole thing had been taken most seriously, and no stone left unturned to ensure success.

The English players were chosen by a Selection Committee after the Inter-Regimental. Owing to Major Hurndall being in Cologne it was impossible to play a single match together before leaving England. Thanks to the delay caused by the Dock Strike, the ponies were not fighting-fit when they embarked. The voyage took fifteen days, the first three or four of which were very rough. Owing to accidents to Colonel Melvill and Major Lockett, the team only got one practice game together, and played their first match *versus* the American Army within ten days of the ponies' arrival. Under these

Digitized by Google

circumstances it can be realised that neither players nor ponies were at their best, and several of the latter started to 'hang' after six minutes of play.

It must also be remembered that the only ponies at their disposal were what happened to belong to the five players, plus two or three lent by the kindness of brother officers.

The year after next we shall hope to welcome the American Army Team in England; to compete against them with any hope of success our house must be put in order, and every effort made to select, train and mount our representatives. If the difficulties of collecting four players for continuous practice during the drill season are insurmountable, it would appear that the winning team of the Inter-Regimental would stand the best chance.

Our side were beaten fair and square by a team which, in many people's opinion, would have won the Champion Cup at Hurlingham this year. Their combination was excellent, they played first class polo, and they were well mounted. They asked for no quarter and expected none, but their play was absolutely fair, and a nicer or more sporting lot of fellows it would be difficult to meet. They are very much under-handicapped, an omission which is soon to be rectified.

In view of the greatly improved form of our representatives in the American Open Championship, in the final of which they were actually leading till within four minutes of time, it would appear that a clear month of preliminary practice is necessary before men and ponies have thoroughly become acclimatised, and can give of their best.

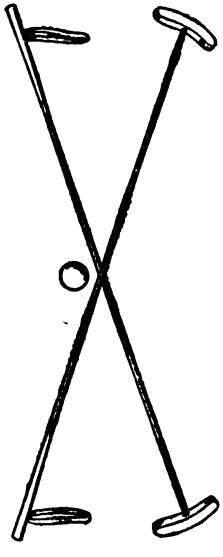
In conclusion, the kindness and hospitality shown to our Team have been extraordinary.

Major-General Bullard came to meet the team on arrival at New York, and afterwards entertained them at dinner at the Meadowbrook Club.

General Pershing himself came all the way from Washington and gave an official dinner in their honour.

Digitized by Google

No detail for the comfort and convenience of players and ponies alike had been forgotten. The two sides have got to know each other, to appreciate each other, and to realise that their ends and aims, and their ambitions, are identical, and there can be no doubt that this, the first International Army Polo Contest ever played, has proved that out of the game we and they love so well, much real tangible and lasting good can be extracted.



Digitized by Google

A REMARKABLE MEDIÆVAL HORSE

THERE are on record particulars of a bay horse called Morocco (or Marocco), which belonged to a Scotchman called Banks, and was publicly exhibited by him in Shakespeare's time. Sir Kenelm Digby says:—'Morocco would restore a glove to its owner after Banks had whispered the man's name in his ear, would also tell the exact number of pence in any silver coin shown to him.' Sir Walter Raleigh, in his 'History of the World,' writes that Banks 'would have shamed all the Enchanters of the world, for, whosoever was most famous among them, could never master or instruct a beast as he did.' Shakespeare alludes to the horse in 'Love's Labour's Lost.' 'Moth,' wishing to prove how simple is a certain problem in arithmetic, says:—'The dancing horse will tell you.' Morocco, we learn, added to his intellectual attainments other lighter accomplishments, and, being shod with silver, danced 'the Canaries,' a fashionable dance of that period. In 1600, Banks made his horse override the vane of St. Paul's Cathedral* amidst thousands of spectators; while this was going on, a serving-man came to his master, who was inside the Cathedral, and urged him to come out and see the sight. 'Away with you, fool,' was the answer, 'why need I go so far to see a horse on the top when I can see so many asses at the bottom.'

An old pamphlet, published in 1595, called 'Maroccus Exstaticus, or Bankes' Bay Horse in a Trance,' has a woodcut representing the animal standing on its hind legs with dice at its feet. This tract, which is of the greatest

* The former Cathedral, burnt down in the Fire of London (1666), which had a square tower.

Digitized by Google

rarity, is a good-humoured skit upon the manners and customs of the day, and for the purpose of anonymity the real

author causes the horse to be overheard making libellous disclosures, quoting Latin at great length and bursting into poetry. The title page describes the pamphlet as 'A discourse set downe in a merry Dialogue between Bankes and his beast: anatomizing some abuses and bad trickes of this age. Written and intituled to mine Host of the Belsavage and all his honest guests, by John Dando the wier drawer of Hadley and Harrie Runt head ostler of Bosome's Inn, 1595.'

It is assumed that the woodcut is a portrait of the horse and we may conjecture that he was either imported from Morocco, or that he was bred from a barb, or, to judge by his appearance, more probably a horse of Arab strain in Britain.

The exhibitions of the horse's tricks took place generally in the yard of the Belle Savage Inn, in Fleet Street, but Banks also gave performances elsewhere. In a book called 'Tarlton's Jests,' the following story is told: 'Once, when Bankes was at the Cross-Keys with Morocco, Tarlton, who

Digitized by Google

was the favourite clown of Queen Elizabeth's time, came in and placed himself amongst the admiring spectators, upon which Banks, instantly turning to the horse, said, "Go fetch me the veriest fool in the company," upon which Morocco, with his mouth, draws out Tarlton, who replied with merry words, "God a mercy, horse!" which was afterwards a bye-word through London.'

Banks took Morocco to Scotland in 1596, and in a MS. in the Advocates' Library in Edinburgh, written by one Patrick Anderson, the author says: 'This man (Banks) would borrow from 20 to 30 of the spectators' pieces of gold or silver, put all of them in a bag and shuffle them together; afterwards, he would bid the horse give every gentleman his own piece of money, which the horse invariably accomplished.'

He also took the horse in 1601 to Paris, where he gave exhibitions at the 'Golden Lion,' in the Rue St. Jacques, and there is an account of him in the notes of a translation of Apuleius's 'Golden Ass,' printed in 1602. In France the poor animal only just escaped being burnt alive as an emissary of the devil, but the astute Scotchman caused the horse to select from the crowd a man who had a cross on his hat, making the animal do homage to that sacred emblem by bowing and kneeling before him. Some accounts say that ultimately this sad fate did actually overtake the horse and that both he and his owner were burnt as magicians in Rome; later investigations, however, tend to prove that Banks was still alive in King Charles I.'s reign, being a flourishing vintner in Cheapside, and we trust, therefore, that Morocco was also spared to die a natural death.

A. L.

Digitized by Google

NOTES ON VICKERS GUN TRAINING
(continued)

By 'YEOBOY.'

HAVING considered the technical training of the M.G. troop by its own officers, we come to the tactical side of its training, which, I venture to suggest, should certainly include the training of all the senior officers in the regiment in handling machine guns on 'schemes' and manœuvres.

The characteristics of the gun, and its uses in attack and defence, are very fully dealt with in 'Machine Gun Training, 1921'; but, seeing that many of our present Cavalry and Yeomanry officers were not machine-gunners during the War, it may help them to have the outlines of some small schemes for a squadron or regiment, bringing out the correct handling of the Vickers guns in different situations.

Scheme 1.—Attack by (say) a squadron and two machine guns on a farm or small wood. In this case the points to be noted are :—

(*a*) During the approach march, the M.G. officer rides in front with his squadron leader.

(*b*) The M.G. Section must not be in rear of the squadron; preferably it should march behind the first troop.

(*c*) On the 'enemy' being located and an attack decided on, the squadron leader and M.G. officer make a rapid personal reconnaissance.

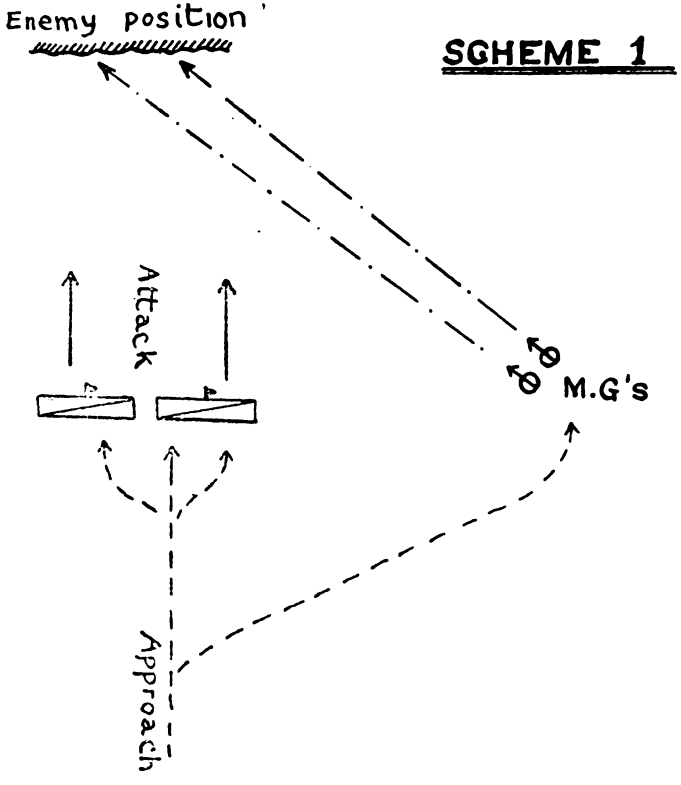
(*d*) They settle that the machine guns shall provide covering fire from a flank, whilst the assault is delivered in front; also, whether the attack is to be made mounted or dismounted.

(*e*) The machine gun covering fire must start immediately

Digitized by Google

before the assault, and it takes a good deal of practice to time the two correctly. It is very difficult for the M.G. officer to say exactly how long he will take to get his guns into position, so, if he and the squadron leader settle the 'zero' time by their watches, the M.G. officer may find he has allowed either too little or too much time. It is often simpler (when the machine-guns have the furthest to go) for the squadron leader to say to the M.G. officer: 'As soon as you are in position, start your guns firing, and I'll take that as a signal to begin my attack.' Thus no time is wasted, and the M.G. officer can place his guns in the best possible site, take his ranges, &c., without having to glance nervously at his watch the whole time.

(*f*) The Nos. 1 of the guns must have wooden rattles to represent the sound of firing. Failing these, large tins with



Digitized by Google

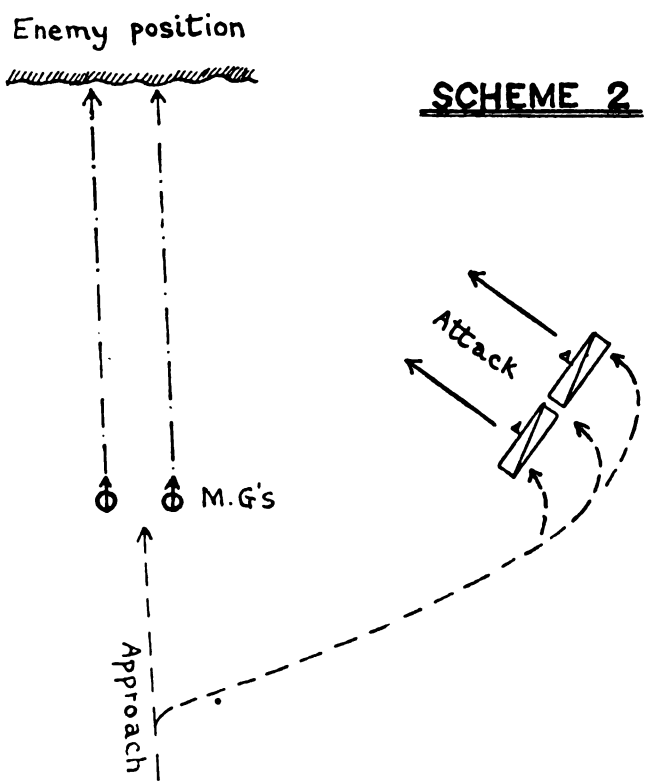
pebbles inside are useful. The waving of flags to denote machine guns firing is very unrealistic, and discloses the gun position in a way that would not be possible in 'the real thing.'

(*g*) If the attack succeeds, the machine guns at once come forward, join the squadron, and help to consolidate.

(*h*) If it fails, the machine guns stay where they are, ready to cover the squadron's withdrawal or meet a counter-attack.

(i) In all these movements the M.G. officer decides whether he can move his teams with :—(1) Men and guns all mounted; (2) Men on foot, but guns, &c., on pack-horses; (3) Men on foot carrying their guns, &c. (It may be noted that the possibilities of (2) are often overlooked.)

Scheme 2.—This is a variation of the first scheme, in that the nature of the ground makes it better to deliver the assault



Digitized by Google

from a flank, whilst the machine guns support with covering fire from the front. In this case the squadron would take the longest to get into position, so the squadron leader would arrange to give some special signal, say a Very light, to show when he was ready.

Scheme 3.—A similar attack, but with the machine guns shooting directly over the heads of the attackers—this, of course, is only possible in undulating country, where the guns can be placed on rising ground behind the jumping-off line of the attack.

Scheme 4.—An attack in a flat, enclosed country, where, owing to hedges, buildings, &c., the machine guns cannot find an opportunity of delivering covering fire from a flank.

In this case they would either follow behind the attacking line (either carrying their guns or leading them on pack), or they might be told to take up a defensive position in case the attack failed and had to fall back through them.

A point often brought out in 'attack' schemes is, whether Vickers guns should work together or be used separately. A squadron leader is tempted, perhaps, to send one gun on ahead with his front troop or troops, and keep the other in support. The chief reasons for keeping machine guns in pairs are :—

(*a*) There is only one officer per two guns, so if one gun is sent off without him, it loses the benefit of his supervision.

(*b*) There is only one range-finding instrument per section, so the detached gun loses the benefit of that too.

(*c*) If a pair of guns is given a definite task and one gun breaks down, or is put out of action, the remaining gun can carry on with the task to a large extent.

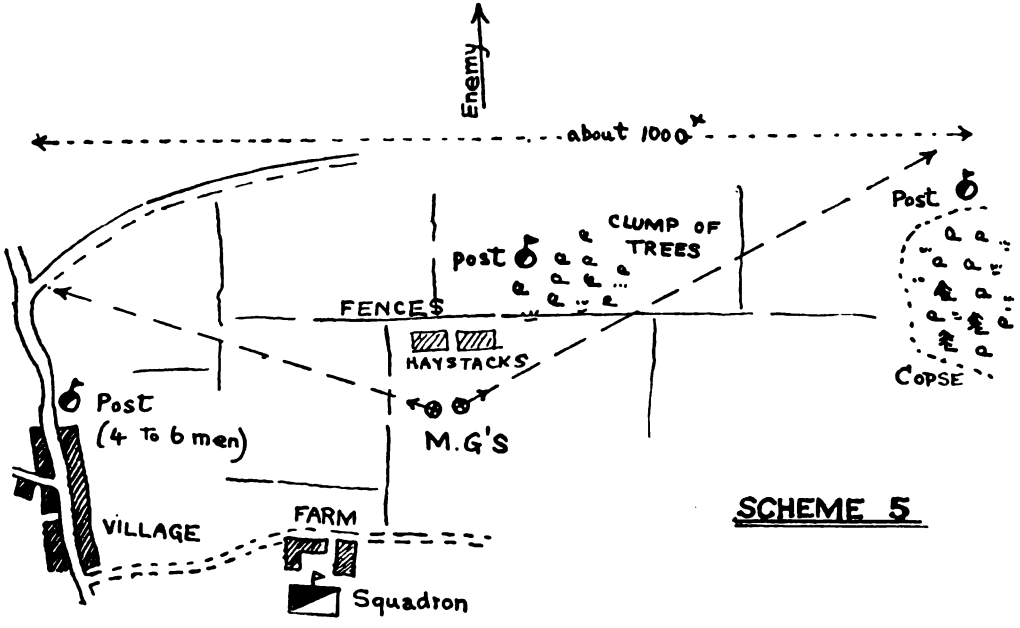
If schemes such as the above are carried out with four or more guns, it is very desirable to group them all together under a single control. Each can then be allotted a definite part of the target, orders can reach them quicker, and altogether their co-operation with the assaulting troops is far more

Digitized by Google

effective than if the sections were separately controlled. In this connection it should be remembered that Hotchkiss guns might with advantage be grouped with Vickers for covering fire; the former weapons, having the benefit of the range-finder, would become much more accurate, and might do more damage in some situations than if left with their troops.

Scheme 5.—Shows a simple exercise where a squadron, with two machine guns attached, takes up a defensive position in open country.

In this case the front allotted to the squadron is about 1,000 yards, from the copse on the right (inclusive) to the village on the left (exclusive). The machine guns, as will be seen, are placed roughly in the centre of the defensive front—it is assumed that they each have a clear field of fire of 400 to 600 yards, and they are, of course, arranged so as to shoot obliquely across the line to be held. This central position for the guns is better than placing them one at either end



of the line shooting inwards, because (*a*) they are both under their own officer; (*b*) they both get the use of the range-finder;

Digitized by Google

(*c*) the supplying of ammunition is easier; (*d*) if the enemy attacks only one end of the line, he can be engaged by both guns.

This scheme is supposed to apply to daylight only; I think most M.G. officers would agree with me that it is unsound to place the guns in such a position at night; in fact, it is questionable whether it is sound to put them in any night outpost line at all. This was realised during the latter part of the late War, where, in places where the front line consisted of detached posts, the Vickers guns were placed entirely in the second or main defensive line. It must never be forgotten that the reason a Vickers gun is so valuable in defence, is its power to place a belt of fire across several hundred yards of ground; once it cannot *see* to do this, much of its value is gone. The success of the German attack of March 21, 1918, against our Fifth Army, was very largely due to the fog, which robbed our machine guns of their cross-fire effect, and enabled the enemy to get in between them; whilst the German attack at Arras on March 28 was completely repulsed because the weather was clear and the machine guns could see to shoot.

We must remember, too, that the Vickers guns of a cavalry regiment are its most powerful weapon; therefore it is unwise to risk their efficiency by depriving even a few of the men of their night's rest. If a machine gun *is* placed in position at night, it should be manned by three men only, of whom one acts as sentry at a time, whilst the other two sleep close by.

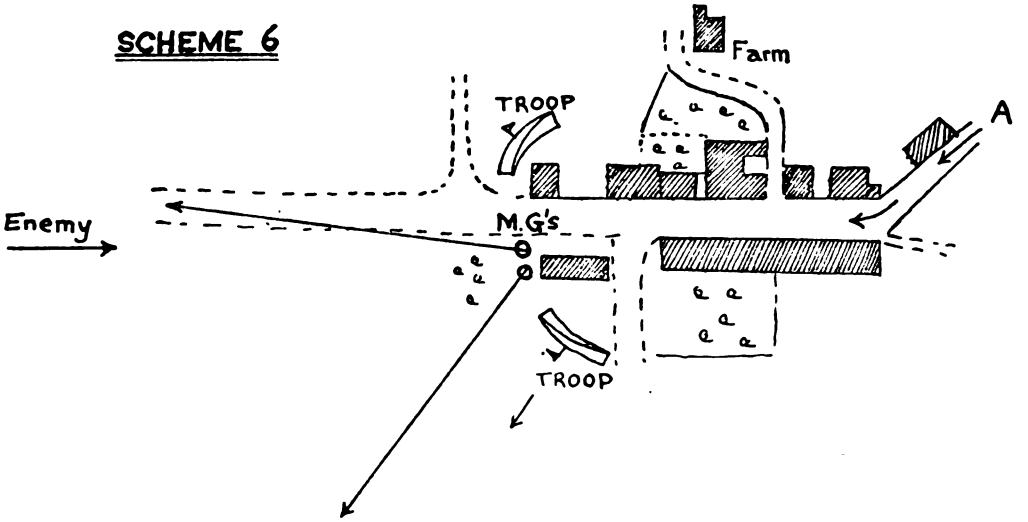
In *Scheme* 6 we have the defence of a village by a squadron and machine guns.

The latter take up a position with one gun covering the road and the other the country to the left. In order to practise taking up such a position quickly, the scheme could be arranged so that 'our' troops are entering the village from A, when the enemy is reported a mile or so in front.

This exercise brings out an important point—that when a machine gun is guarding a road it must be placed so that

Digitized by Google

the enemy are still under its fire when they get off the road. This is by no means easy in an enclosed country, but sometimes another Vickers or Hotchkiss gun can be posted so as to engage the hostile troops as they are driven off the road by the fire of the first gun.



There are several other questions which crop up in connection with field work, and may be discussed shortly.

Ammunition Supply.—During the War each Cavalry Vickers gun (when moving on pack) had 3,000 rounds S.A.A. (twelve belts, six on each ammunition pack-horse), and this was found ample for all open fighting. In fact on many occasions it was found sufficient if one ammunition pack (1,500 rounds) accompanied the gun to the actual firing point. But if the firing line becomes stabilised and a day or two of semi-trench warfare sets in, the senior M.G. officer should arrange to keep a supply of S.A.A. in limbers at some convenient point, such as Regimental or Brigade Headquarters; if some of this S.A.A. is ready filled in belts, so much the better. Every M.G. officer and N.C.O. in the firing line must know where the senior M.G. officer is, so that they can send him a message when they want more ammunition; he then sends a limber to a selected point, where the men meet it and draw what they

Digitized by Google

want. This arrangement is much better than *dumping* ammunition behind the line and then having to collect it all in the event of a sudden move.

I recollect an ammunition incident, which might have been serious, in the April, 1918, fighting near Amiens. Our brigade went into action mounted, the horses were sent back, and the line then became more or less stable—'semi-trench' warfare, in fact. I had detailed several machine-gun sections to act with the different regiments, whilst I myself, with some reserve guns, stopped at Brigade H.Q., where I arranged for a limber to be in readiness with spare belts in case of need. Unfortunately, however, I soon found I had no idea where any of the guns in the firing line had got to! The Brigade, dismounted and dug into small makeshift trenches, was strung out over a mile or more of bare fields, which were impossible to walk over without being shot at. After a precarious search among various front-line parties (several of whom told me to 'get down or go away') I had to return to Brigade Headquarters more frightened, but no wiser, than when I started out. It turned out afterwards that, luckily, none of the sections in the line ran short of ammunition; but the section officers were rather to blame for not having let me know their position by messages, which they could easily have sent back by one of the runners from the regiment they were acting with.

Escort to M.G.s.—It is always a vexed question if any, or how many, men from the squadron or regiment should be allotted to a machine-gun section as protection, ammunition carriers, messengers, etc., under different circumstances. I always noticed that machine-gun officers differed very much as to the number of men necessary to serve a pair of guns; some officers had a somewhat exaggerated idea of the correct strength of a team, which led to the big machine-gun establishments we had in the Cavalry in France. Personally I should say that, if a machine-gun officer has six men per

Digitized by Google

gun (excluding packmen), he ought to be independent of outside ' assistance, except, perhaps, if he is sent off ' into the blue,' *i.e.*, entirely responsible for his own protection; and regiments should not put machine-guns in that position if they can possibly help it. As to borrowing men for carriers, this was often due, during the war, to machine-gun sections leaving their packhorses behind when they left their riding horses; instead of following the Infantry practice of leading the pack animals by hand to the furthest possible point.

Digging in.—In open fighting there will rarely be time to make a proper machine-gun emplacement with head-cover; a good form of ' hasty ' emplacement is a circular hole, 6 ft. across by 3 ft. deep; this is the smallest that will hold a gun and two men properly.

Rate of Fire.—We learnt from the Boche that a *slow* rate of fire is just as effective as a fast rate, and of course much more economical of ammunition. A Vickers gun should be ' tuned ' to shoot slowly, and yet not so slowly as to risk a stoppage; this wants a certain amount of practice on the range. It is curious that the rate of fire is not mentioned at all in Chap. VI. of ' Machine Gun Training.'

Indirect Fire is so fully dealt with in ' Machine Gun Training ' that I need not touch upon it here.

Since the October notes on the ' technical ' side of machine-gun training were written, the question has been raised as to the best method of carrying the ' spare parts case '—whether on the gun-pack or on the man (No. 2). At first sight the latter way seems the best, because when dismounting for action, No. 2 does not have to think about bringing the case with him—it is already slung round him. But should No. 2 or his horse become a casualty, there is a grave danger of the gun arriving at the firing-point minus its spare parts. I remember an occasion where a No. 2 fell out with a lame horse on a night march: he had the spare parts case on him, and did not rejoin us for an hour or more, so that if we had

Digitized by Google

suddenly gone into action, the gun would have been without its spare parts.

My opinion is that the spare parts case should *never* be separated from the gun, but should be carried on the gun-pack, slung round the gun itself, in such a way that it must be taken off before the gun is taken off. On arriving at the dismounting point, No. 2 runs to the gun-pack, slings the spare parts case round his neck, and then unhitches the gun in the ordinary way.

* * * *

The undoubted superiority of the Vickers over other forms of machine gun, leads one to consider whether it would not be possible to substitute a lighter pattern of Vickers for the Hotchkiss and Lewis guns now used in our Cavalry and Infantry. (By a 'lighter pattern' I mean a Vickers gun with a smaller barrel casing, a slightly shorter barrel, and a small auxiliary tripod permanently fixed to the gun). Such a suggestion may raise a storm of protest from Hotchkiss and Lewis enthusiasts, but I would ask them to consider the following points:

1. The adoption of one design of machine gun throughout the Army would simplify training enormously.

2. It would also greatly simplify production in the event of a future war. (It should be noted that, like the German heavy and light M.G.s, the proposed light Vickers would have exactly the same mechanism as the larger gun, the feedblock, lock, etc., being interchangeable.)

3. Assuming that one form of gun is preferable to three, the advantages claimed for the Vickers over the other two are:

(*a*) Its working parts are more 'boxed in' and it is less liable to stoppages.

(*b*) Being water-cooled it can keep up its fire longer.

(*c*) Its ammunition belts are far less liable to damage than either Hotchkiss strips or Lewis drums.

Digitized by Google

4. A light Vickers could be made little, if any, heavier than the other two guns.

5. Its tactical handling, and the men and horses required for it, would be the same as for the present light guns.

I venture to think the cost of introducing light Vickers guns would be very slight. There must have been hundreds of ordinary Vickers guns, spare parts, auxiliary tripods, etc., handed in after the War, and to convert these to light guns it would only be necessary to cut a few inches off the barrels and fit a smaller barrel casing, which surely could not be a costly process. Further, there would be no objection to carrying out the change gradually, a few regiments and battalions being armed with the new guns each year. As each unit was so armed, its training would at once become simpler.

* * * *

To sum up: these few ideas and suggestions certainly do not cover the whole field of Cavalry machine-gun training, nor are they necessarily the best even though based on war experiences. It is to be hoped that other officers will criticise and give their views, and so help regiments to improve their knowledge of what is surely the finest weapon ever issued to British or any other Cavalry.

Digitized by Google

THE SWORD

By MAJOR C. VAN DER BYL (late 16th Lancers).

Although we cannot agree that the 'sword of to-day is a freak weapon,' the utility of its point having been proved (literally as well as figuratively) up to the hilt in the late war, we publish Major van der Byl's article as it shows what can be done with a cutting sword.—EDITOR.

THE article on swordsmanship in the October number of the CAVALRY JOURNAL by R. S. M. T. Elliott is extremely interesting, and the present writer, who has many times had the pleasure of competing with him in the Military Tournament, entirely agrees with what he says.

The sword of to-day is, unfortunately, a freak weapon. It has an edge on it that will not cut, and the hilt is so fashioned that it would be necessary to have it made in several sizes to suit different hands. The old sword of twenty years ago had a good blade. It is true that it was badly balanced; and the grip was wicked, being made far too rough, and of leather, which became greasy and slipped round in the hand. Had these old blades been re-hilted and properly balanced they would have been far more serviceable weapons than the present sword.

For a sword to cut it is necessary that it be really sharp —that is, sharp enough to cut a folded sheet of notepaper in half without tearing it when stood upright on a table. If it is to cut through a heavy substance it must have weight, which means width of blade. A curved blade assists cutting, but is by no means essential—if curved too much it is difficult to use the point. Some people imagine that to cut effectively demands a great deal of skill and that it is necessary to give the blade a kind of drawing motion as the cut is made. This is a fallacy: a really hard hit or slash *with the edge leading* is all that is required provided that the sword is sharp.

As an example of the use of the cutting edge on actual service I quote from an old book called 'Cavalry: its History

Digitized by Google

and Tactics,' by Captain L. E. Nolan, 15th Hussars, published in 1853. The following is quoted from pages 105–108 :—

'When I was in India an engagement between a party of the Nizam's irregular horse and a numerous body of insurgents took place, in which the horsemen, though greatly inferior in numbers, defeated the Rohillas with great slaughter. My attention was drawn particularly to the fight by the doctor's report of the killed and wounded, most of whom had suffered by the sword, and in the column of remarks such entries as the following were numerous :—

'" Arm cut off from the shoulder.'

" Head severed.'

" Both hands cut off (apparently at one blow) above the wrists, in holding up the arms to protect the head."

" Leg cut off above the knee," etc., etc.

I was astounded. Were these men giants, to lop off limbs thus wholesale; or was this result to be attributed (as I was told) to the sharp edge of the native blade and the peculiar way of drawing it? I became anxious to see these horsemen of the Nizam, to examine their wonderful blades, and learn the knack of lopping off men's limbs.

'Opportunity soon offered, for the Commander-in-Chief went to Hyderabad on a tour of inspection, on which I accompanied him. After passing the Kistna River a squadron of these very horsemen joined the camp as part of the escort.

'And now fancy my astonishment!

'The sword-blades they had were chiefly old Dragoon blades cast from our Service. The men had mounted them after their own fashion. The hilt and handle, both of metal, small in the grip, rather flat—not round, like ours, where the edge seldom falls true; they all had an edge like a razor from heel to point, were worn in wooden scabbards, a short single sling held them to the waist-belt, from which a strap passed through the hilt to a button in front, to keep the sword steady and prevent it flying out of the scabbard.

Digitized by Google

'An old trooper of the Nizam's told me the old broad English blades were in great favour with them when mounted and kept as above described; but as we wore them they were good for nothing in *their* hands.

'I said, "How do you strike with your swords to cut off men's limbs?"

'"Strike hard, sir," said the old trooper.

'"Yes, of course; but how do you teach the men to use their swords in that particular way?" (drawing it).

'"We never teach them any way, sir; a sharp sword will cut in anyone's hand."

'Had our men worn arms like these in the last Sikh war the enemy's horsemen would not have met them with such confidence in single combat; their trenchant blades would have inspired respect—the use of them would have carried terror into the ranks of the foe.

'It is well known that, beyond the effect of the moment, severe wounds inflicted in action have a depressing moral effect on the enemy.

'In a pamphlet published in Berlin on Cavalry matters it is stated that in 1812 the wounds inflicted by the Russian horsemen inspired *such awe* that nothing but the point of honour and *esprit de corps* could bring the Prussian horse to close with them.

'Captain Fitzgerald, of the 14th Dragoons, received a sword wound at Ramnugger, from the effects of which he died. A Sikh, on foot, crouched under a shield, cut at him from behind. The sword exposed the spinal marrow, entering the skull at the same time.

'A huge dragoon of the regiment was found quite dead: his head had dropped forward from a cut on the back of the neck, which had severed the spine; and at this very action "it is said" that whilst our poor fellows laboured in vain to draw blood, a touch from the Sikhs' sword across the arm or leg left the bold Englishmen at their mercy and they soon hacked them to pieces.'

Digitized by Google

NEW ZEALAND MOUNTED RIFLES

NEW ZEALAND is divided into three Commands—Auckland or Northern, Wellington or Central, and South Island or Southern. Each Command provides one Brigade of three regiments of Mounted Rifles. They form part of the Territorial Force and are liable for service in New Zealand only, but individual members may volunteer for service abroad. The following notes show the difficulties in the way of training and the admirable patriotic spirit in which they are overcome:

NOTES ON A TRAINING CAMP HELD BY TWO SQUADRONS OF THE 3RD MOUNTED RIFLES AT WAIUKU, APRIL 21, 1923.

Owing to the need for economy no training camps have been held since the War and this has made the training of scattered country units very difficult, for the value of Territorial training before the War undoubtedly lay—in so far as Mounted Rifles were concerned—in the Annual Regimental Camp. But in some districts, where training centres are far apart, Troops or Squadrons have voluntarily come into camp for a period of a few days.

This year the two country Squadrons of the 3rd M.R (whose headquarters are in the City of Auckland) decided to hold a camp at Waiuku, the Squadron Headquarters of "C" Squadron. The headquarters of "B" Squadron are at Clevedon, 30 miles from Waiuku, and many members of the Squadron had a 35-mile ride to attend camp.

The Defence Department supplied tents and camp equipment, all other expenses being found by the officers and men, each of whom, on arrival in camp, paid in 30*s.* to the camp

Digitized by Google

fund. Out of the fund so established and with the help of donations of fruit, vegetables, etc., from the residents of Waiuku, and from revenue obtained from admission to the Squadron ball and sports, all camp expenses were paid.

The weather was wet for the first few days, giving little opportunity for anything but dismounted drill under cover in the township of Waiuku; but as the weather improved the O.C. camp kept the men hard at work on horseback all day with Troop and Squadron drill, and elementary tactical exercises.

On the evening of the last day in camp the Waiuku Squadron Ball was held and, being considered *the* ball of the season, a large number of people from the surrounding district attended.

On Saturday, the last day in camp, the sports were held, and a copy of the programme of mounted events is subjoined.

The outstanding feature of the Sports was the splendid horsemanship and capital jumping of all contestants. Throughout a long programme, which included seven jumping events and in which some 100 competitors took part, there was not a single accident, no case of a horse falling at a jump, and only two horses 'ran off.' The riding of the competitors was free and dashing, and the times over the jumps, especially in the Lloyd Lindsay competitions, were very good. The horses were of a fine stamp and in very good condition, and among them were a number of well-known thoroughbreds. In the open events, in addition to the teams from the two squadrons in camp, there were teams of returned soldiers (ex-members of the Regiment) and a team of cadets.

The camp and all its arrangements were under Major M. Aldred, an enthusiastic Territorial officer who saw service with his regiment in Sinai and Palestine, and he was most ably backed up by a committee composed of serving Territorials and ex-members of the Waiuku Squadron, which is a descendant of the old Waiuku Cavalry, formed during the Maori War as a volunteer squadron.

Digitized by Google

Waiuku was the centre of a very disturbed district in those days, and the sons and grandsons now serving in our Territorial Forces are mostly representatives of those old fighting volunteers.

Major Aldred had with him as instructional staff one officer (the Adjutant of the Regiment) and two warrant officers, all from the permanent force.

MILITARY TOURNAMENT, APRIL 28, 1923.

HELD AT WAIUKU BY 'B' AND 'C' SQUADRONS, 3RD M.R.

List of Mounted Events.

1. *Flag Race.*—Open. Competitors to ride 50 yards, dismount, pick up flag, mount and ride back across line, dismount, drop flag in box, remount and repeat till the fourth flag is placed in box.

2. *Snatching handkerchief placed on the ground.*—Open. Points on time and number of handkerchiefs gathered.

3. *Lloyd Lindsay.*—Territorials only. Teams of four to ride over two flights of hurdles, dismount at given point and fire three rounds blank; horses to be retired to flag and brought up on signal, mount and ride over one flight of hurdles to winning-post. Points to be given for time, jumping, dressing, mounting, dismounting, control of led horses and words of command.

4. *Leading Race.*—Open. Competitors to ride given course (three hurdles) leading one horse. No horse to be ridden or led twice in this event.

5. *Tent-pegging in Sections.*—Open. Ride over given course, and take pegs as placed by judges. Points: three for a carry, two for a draw, and one for a strike and also for style.

6. *Victoria Cross Race.*—Territorials only. Competitors to ride over two flights of hurdles, dismount and pick up dummy, and ride over one flight of hurdles to winning-post. Dummy to be carried astride in front of competitor. Points on time and carrying of dummy.

7. *Lloyd Lindsay.*—Open. Conditions as in third event.

8. *Cigar Race.*—Open. Competitors to ride over given course, dismount at given point and light cigar. First competitor to winning-post with cigar alight to win.

9. *Musical Chairs on Horseback.*—Open.

10. *Victoria Cross.*—Open. Conditions as in No. 6.

11. *Whistling Race.*—Open. Competitors to ride given course, dismount and lead horse to lady and whistle tune to be supplied; lady to write tune on card and give to competitor, who will lead horse back to dismounting point, mount and ride to winning-post.

Digitized by Google

12. *Eloping Race.*—Open. Competitors to ride and lead horse to given point, dismount and lead horse to lady, assist her to mount lead horse, and ride to winning-post together. Gentleman to have leading rein on lady's mount.

13. *Wrestling on Horseback.*—(*a*) 'B' *v.* 'C' Squadron; (*b*) Territorials against all-comers. Teams of six a side. Conditions: time limit, five minutes. Teams having most men mounted when time is called to win. A competitor touching ground or going outside boundary line to be disqualified. No boots to be worn.

14. *Tug-of-war on Horseback.*—(*a*) 'B' *v.* 'C' Squadrons; (*b*) Territorials *v.* all-comers. Teams of six a side. Conditions: competitors must be mounted bareback. No boots to be worn. No loop to be made in rope. Any man touching the ground to be disqualified. Time limit, eight minutes.

Conditions.

1. The ruling of the judges to be final.

2. No practice over jumps allowed on day of sports.

3. Competitors must move up to the starting-point on warning sounding. A competitor or team late will be disqualified.

4. Entries close on Wednesday before sports and will be taken by the Secretary, and fees must be paid on nomination.

Cash prizes were given in all events.

Digitized by Google

PROBLEM XV.

Issued with October JOURNAL, 1923

RESULT

SEVEN solutions were received; of these, five came from competitors serving overseas.

The best solution was received from Lt. W. H. Gardiner, 7th Light Cavalry Tank, Waziristan, N.W.F. Province.

The problem set was based upon operations actually carried out by a German Squadron in August, 1914, and was intended to bring out the principles of leading a reconnoitring squadron despatched upon an independent mission.

FIRST PROBLEM.

The first problem asked for (i) preliminary instructions to troop leaders and (2) a plan of campaign.

(1) As regards the former, it is considered that the following points should have been brought out:

(*a*) A ' warning order ' detailing the time of march, an immediate meal for all ranks before starting, a close inspection of horses and equipment before starting.

(*b*) Rations and transport. Explicit instructions must be issued. You must calculate on being absent 48 hours at least. You can probably live on the country, but it is not safe to presume too much upon this. It would be reasonable to order every man to carry two iron rations and 16 lbs. of corn per horse. Transport should be left behind, as on a mission of this kind wheels are a distinct handicap to mobility.

(*c*) The general plan of campaign would be explained.

(*d*) Particular emphasis should have been laid upon marking maps so that all should have a record of their route and objectives.

(*e*) Troop leaders should be told exactly what they are expected to do when they meet the enemy and how to deal with inhabitants.

(*f*) Executive orders would then have been given for the protection of the squadron on the march.

Digitized by Google

(2) *The plan of campaign.*

This involved (*a*) An approach march; (*b*) Search for information.

(*a*) The object of the approach march was to reach a 'jumping off place' with a minimum of interference by the enemy or inhabitants.

Most competitors recognised this, but it is hardly feasible, except in a country like Salisbury Plain, to move over 20 miles across country avoiding at the same time all roads and villages. All that can be hoped is to avoid dangerous areas and to mislead. In a densely inhabited hostile country complete concealment is impossible. Consequently as inhabitants and even hostile patrols were almost certain to be encountered, it was of the utmost importance to deceive them (*a*) as to the direction of your march; (*b*) by false information.

As you must move quickly, you must keep your detachment concentrated and deal quickly and decisively with any minor opposition. Some competitors elected to move in line of troop columns protected by patrols on a wide front. This would hardly have been feasible, and until definite opposition was located it would have been more reasonable for the squadron to move in 'column of route.'

A most important principle for an independent detachment is that it should change its position after dark before selecting its resting place for the night.

(*b*) A reconnoitring detachment such as a squadron obtains its information by means of small patrols, who are despatched after arrival at the 'jumping off place' and who are given definite areas to search. The *rôle* of the squadron main body is (i) to act as a haven for these patrols; (ii) to support them if force is required; (iii) to transmit the information obtained by them.

In this problem the object was to find out what the enemy were doing south and west of Tirlemont. There was no object in sending out patrols until the squadron had reached its 'jumping off place' somewhere south of Tirlemont, as in a hostile country patrols without support could only have moved very slowly. Having arrived at this place, patrols should have been despatched north towards Tirlemont and west over the Grand Gette River. The squadron meanwhile would have remained concealed, ready to receive messages and, if necessary, support its patrols.

Most competitors ignored the importance of reconnaissance to the west, *i.e.*, towards Brussels.

Before starting it would have been essential to arrange details for wireless communication with headquarters. This would have involved times for calling up and code.

SECOND PROBLEM.

The second problem gave definite situation, and asked for a definite solution by the squadron leader.

Hostile opposition (entrenched infantry) had been located on the Tirlemont-Huy road south of Tirlemont, hostile troops were seen moving north along this

Digitized by Google

road and a motor-car carrying a general officer was sighted within easy range.

The situation was a tempting one, no doubt the impulse of every soldier would have been to attack and throw the enemy into confusion. A General in the bag would have been a great *coup.*

A moment's reflection, however, would have reminded our leader that his mission was only half fulfilled. The information which he had obtained was extremely valuable but he has not completed his mission. It was most important to get further information regarding the hostile dispositions S. and W. of Tirlemont.

He might have obtained a local success by an immediate attack but as he was in close proximity to large enemy forces, the country would have been raised against him, and, instead of being able to pursue his reconnaissance at leisure, he would have been compelled to immediate retreat and probably been forced to fight his way out.

His best course would have been to lie low, to keep the enemy under observation, and by sending out further patrols to procure more detailed information. If his patrols fail to get information he is still in a position to fight for it.

It cannot be too much emphasised that the first duty of a reconnoitring detachment is to procure information.

Fighting is of secondary importance and should only be resorted to when other means fail.

Digitized by Google

DOMINION AND FOREIGN MAGAZINES

THE question of increasing the mobility of a division by making use of motor transport has been carefully studied during the past year both in France and Italy, and considerable attention has been given to the co-operation between cavalry, tanks and infantry in lorries or cross-country tractors.

An article summarising the experiments carried out and the conclusions drawn will appear in the CAVALRY JOURNAL for April.

The *Revue Militaire Française* of August contains an article by Colonel Chedeville on the use of smoke on the battlefield. The French possess two forms of smoke-generators, the 'engine Berger,' which weighs 40 kilogrammes, producing smoke by heat, and the 'engine Verdier,' in which a cold smoke of chemical composition is compressed in cylinders weighing 45, 80 or 120 kilogrammes.

In the former case, when once the smoke-production has been commenced it cannot be controlled, but in the latter it can be turned off at any minute.

Each of these generators can produce a cloud 50–100 metres wide, the depth depending on the length of time the machine is in action and the wind velocity, but not exceeding 1,500 metres. The height of the cloud varies from 30 to 50 metres, according to the humidity of the atmosphere.

To cover a surface area of 16 square kilometres for two to two and a half hours would require about six tons of smoke-producing material, which could be carried in two lorries.

Digitized by Google

The author advocates the use of smoke shells in the attack to screen enemy points of resistance and rightly emphasises the fact that the proportion of artillery at the beginning of a campaign will never be sufficient to entirely neutralise the enemy's fire units. He considers that the British Air Force is far ahead of the French in the use of smoke bombs in co-operation with an infantry attack.

In the *Revue de Cavalerie* Colonel Daubert makes some interesting suggestions as to the co-operation of Air Craft with Cavalry. He is of opinion that aeroplanes should form an integral part of a Cavalry Division and that a special type of aeroplane is necessary for co-operation with Cavalry. The cavalry aeroplane should be light, handy, stable, and capable of landing anywhere, so that verbal orders could be given and personal reports received by the Cavalry Commander.

Such aeroplanes would become the normal means of communication between widely separated cavalry units and between cavalry and Army Headquarters and would co-operate along with the Cavalry both in reconnaissance on the battlefield and in pursuit.

The *American Cavalry Journal* for October contains an interesting article by Captain Edward M. Fichett, entitled 'A Study of the Relationship between Cavalry and the Air Service in Reconnaissance.' Considering strategical and tactical reconnaissance separately, the author gives in tabular form a list of 'missions' and shows which service is, in his opinion, best equipped to perform each and the reason for his preference.

'A British Dragoon in the American Revolution,' by Major-General William H. Carter, published in the same number, gives a spirited account of the achievements of Lieut.-Colonel Barnastre Tarleton, who began his service as

Digitized by Google

a Cornet in the King's Dragoon Guards, and made his name as a cavalry leader between 1776 and 1781. In his personal gallantry, his dashing manœuvres, his quick grasp of a situation and his success, he was the prototype of Ashby as a Cavalry Leader, and the true story of his work is as stirring as Conan Doyle's stories of the imaginary Brigadier Gerard.

The August number of *The Outpost*, the B.S.A. Police quarterly magazine, has some wonderful photographs of big game in Africa, taken with a telescopic camera.

'A Hunter's Observations,' reprinted from No. 41 of the CAVALRY JOURNAL, and there are some reminiscences by J.A. of the late Colonel Flint, at one time Commissioner. He relates that he made a man a sergeant for drinking ten glasses of beer one after the other—a subject, by the way, not included in the present examination for promotion. He was 'a great swordsman and could cut an apple in half at a gallop. The honour of holding the apple on outstretched hand, if not keenly sought for, was a sure road to promotion.'

A trooper cleaning his saddle one day looked up and remarked quietly, 'think of a *numdah*, and halve it.' A civilian asked him if he knew Canon Arnott, of Beckenham, and the Canon happened to be his father; but the only reply he vouchsafed the enquiring stranger was, 'Yes, rather; well, in fact, he often calls me by my christian name!'

Digitized by Google

NOTES

We have received a letter from Captain Whittick, 7th Light Cavalry, Indian Army, criticising 'Yeoboy's' article on Machine Gun Troop Drill published in the October number of the Cavalry Journal.

Lack of space prohibits our publishing the letter in full, but it appears that a General Staff pamphlet has been circulated in India laying down a drill in which the packs follow the gun numbers.

Captain Whittick stresses the importance of having the gun commanders near the troop leader, but 'Yeoboy' considers this is neither necessary nor desirable.

The whole question of machine gun troop drill is now under the consideration of the General Staff at the War Office and a decision on this and other points may be expected shortly.

Cavalry War Memorial

A committee meeting was held at the Cavalry Club on November 20 at which the final details of the memorial were discussed. The memorial is nearing completion. The plaster cast of the statue of St. George, which has been on view at Captain Adrian Jones's studio for some weeks, has now gone to the foundry. The roll of units, which is to be headed 'Cavalry of the Empire,' contains the names of over 150 regiments, nearly all of which have sent subscriptions towards the cost of the memorial. The subscriptions received to date amount to over £11,000. Regiments which have not already subscribed can still do so. Cheques should be made payable to the Secretary, Cavalry Club. The memorial will, it is hoped, be unveiled on St. George's day, April 23, 1924.

Digitized by Google

Lost

The old Caricature Book of the Cavalry School was removed from Netheravon during the War, probably whilst the buildings were used as a Cadet School.

The Commandant of the Equitation School, Weedon, would be much obliged if any one who has any idea of the whereabouts of this book would be so kind as to communicate with him.

Price of Journal

The net sales of the Journal have now again reached over 1,000 copies; if the number of the subscribers were to reach 1,500 it would probably be possible to reduce the price.

Digitized by Google

RECENT PUBLICATIONS

'Pig-sticking or Hog-hunting: A Complete Account for Sportsmen and Others.' By Sir Robert Baden-Powell, Bart. London: Herbert Jenkins, Ltd., 3, York Street, St. James's. (Price 15*s*.)

No sport has been less written about than Pig-sticking, there being practically no other standard work on the subject, and it is therefore with the greatest pleasure that we welcome General Baden-Powell's latest production.

Sir Robert is one of the few soldiers who can wield both 'sword' and 'pen' with equal skill; and we might also add the 'pencil,' as one of the principal attractions of the volume are the author's own sketches, so well reproduced.

The author says, in the opening chapter, that he is 'somewhat diffident about writing of a sport in which he has not taken part for over thirty years'; but as he informs us later that pig-sticking was a favourite sport with the Greeks and Romans, and has held its position in Eastern countries ever since, thirty years are but as yesterday, and the hunting of the pig is a sport less liable to change than any other.

With the statement that you can 'buy horses in India at a more reasonable price than at home' we are inclined to disagree. This certainly was the case thirty years ago, but it is not so to-day. However, where there is a will there is a way; and although one cannot really enjoy either foxhunting or pig-sticking on a bad horse, the poor man can always manage to raise a suitable mount at a reasonable figure.

Those who are looking forward to a career in India will find this book full of useful hints and information, and those

Digitized by Google

whose Indian days are over will conjure up from every page recollections of the happy time spent in the East.

Pig-sticking has one great asset over all other sports, namely, that 'blank' days are almost unknown. The climate is nearly always perfect for those who can stand a certain amount of heat, and every day spent in the jungle in pursuit of the pig is enjoyed from start to finish.

We strongly recommend our readers to add this book to their library.

'German Strategy in the Great War.' By Lieut.-Colonel Philip Neame. London: Edward Arnold & Co.

ALTHOUGH this book is divided into fifteen chapters, with appendices, it is very concise and clear. Primarily written for study by soldiers, it is none the less extremely interesting for, and easily understood by, civilians.

Lieut.-Colonel Neame's studies of the characters of the German leaders are especially interesting, as these are, perhaps naturally, less well known than the German plans and the events of the Great War.

The Germans had forty years to prepare their plans and made good ones, but then failed in the nerve and determination to carry them out.

When it came to improvising strategical plans quickly, owing to unforeseen tactical results, Colonel Neame makes it clear that Joffre and Foch were vastly superior, at the beginning and at the end of the War respectively, to any of the German Commanders, though ungrudging praise is bestowed on Ludendorf for his brilliant work in East Prussia, which resulted in the Tanneberg and Masurian Lakes battles.

Due attention is drawn throughout to the various factors—such as the *morale* of the armies, the use of railways and fortresses, and the service of information—which make or mar the strategist's plans.

The only points not stressed, which perhaps do not come

Digitized by Google

strictly under the heading of strategy, are the Prussians' conceit and bad psychology.

However bad strategists the Germans were, they were still worse psychologists, for nothing in their conduct of the war stiffened the Allies' resistance so much as the German campaign of frightfulness, which provided the exact spur required to make the Allies—especially the British—really put their backs into the work of winning the War.

The book is illustrated by a series of clear and simple maps, and the appendices show orders of battle and organisation of various armies.

J. V.

'Military Organisation and Administration.' By Major W. G. Lindsell, D.S.O., O.B.E., M.C., R.A., *p.s.c.* Aldershot: Gale and Polden, Ltd., Wellington Works. Price 7*s.* 6*d.*

THE book is well arranged and each chapter is self-contained, so that information on any point can be found at once. It not only contains all that is necessary for examination purposes, but gives many hints on interior economy which are valuable to all regimental officers.

'The German Cavalry, 1914, in Belgium and France.' By M. von Poseck, Lieutenant-General and Inspector of Cavalry. Translated into English. Edited by Major Jerome W. Howe, U.S. Cavalry. Berlin: published by E. S. Mittler und Sohn, for the United States Cavalry Association.

THIS account goes fully into every encounter in which the German cavalry took part, and includes copious personal narratives, many of them written in a bombastic style, which make the book tedious reading. British Cavalry officers who took part in the operations on the Western Front in 1914 will, however, find much of interest in the account. The book finishes up with a chapter of considerations and reflections

Digitized by Google

on the lessons to be drawn from the War which are worthy of attention.

The author is a firm believer in the value of Cavalry in future wars, and quotes Field-Marshal Earl Haig in support of his views; but warns Cavalry officers that the mounted arm can only retain its value if it adopts all modern appliances for battle, in order to enhance its tactical value.

Emphasis is laid on the fact that aerial reconnaissance is a useful complement of Cavalry reconnaissance, but cannot replace it. The German Cavalry appear to have discontinued, early in the War, the practice of sending out distant officer's patrols, owing to the frequent losses both of patrols and reconnaissance squadrons; the experiences of the campaign indicated the value of sending out very strong reconnaissance detachments, provided with single guns, machine guns and cyclists, instead of reconnaissance squadrons.

The account refers in several places in generous terms to the work of British Cavalry, *e.g.*, it speaks of 'the self-sacrificing intervention of the British Cavalry, especially the costly attack of the 2nd Cavalry Brigade under General de Lisle near Thulin . . .,' and again, referring to the operations about St. Quentin on August 28 and 29, it says, 'the English Cavalry covered, with remarkable gallantry, the English retreat.'

Readers of this book are not likely to agree with the author's claims as to the superiority of the German Cavalry over its adversaries in mounted combat. According to him, it was because the Allies realised this superiority that their mounted troops employed dismounted action against the German Cavalry, and so forced the latter to follow suit!

It is interesting to read that the Germans look on the engagement at Néry as a success for their arms.

T. T.

The original of this publication is referred to in an article 'Opposing Views of the Action of the French and German Cavalry in the Great War,' published in the CAVALRY JOURNAL, January, 1923.

Digitized by Google

SPORTING NOTES

Racing

The chief features of the past racing season have been, first, the success of H.M. The King; second, Mumtaz Mahal; third, the victories of French horses over here; and fourth, the farcical Papyrus–Zev match in America.

The success of the Egerton House horses has been very gratifying to the general public as the Royal horses have not done much in the last few years. The new manager must be congratulated. It was bad luck that the Manchester November Handicap could not be run, as the King's horse, London Cry, had a very good chance of winning it.

The Aga Khan's luck continues and in Mumtaz Mahal he produced the champion two-year old of the season. She was only beaten once and her defeat was put down to the very heavy going. Two-year-old mares very often go off their form the following season, but we hope she will prove an exception. The mare was bred by Lady Sykes.

In Epinard the French produced a very good horse and he was only just beaten for the Cambridgeshire, giving lumps of weight away. They had better luck in the Cesarewitch, winning that race with Rose Prince.

The less said about the Papyrus–Zev match the better.

We hear that Mr. Hubert Hartigan, on behalf of the Prince of Wales, has bought in Ireland the ten-year-old steeplechase horse, King's Garb by King's Proctor-Sefton's Garb. This horse has arrived in England to be trained and has been registered under the name of King's Guard. We hope he will turn out a second Ambush II. and win the Grand National for the Prince.

Hunting

We are afraid many people are in for a disastrous hunting season. Many hunts are idle owing to foot-and-mouth disease. In Cheshire it is so bad that some people think there will be no hunting the whole season. It is extraordinary how this disease is spreading all over England, and it is also prevalent in parts of Scotland. Our authorities insist that all the stock on an infected farm must be slaughtered; abroad, this is not done and many animals recover. We do not know which is the best, but our method costs the country a lot of money, as partial compensation is paid. We heard of one farmer who had put all his capital into a fine herd of pedigree cows. They all had to be killed, which so affected the farmer that he shot himself. It was bad luck to see a life's work swept away in a day!

Another difficulty and danger fox hunters have to put up with is the

Digitized by Google

extremely dangerous and slippery state of the roads. It is like jumping on to ice to jump on to the present roads. Motorists are responsible; the roads are made for their convenience and the poor horse is ignored. The Editor of the *Sporting and Dramatic* is trying to get up an agitation to have the roads made differently, especially in hunting countries. We are afraid he is up against a difficult proposition as there are far more motorists than fox hunters, and also the County Councils say the roads, as made now, last much longer. The Hunters Improvement and National Light Horse Breeding Society are also trying to do their best. They have sent out two letters to all County and District Rural Councils. They report as follows:

Conditions of the Roads.—The replies to the second letter personally signed by the President and sent to all County and District Rural Councils upon the slippery condition of the roads indicated that the moment selected for its issue has been most opportune. The local authorities appeared most fully to appreciate the vital importance of the matter to all users of horses and their valued co-operation was assured. Practical methods—and in the direction suggested by the Council of the Society—were being taken to lessen the danger to horses and live stock arising from slippery road surfaces.

This reads most hopeful. In the old days no one thought anything about jumping into a road; now it is asking for trouble.

We saw rather an interesting return the other day. We think it was in the *Field*. They had written round to all Hunts asking for the number of puppies that died from distemper while at walk. Many Hunts sent in the number, which in most cases was very large. One Hunt added that they had lost nine couple of puppies, the result of being run over by motors. We hope the latter will be more careful. The old cabby in London always looked on it as most unlucky to run over a dog, and very few were killed in that way. We also hope the fund being collected by the *Field* newspaper will soon enable a real cure for distemper to be discovered.

Register of Hunter Brood Mares.

This latter ought to be of interest to Cavalry Officers. It is a good scheme and can be recommended.

SCHEME TO INCREASE STOCK.

SIR,—With a view to encouraging farmers to breed light horses this Society has initiated a scheme whereby gift mares can be loaned to suitable custodians for breeding purposes. A register of mares suitable for breeding hunters has been opened in the Society's Offices at 12, Hanover Square, London, W.1, and district representatives have been appointed to control the scheme and to bring donors and custodians into direct communication.

The Society is anxious that no mare shall be shot which is likely to make a suitable brood mare; and on its behalf I would invite all owners who have no further use for their mares to give them to the Society, so that they may be placed out by the district representatives with responsible people willing to breed from them.

Yours, etc.

MILDMAY OF FLETE,
President Hunters' Improvement Society.

12, Hanover Square,
November 21, 1923.

Digitized by Google

Polo

We do not think a list of the winners of the Indian Regimental Polo Tournament has ever been published in the Cavalry Journal; here it is :—

PREVIOUS WINNERS.

Date.	Played at	Final tie between		Won by
1877	Meerut	9th Lancers	10th Hussars	9th Lancers
1878	Meerut	9th Lancers	10th Hussars	9th Lancers
1879 } 1880 }	No tournament on account of Afghan War.			
1881	Umballa	10th Hussars	Rifle Brigade	10th Hussars
1882	Meerut	10th Hussars	Rifle Brigade	10th Hussars
1883	Umballa	9th Lancers	Rifle Brigade	9th Lancers
1884	Umballa	9th Lancers	8th Hussars	9th Lancers
1885	Meerut	9th Lancers	8th Hussars	9th Lancers
1886	Meerut	8th Hussars	Carbineers	8th Hussars
1887	Umballa	8th Hussars	The Carbineers	8th Hussars
1888	Meerut	17th Lancers	7th Hussars.	17th Lancers
1889	Meerut	17th Lancers	7th Dragoon Gds.	17th Lancers
1890	Umballa	5th Lancers (1st Team)	17th Lancers	5th Lancers (1st Team)
1891	Umballa	7th Hussars	7th Dragoon Gds.	7th Hussars
1892	Umballa	Queen's Bays	7th Hussars	Queen's Bays
1893	Umballa	Queen's Bays	16th Lancers	Queen's Bays
1894	Umballa	Queen's Bays	5th Lancers	Queen's Bays
1895	Umballa	7th Hussars	18th Hussars	7th Hussars
1896	Umballa	Durham L.I.	5th Dragoon Gds.	Durham L.I.
1897	Meerut	Durham L.I.	16th Lancers	Durham L.I.
1898	Meerut	Durham L.I.	4th Dragoons	Durham L.I.
1899	Meerut	4th Hussars	4th Dragoons	4th Hussars
1900	Meerut	4th Hussars	3rd Rifle Bdge.	3rd Rifle Bdge.
1901	Meerut	20th Hussars	15th Hussars	20th Hussars
1902	Meerut	15th Hussars	4th Dragoon Gds.	15th Hussars
1903	Meerut	15th Hussars	10th Hussars	15th Hussars
1904	Meerut	15th Hussars	9th Lancers	15th Hussars
1905	Meerut	15th Hussars	9th Lancers	15th Hussars
1906	Meerut	15th Hussars	9th Lancers	9th Lancers
1907	Meerut	15th Hussars	10th Hussars	10th Hussars
1908	Meerut	10th Hussars	The Carbineers	10th Hussars
1909	Meerut	10th Hussars	1st K. D. Gds.	10th Hussars
1910	Meerut	10th Hussars	1st K. D. Gds.	10th Hussars
1911	Meerut	10th Hussars	1st K. D. Gds.	10th Hussars
1912	Meerut	10th Hussars	17th Lancers	10th Hussars
1913	Meerut	17th Lancers	1st K. D. Gds.	17th Lancers
1914	Meerut	17th Lancers	The Inniskillings	17th Lancers
1915 } 1916 } 1917 } 1918 } 1919 } 1920 }	No tournament.			
1921	Meerut	17th Cavalry	21st Lancers	17th Cavalry
1922	Meerut	C.I.H.	Pavo Cavalry	C.I.H.
1923	Meerut	15th Lancers	11th Hussars	15th Lancers

The details in connection with the show and sale of ponies at the Ranelagh Club under the auspices of the National Pony Society are nearly complete.

Digitized by Google

It is to be held on April 24 and ought to be a good opportunity for Polo players to pick up some likely ponies for polo.

This Society, knowing what interest is taken in polo and ponies in the Argentine, has appointed Mr. Ernest Jowell, a prominent member of the Argentine Hurlingham Club, to represent them in that country.

In the November *Polo Magazine* there is a leading article on the reasons for the want of success of our polo teams, especially in International Competitions. We have written on this subject for some time and the *Polo Magazine* harps on what we have always said. Their article can be summed up in two words "Team Work." Every polo player knows that a team that has played together is far better than a team composed of the finest players who have not played as a team. Our Army team that went to America on the individual handicap ought to have walked round the American team. Unfortunately the latter had been playing *as a team* for a long time and naturally walked round our people. Our Selection Committee must have had a very difficult job as the players selected had, generally speaking, to be able to mount themselves and there was no general post of ponies available for the team, added to which there was the question of what officers could be best spared from duty. Some people are inclined to blame the Selection Committee and suggest that the captain only should be selected and allowed to choose his own team.

Whatever plan is adopted in the future there can be no doubt that, unless we select our teams long before and enable them to play many matches as a team, we are bound to be beaten. As King George said on one occasion "Wake up, England," we say the same to the people who are responsible for selecting our polo and other teams to represent us at the Olympic Games.

We are pleased to hear that the Hurlingham Selection Committee, consisting of Lord Wimborne, Col. E. C. Miller and Lieut.-Col. R. G. Ritson, have now selected a provisional team to represent England in the forthcoming international matches:

		H'cap.
No. 1.	Major T. W. Kirkwood	8
No. 2.	Major G. Phipps Hornby	8
No. 3.	Major F. B. Hurndall	9
Back	The Marquess of Cholmondeley	8

Lord Wodehouse was asked but refused, as he did not think the team represented England's full strength.

We believe the four selected are all going to Cannes for the winter polo season. If this is correct we hope next May to see them at Hurlingham, playing as a team and not as four fine individual players. We hear a good many polo players do not agree with this selection, but if this team can play together at Cannes for the next few months it will be half the battle.

Shooting at Home

From all accounts grouse in Scotland have been a poor crop and the weather atrocious. Partridges have been patchy and wild pheasants not as good as in the last few years.

Digitized by Google

There has been a boom in Field Trials for gundogs and more meetings held than ever before. These trials have been interfered with by the foot-and-mouth disease. Colonel Donaldson Hudson, late of the 12th Lancers, lent his shoot for the International Gundog League's Retriever Trials, but they had to be put off at the last minute as his ground came into an enclosed area. The League were lucky enough to get ground near St. Neots at the last minute. The Cheshire and North Wales Spaniel Trials had also to be put off.

There is trouble in the Field Trial world and, thanks to a few enthusiasts and to propaganda in the *Field* newspaper, there is an endeavour to break loose from the Kennel Club. This, in our opinion, would be a great mistake. In an article in the *Scottish Field* on this subject the editor wrote that apparently the new Kennel editor of the *Field* had an "anti Kennel Club" bee in his bonnet. He certainly always is writing and running down the Kennel Club, for what reason is beyond us to say. It is a great pity and will do a lot of harm and no good. The Kennel Club is in much the same position as the Jockey Club. They have power to keep order and inflict penalties which no one else in the dog world has. We hope it will all fizzle out. The Kennel Club, if they wanted to, could be very nasty to these malcontents, and to us it is extraordinary that the Kennel Editor of the *Field* is a member of the Kennel Club, but never misses a chance of running down and finding fault, in print, with his own club.

We have always looked on the *Field* as our sporting bible, and we do expect a paper of that standing to be fair and put both sides of a question before the public and not, as in this case, hide the one and boom the other.

Olympic Games, Paris. July 21–27, 1924

The embargo placed by the Army Council on Officers' show-jumping abroad has been removed so far as the Olympic Games of 1924 are concerned.

The original order was issued because no public funds were available to finance any team, and officers competing at their own expense would have been seriously handicapped in comparison with those of foreign countries, who generally received financial aid.

The British Olympic Association has, however, approached the Army Council and put forward a scheme for the formation of a committee of officers, with the Commandant of the Equitation School, Weedon, as chairman, who shall undertake to select and train a team of British Officers for the Games, all expenses to be defrayed by the British Olympic Association Fund.

The Secretary of State for War has approved this scheme on the understanding that neither the individual officer competing nor Army Funds should be put to any expense.

Although the time now available is all too short and other countries have had their committees at work for a long time, it is hoped that all concerned will support the committee and enable it to do its best to make up for lost time.

The events for which it is proposed to enter teams are the Championship and the Show Jumping Test; the latter corresponds very closely to the Show

Digitized by Google

Jumping Competition at Olympia, and the former is similar to the Long Distance Ride at the Aldershot Show.

Extracts from the Conditions are given as follow :—

Championship.

Team and individual competitions.

Four competitors per nation.

For the final classification—only the marks scored by the three best competitors of each nation will be counted.

General Provisions.

1. Not more than two horses may be entered for any competition and of these only one may be ridden.

2. In the championship, the three tests must be carried out by the same horse with the same rider.

3. After the Endurance Test and the Jumping Competition in the Championship, horses will be examined by an International Committee.

4. Any horse lame or unquestionably unfit will be eliminated.

5. The following rules will be observed for the Championship :—

Dress :— Undress uniform.

Weight :— 11 stone 11 lbs., except in the *Manège* Test, for which there is no limit.

Harness :—Voluntary—except for the *Manège* Test, in which the plain double bridle and curb chain will be obligatory. Martingales, etc., not allowed.

Special Provisions.

The Championship comprises three distinct events taking place on three days with one day off between :

1st Day.—*Manège* Test.

2nd Day.—Endurance Test.

3rd Day.—Jumping Test.

1st Test.—Manège.

The object of this test is to show the horse's suppleness and his responsiveness to the rider's aids. (A horse light in hand and ' away ' from the leg.)

The movements must succeed one another in the order indicated and any one omitted will involve a loss of 1 point and at the end the judges will require its execution.

The size of the ring will be $66x \times 22x$. If circumstances demand it, the test will take place in a *manège.*

The test will be marked out of 20.

2nd Test.—Endurance.

This test is designed to try out the endurance of a really good charger or hunter—when it has been well trained and brought to the top of its condition.

Digitized by Google

It brings out at the same time the rider's knowledge of pace and the use of his horse.

The test involves riding 22 miles partly on roads or bridle paths, partly across country and partly over a steeplechase course. The whole in 2 hours 2 mins. 42 secs. The division is somewhat as follows :—

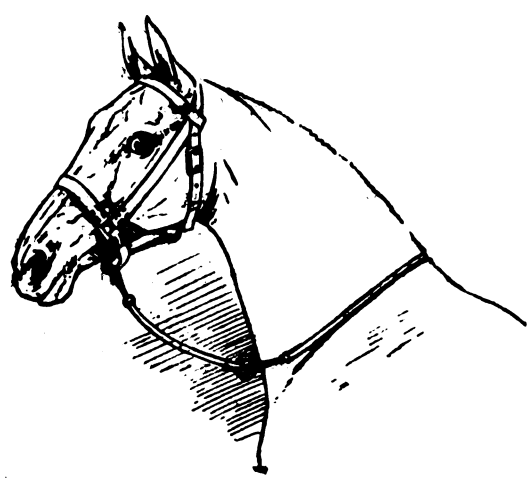
(*a*) On roads or paths 4½ miles at about 9 m.p.h.
(*b*) Steeplechase.—2½ miles at 20 m.p.h.
(*c*) On the road.—9¼ miles at 9 m.p.h.
(*d*) Cross-country.—5 miles at 17 m.p.h.
(*e*) 1¼ miles on the flat. Speed for the distance not to be less than that of a canter of 12 m.p.h.

3rd Test.—Jumping Competition.

This 3rd test is not an ordinary jumping competition. It is designed simply to show whether the horses presented maintain, on the day following a big effort, the suppleness and energy indispensable to a really good charger and hunter. There will be 12 obstacles, as follow :—

A double.—Four obstacles of 3′ 9″, a ditch 9′ 10″ and five others chosen by the judges from the following :—open ditch, wall, brook, oxer, post and rails, rail on a slope, banquette.

The speed required is a canter of 14 m.p.h. There will be a penalty of ½ pt. per 2 secs. for exceeding the time limit.



Digitized by Google

'In Memoriam.'

It is with the utmost grief that we have to record the death of Brigadier-General the Hon. Osbert Lumley, C.M.G. (late of the 11th Hussars), who was the first Editor of the Cavalry Journal. For two years—1906–1907—he gave his whole time to the work of initiating the journal, and has continued to give his valuable assistance ever since.

For the last three years he has been Chairman of the Cavalry War Memorial Committee, and has left no stone unturned to make it a success.

It may truthfully be said that Osbert Lumley had not a single enemy. He has left behind him a multitude of friends in this world, and will have found an equal number awaiting him in the next. The secret of his success was his absolute humanity; everybody loved him, from the highest ranks down to the last joined private.

His personal charm was well known to many of our readers; Sir Arthur Leetham writes: 'He was a charming character and a great gentleman' and no words could be more befitting.

Printed by Eyre and Spottiswoode, Ltd., His Majesty's Printers, East Harding Street, E.C.4.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Painted by Lady Butler.

(See page 185.)

THE DORSET YEOMEN AT AGAGIA.

February 26, 1916.

Digitized by Google

THE

CAVALRY JOURNAL

APRIL 1924

OPERATIONS OF THE SECOND RUSSIAN ARMY

FROM Jilinsky's Instruction No. 1 it will be remembered that the Second Russian Army was to advance deep into East Prussia, cutting off the enemy opposing the First Russian Army from their base on the Vistula.

(*a*) THE ADVANCE TO THE BATTLEFIELD.

The Germans had shown activity at Mlawa, which they had raided soon after the declaration of war, but otherwise there had been no engagements on the Johannisburg–Soldau front.

From H.Q., Second Army, on the night of August 14, telegraphic orders were issued as follows:

'Corps have been ordered to take up the following positions by 6 p.m. on August 17: IInd Corps, Augustow; VIth Corps, Lomja; XIIIth Corps, Ostrolenka; XVth Corps, Rozan; XXIIIrd Corps (less 3rd Guard Division), Novogeorgievsk; 4th Cavalry Division, Szczuczyn; 6th and 15th Cavalry Divisions, area of Ciechanow.'

On August 16, Second Army Instruction No. 1 was issued. It ran as follows:—

Second Army Instruction No. 1.

BIALYSTOK. August 16, 1914.

'The enemy in front of the Second Army has not changed except near Gutten (Johannisburg), where a Division of the

Digitized by Google

XXth Corps has appeared, and about a Division of the XVIIth Corps at Mlawa. Neidenburg is being strongly fortified.

'The Second Army, reinforced by the Guard and the Ist Corps, will advance on the front Lötzen—Rudczanny—Ortelsburg—Passenheim, directing its main blow round the Masurian Lakes to the west, with the object of crushing the enemy operating in the Lake Region, and cutting him off from the Vistula.

'The advance of Corps will begin on the 18th, with the exception of the Ist Corps, which will advance on the 17th.

'The XXIIIrd Corps will move without the 3rd Guard Division by road from Novogeorgievsk *viâ* Golymin—Opinogora—Grudusk—Kuklin, reaching Murawy on the 20th.

'The VIth, XIIIth, XVth and Ist Corps will advance as follows:—

'18th: Dobrylas — Zbojna — Grabowek — Ruzieck—Makow—Pomaski.

'19th: Pupkowizna — Lipniki — Wola — Blendowo—Jednorozec—Prasnysz—Pievo.

'20th: Dombrowo — Pelty — Montwitz — Chorzele—Krzynowloga—Zaboklik—Mlawa.

'The Ist Corps will move *viâ* the Nasielsk—Ciechanow—Mlawa road and to the west of it.

'The Guard Corps will concentrate in the Warsaw—Novogeorgievsk area.

'The 4th Cavalry Division will reconnoitre between the VIth and IInd Corps.

'The 6th Cavalry Division will protect the left flank of the line Przasnysz—Janowo, and the right of the high road from Novogeorgievsk to Mlawa.

'The 15th Cavalry Division will reconnoitre to the left of this high road and to the right of the line Plonsk—Drobin—Biezun—Gorzno—Strasburg.

'The Headquarters of the Army will move to Ostrolenka on the morning of the 18th.'

Digitized by Google

The Second Russian Army crossed the frontier with the following forces:—

5½ Corps (IInd, VIth, XIIIth, XVth, ½ XXIIIrd and Ist) (164 battalions and 36 squadrons).

3 Cavalry Divisions (72 squadrons).

The 5½ Corps, therefore, started with a deficiency of 7 per cent. in their normal complement of Infantry, and their rear services were very incomplete.

Comments upon Samsonoff's Instruction.

Samsonoff had been set a more formidable task than Rennenkampf. Rennenkampf was the Commander of the Vilna Military District, from which all his troops came. All his movements for concentration had followed a long pre-arranged plan. Samsonoff was the Governor of Turkestan. At the outbreak of hostilities he was on sick leave in the Caucasus. He arrived at Bialystok on August 12, to find his Army concentrating. It consisted of five Corps and three Cavalry Divisions. Samsonoff added the Ist Corps, which should not really have been at his disposal, as a sort of compensation for one of his Divisions retained at Grodno. He thus had nine units with which to deal direct, a number too great for even a good Staff; but the difficulties in the case of the Second Army were augmented by the bad communications and the breadth of frontage upon which the Army found itself. Some further grouping of Corps was necessary, and the IInd Corps, which was to remain east of the Masurian Lakes, might well have been retained directly under Jilinsky.

Jilinsky had conceived a general move of the Second Russian Army to the west, and this move was in process of execution when Samsonoff arrived. He was greeted with a Memorandum from his Chief of Staff showing how the timing was going. This document was accepted by Samsonoff, with two minor reservations. It is a good example of the Higher Staff work of the Russian Army.

Digitized by Google

The VIth Corps was made to march 88 miles in five days, the XIIIth Corps 115 miles in seven days, and the XVth Corps 81 miles in five days, averages of 17½, 16½ and 16 miles per day over execrable roads. These marches were merely to reach the frontier, from where the advance began. The XIIIth Corps was required to leave Bialystok, its detraining station, without its second-line transport, which, in fact never reached the Corps during the Campaign.

As a result, the troops were exhausted long before they came in contact with the enemy.

One must draw a picture of the sick Commander, weakly acquiescing to a programme already in force, and hoping for the best.

Omitting the IInd Corps, Samsonoff was advancing 4½ Corps (VIth, XIIIth, XVth, ½ XXIIIrd and Ist) on a frontage of 47 miles. He had some excuse for making this wide extension, since the roads were few and bad, and there was no immediate probability of meeting the enemy. But, it will be at once apparent that Samsonoff was directing his advance far to the west of the objectives that Jilinsky had given him, and further from the objectives of the First Russian Army. Jilinsky had ordered the Second Army to direct itself on the line Rudczanny—Passenheim and further Rastenburg—Seeburg, whereas Samsonoff ordered the line Dombrowy—Mlawa as the objective for the 20th.

Jilinsky had also ordered the Second Army to push Cavalry, supported by Infantry, across the Frontier on the 18th. Samsonoff made no effort to carry out this order. Here was a case in which some kind of strategic Advanced Guard might have been employed. The enemy was some distance away and the advance to meet him was likely to be a long one. Many of the Corps were not ready, especially in their rear services. Samsonoff evidently intended to subsist to some degree upon the country, and it was essential that a service of requisitioning should be organised in front of Corps. This

Digitized by Google

could only have been done behind a strong Cavalry screen. Samsonoff made no attempt to organise any requisitioning service. The Corps Cavalry of these 4½ Corps was most unequally divided, being as follows: VIth Corps, 8 squadrons; XIIIth Corps, 5 squadrons; XVth Corps, 6 squadrons; XXIIIrd Corps, 1 squadron, and Ist Corps, 2 squadrons, a total of 22 squadrons of weak and ill-trained troops, insufficient for reconnaissance on a front of 47 miles.

No special Instruction was issued to the three Cavalry Divisions other than to reconnoitre upon lines on the flank of the Army, the 4th Cavalry Division on the right, and the 6th and 15th Cavalry Divisions on the left. Jilinsky had fixed the attention of Samsonoff on his left flank by warning him of the possibility of enemy attack from Allenstein; but Samsonoff's right flank, and not his left, was now directed on Allenstein, and the Cavalry on the left flank were directed on Strasburg, fully 60 miles to the west of Allenstein. The position of affairs was thus much altered. On the right, the 4th Cavalry Division was directed into the most unsuitable country south of Johannisburg, where the Germans had erected a line of blockhouses in the forest. Against such an obstacle, the Cavalry were useless. The country was so bad that it was not till two days after the right Corps had crossed the Frontier that the 4th Cavalry Division succeeded in crossing at the same point. A special Infantry detachment from the right Corps would have been much better in such country. This would have released the Cavalry for their legitimate work in front of the Army.

Taking Samsonoff's direction as he ordered it, it is suggested that the Cavalry might have been grouped as follows:—

Right Group.—Strength: 4th Cavalry Division. Closely followed by one Infantry Brigade (eight Battalions) from the VIth Corps as Advanced Guard to that Corps, supplied with a good proportion of the eight squadrons of Corps Cavalry with this Corps.

Digitized by Google

Objective: Dombrowy—Ortelsburg.

Information required:—

(*a*) Did the enemy intend to oppose the advance south of Ortelsburg?

(*b*) What movement was taking place from east to west on the railway through Ortelsburg?

The railways leading out of Ortelsburg to be temporarily interrupted, and all rolling stock in Ortelsburg to be retained there.

Every facility to be given to the requisitioning officers moving between the VIth Corps Advanced Guard and the Cavalry. The utmost care to be taken to spare any supplies existing.

Left Group.—Strength: 6th Cavalry Division. Closely followed by one Infantry Brigade (eight Battalions) from the XVth Corps, as Advanced Guard to that Corps supplied with a good proportion of the six squadrons of Corps Cavalry with this Corps.

Objective: Neidenburg.

Information required:—

(*a*) Did the enemy intend to oppose the advance south of Neidenburg?

(*b*) What movement was taking place through Neidenburg on the railway?

The railways leading out of Neidenburg to be temporarily interrupted, and all rolling stock in Neidenburg to be retained there.

Every facility to be given to the requisitioning officers working between the XVth Corps Advanced Guard and the Cavalry. The utmost care to be taken to spare any supplies existing.

The 25 miles of very wooded country between Ortelsburg and Neidenburg was unlikely to contain many enemy troops; and, working between these two groups of Army Cavalry, backed by their two Advanced Guards, the five squadrons of

Digitized by Google

Corps Cavalry with the XIIIth Corps should have been sufficient to reconnoitre this area thoroughly.

The 15th Cavalry Division should have been placed under the Commander of the Ist Corps, with special Instructions as to the protection of the left flank of the Advance. It is suggested that he might have been given an Instruction on the following lines :—

'The 15th Cavalry Division is placed under your orders. The Ist Corps will be responsible for the protection of the left flank of the Advance. The Corps will direct its march to the area of Soldau. Cavalry reconnaissances, backed by strong Infantry Advanced Guards, will be directed towards Osterode—Deutsch Eylau and Strasburg. The railways leading to Soldau from these three directions will be interrupted as far from Soldau as possible. It is important to ascertain :—

'(i) Whether forces are being directed from the Vistula towards Osterode, Deutsch Eylau and Strasburg.

'(ii) Whether there is a general movement, either by rail or road from east to west, through these three places.'

(*b*) German Movements.

Every item of information contained in Samsonoff's paragraph of Instruction No. 1 was incorrect, showing the state of his Intelligence Service.

Von Prittwitz had left the XXth Corps to oppose, as he thought, 'the very unlikely advance of the Russians from Poland.' The whole of the rest of the Eighth German Army had been moved up to oppose Rennenkampf. About two brigades of garrison troops from the Vistula fortresses had been moved up to support the XXth Corps. The Corps had taken up its position in the neighbourhood of Neidenburg, with a strong detachment at Ortelsburg. Only one regiment of Cavalry was present with the Corps, and consequently reconnaissance could not be carried out far to the front. Aviation

Digitized by Google

seems to have been also deficient, for it was not till the evening of the 20th that the advance of the Russian Army in strength was discovered, and at that time the two right Russian Corps were close to the Frontier, and had been marching on sandy roads in full view from the air since the 17th. There was therefore no careful frontier protection, as was the case in the area north of the Masurian Lakes.

By the night of August 22, Samsonoff's Army had reached the line Ortelsburg — Willenberg — Dankheim — Neidenburg — Soldau.

On the right, the 4th Cavalry Division had just managed to catch up the line after its work in the Johannisburg Forest, and had made no reconnaissances forward.

On the left, the 6th Cavalry Division was at Kuklin and the 15th Cavalry Division at Nowawies, both considerably behind the line of Corps. Squadron reconnaissances had been sent out to long distances from these points. Certain concentrations of German troops in no great strength had been reported at Lautenburg and Strasburg.

Nothing was reported in front of the Army.

Jilinsky had informed Samsonoff that the Germans had been badly defeated by Rennenkampf on the 20th, and were in panic flight in front of the First Russian Army.

The four Corps of the Second Russian Army were now on a front from Ortelsburg to Soldau, a distance of 40 miles, with the mutilated XXIIIrd Corps a day behind the line. The IInd Corps had passed to the First Russian Army.

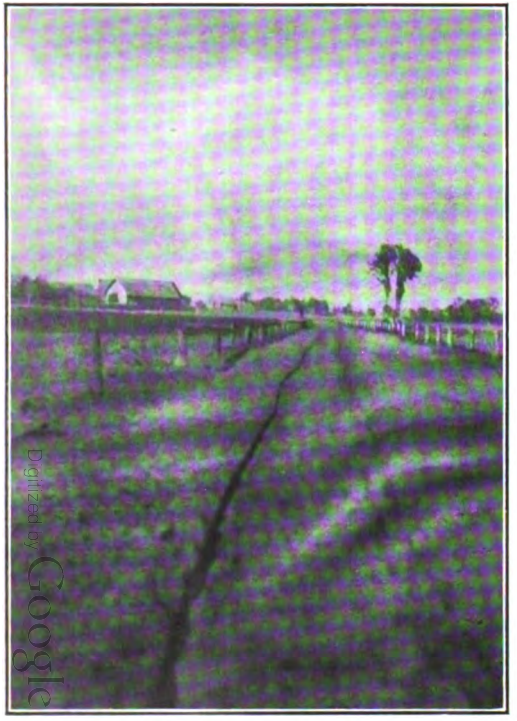
The Army was exhausted and unfed, and advancing blindly forward in the direction of Allenstein—Deutsch Eylau, far to the west of the objective given to it by Jilinsky. The roads had been indescribable, and the rear services far behind. Little food could be obtained from the wretched inhabitants.

On the morning of the 23rd, Jilinsky wired to Samsonoff :—

> 'German troops, after heavy fighting and the victory of General Rennenkampf, are hastily retreating, blowing

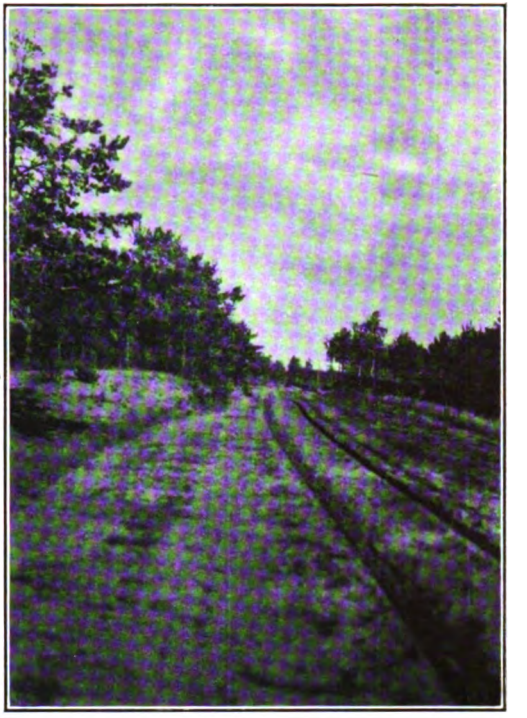
Digitized by Google

FOREST ROAD NEAR JOHANNISBURG.



A FOREST ROAD IN THE GRÜNFLIESS AREA.

EXIT TO FOREST OF GRÜNFLIESS AT MUSCHAKEN



MAIN ROAD IN THE FOREST OF GRÜNFLIESS.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

up the bridges behind them. The enemy, apparently, has only inconsiderable forces in front of you.

'Therefore, leaving the Ist Corps at Soldau and protecting the left flank with the necessary troops, you will advance energetically with all remaining forces to the front Sensburg—Allenstein, which should be occupied not later than the 25th.

'Your movement is directed to meet the enemy retreating in front of General Rennenkampf, and to cut off his retreat to the Vistula.'

Here was the moment for a readjustment of the Cavalry for their new objective.

Jilinsky was ordering a wheel to the north, which would expose the left flank of the Army. Certain German concentrations had been reported near Lautenburg and Strasburg, but not in great force. Still, the railways leading from the Vistula gave the enemy an opportunity of bringing up fresh forces, and that flank was the exposed one.

It is therefore suggested that the Cavalry should have been disposed as follows :—

Left Group.—15th Cavalry Division, under command of the Ist Corps Commander.

Objective : To clear up the situation at Lautenburg and Strasburg, and to ensure that the railways leading to Soldau were cut as far from that place as possible.

The best method to carry out this task being the sending forward of strong mixed detachments to some distance in the required direction.

Right Group.—Strength : 4th Cavalry Division.

Objective : Sorquiten—Rothfliess.

Information required :—

(*a*) What German troops were moving westward south of the Insterburg—Allenstein line ?

(*b*) What train movement was taking place on this line ?

Digitized by Google

The main line to be interrupted near Rothfliess.

Centre Group.—Strength: 6th Cavalry Division.

Objective: Allenstein.

Information required:—

(*a*) Did the XXth German Corps intend to oppose the Advance south of the Allenstein railway?

(*b*) If the XXth German Corps was withdrawing, did it intend to move east or west of the Lake area between Neu Kaletka and Hohenstein?

No fresh orders of any kind were issued to the Cavalry, and Samsonoff persisted in his western extension.

(*c*) First Contact with the Enemy.

On the morning of the 24th, the XVth Corps moved out of Neidenburg northwards towards Frankenau. The Corps Cavalry appear to have made no reconnaissance, and the Russian columns blundered into the Germans entrenched along a low line of hills from Orlau to Michalken. The Russian Infantry attacked with great gallantry, but were repulsed with heavy casualties. The Germans withdrew during the night of the 24th–25th to the line Hohenstein—Tannenberg—Gilgenberg.

Information from the Cavalry there was none on either flank. Only the XVth Corps had been engaged, and Samsonoff thought the whole XXth Corps had been defeated at Frankenau. He appears to have come to the conclusion that the Germans defeated by Rennenkampf had slipped past him to the west; and, instead of turning northwards as directed by Jilinsky, he turned to the westward towards the front Allenstein—Osterode. His plan appears to have been to leave the VIth Corps near Bischofsburg, with the 4th Cavalry Division to guard his rear and right flank, to move on Allenstein—Osterode with 2½ Corps (XIIIth, XVth and ½ XXIIIrd), while leaving the Ist Corps with the 6th and 15th Cavalry Divisions on his left flank facing the concentrations at Strasburg.

Digitized by Google

The positions reached by the troops of the Second Russian Army by the night of the 25th were as follows :—

Right Flank.—VIth Corps, Bischofsburg; 4th Cavalry Division, Sensburg.

Centre.—XIIIth Corps, Kurken; XVth Corps, Orlau—Frankenau; ½ XXIIIrd Corps, Lippau.

Left Flank.—Ist Corps, Usdau -- Meischlitz — Koschlau — Gralau; 6th Cavalry Division, Gr. Lensk; 15th Cavalry Division, Zielun.

Samsonoff was advancing his centre towards where he expected the enemy to lie without any reconnaissance in front, except the inefficient Corps Cavalry of the XVth and XIIIth Corps, amounting to eleven squadrons.

(*d*) German Movements.

In a sudden loss of self-command, von Prittwitz had ordered a withdrawal of the Eighth German Army behind the Vistula. From the field of Gumbinnen, he had entrained the Ist Corps and the 3rd Reserve Division from his left and right flanks respectively, and had ordered the XVIIth and Ist Reserve Corps, with the 1st Cavalry Division, to withdraw in front of Rennenkampf. Rennenkampf made no move, and von Prittwitz began to pluck up heart again. But there had been a scare at Supreme Headquarters, and Hindenburg, with Ludendorff as his Chief of Staff, was appointed to succeed him.

Immediate action against Samsonoff was determined upon. The Ist Corps and the 3rd Reserve Division were diverted from their journey to the Vistula, and brought in on the right and left of the XXth Corps respectively. The XVIIth and Ist Reserve Corps succeeded in disengaging completely from touch with Rennenkampf, who was watched by the 1st Cavalry Division only. Samsonoff was to be attacked on either flank and enveloped.

Digitized by Google

The four Corps of the German Army were advancing for this manœuvre with nothing but their Corps Cavalry, and thus greatly inferior in this arm to Samsonoff's Army, supplied with three Cavalry Divisions.

(*e*) The Destruction of the Russian Right Flank.

The right flank of Samsonoff's Army consisted of the VIth Corps and the 4th Cavalry Division. Samsonoff's last order reached the VIth Corps Commander on the afternoon of the 25th. It ran as follows:

> 'The VIth Corps, under whose orders is placed the 4th Cavalry Division, will occupy the area Bischofsburg —Rothfliess, with the object of protecting the right flank of the Second Army from Rastenburg. The 4th Cavalry Division will remain at Sensburg, reconnoitring between the lines Rastenburg—Bartenstein and Seeburg—Heilsburg.'

Here is a typically faulty order. The Cavalry Division, though placed under the Corps Commander's orders, is tied to Sensburg. Reconnaissances are ordered from the Cavalry to great distances, involving the usual Russian method of sending forward isolated squadrons, unbacked by any other force.

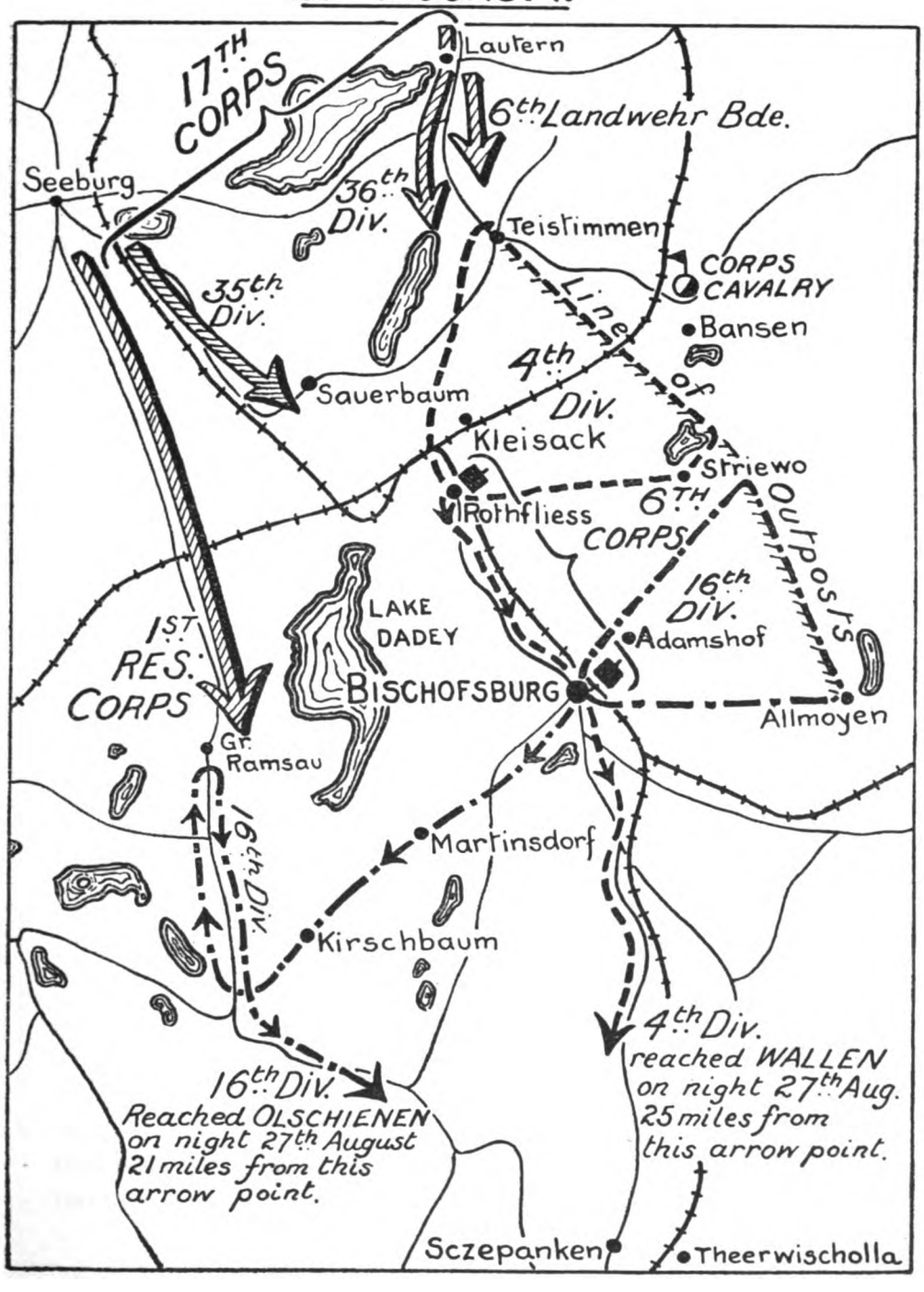
The VIth Corps Commander was in command of a detachment. He should have been told the object of his detachment—'to protect the right flank of the Second Army from Rastenburg,' and should then have been allowed to dispose his troops as he thought necessary.

On the morning of August 26, the VIth Corps was disposed as follows:—

> 16th Division: Bischofsburg; Advanced Guard, Adamshof.
>
> 4th Division: Rothfliess; Advanced Guard, Kleisack.

Digitized by Google

DESTRUCTION OF THE RUSSIAN RIGHT FLANK. 26TH AUG: 1914.



Digitized by Google

General line of Outposts: Allmoyen — Striewo — Teistimmen.

Corps Cavalry: Bansen.

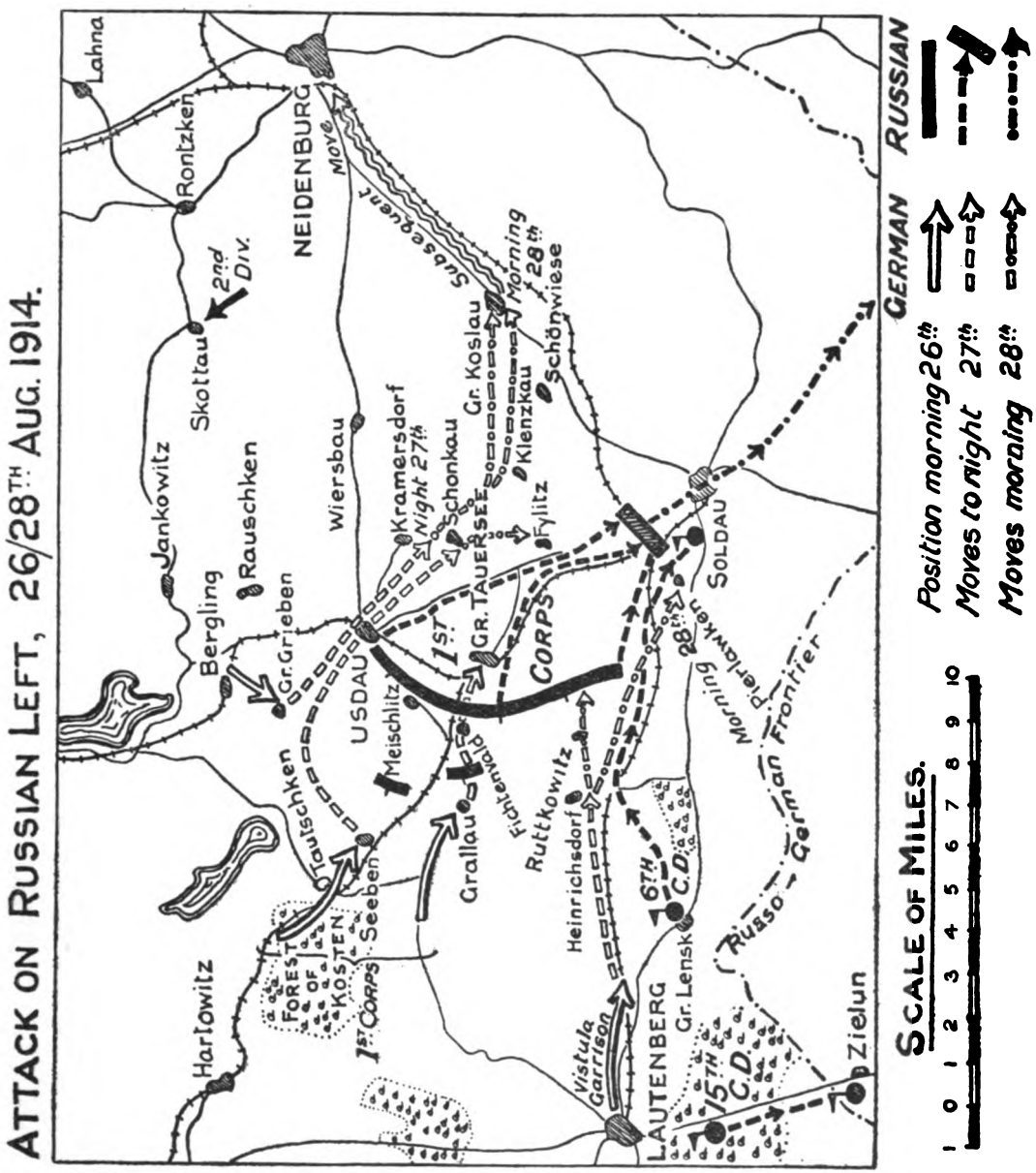
The Corps had carried out no reconnaissance to the north, the Chief of Staff observing, pathetically, 'No orders for any reconnaissance in this direction had been received.'

There could have been no worse disposition for an independent detached force. What was required was the whole of the Cavalry well forward to, say, Rossel, backed by a strong force of Infantry, say, one brigade (eight battalions). This force to investigate what movement was going on from east to west on the roads, and to interrupt the railways running in that direction. The remainder of the Corps to be maintained in the Bischofsburg—Rothfliess area, with close *liaison* with the force at Rossel. If the direction of Lötzen was considered dangerous, a force of, say, one brigade, with some Cavalry, should have been pushed up to investigate the situation there, cutting the railway between Lötzen and Rastenburg.

Accurate information of what the enemy was doing was the first requisite. This meant dispersion for reconnaissance, and frequent movement, instead of the passive occupation of a position.

The morning of the 26th broke with the news that there was an enemy brigade at Lautern, that Seeburg was occupied, and that enemy columns were also approaching from the north. Strategical reconnaissance had failed utterly. The Commander of the 4th Division, thinking that he had a screen thrown out in front of him by troops retreating westwards from Rastenburg, moved up his troops to attack, disposing his Division on either side of the village of Teistimmen. Fighting became general. He was, in fact, being attacked by the whole of the XVIIth and Ist Reserve German Corps, with an attached Brigade of Landwehr. Thus, 4½ Divisions had been allowed to approach within a few miles without

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

being observed, and this though the Corps had been in position for twenty-four hours and the 4th Cavalry Division had been at Sensburg for nearly sixty hours.

The 4th Russian Division was driven back with the loss of 73 officers, 5,283 men, 16 guns and 18 machine-guns. The 16th Russian Division was also involved in the retreat, and the transport became inextricably mixed with the fighting troops.

By the night of the 27th, the VIth Corps, utterly demoralised, had reached Olschienen and Wallen. The Germans were, therefore, left unopposed to close in on the right flank of the Russian centre, advancing on Allenstein—Osterode.

(*f*) The Destruction of the Russian Left Flank.

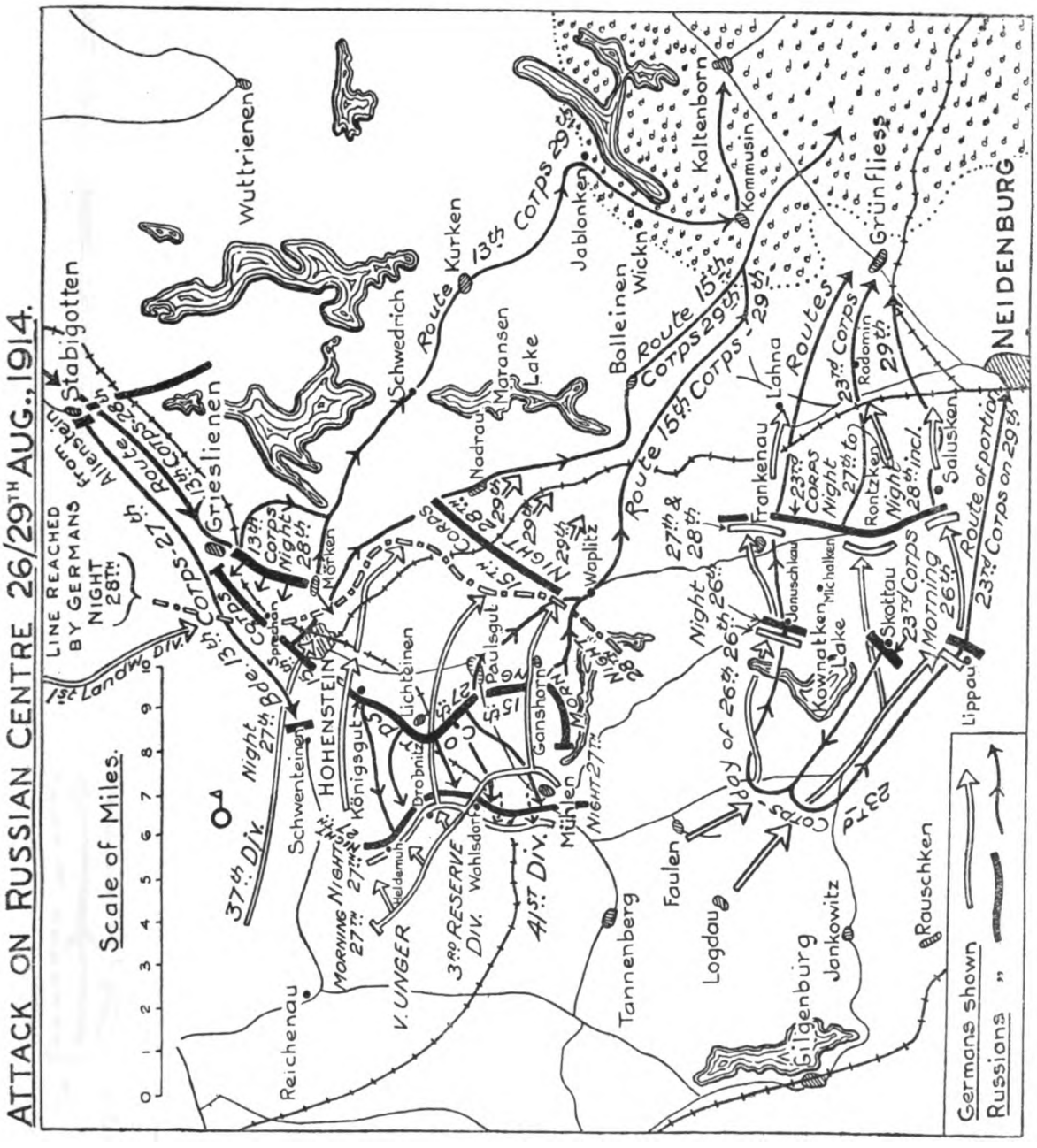
On the morning of the 26th, the Ist Russian Corps was occupying a position along the high ground Usdau—Meischlitz—Ruttkowitz, with advanced troops pushed forward to Seeben and Grallau. The 15th Cavalry Division was watching Lautenburg and the 6th Cavalry Division was at Gr. Lensk. On the right of the Ist Russian Corps was the 2nd Division (XXIIIrd Corps) near Skottau.

Samsonoff that morning wired to the Ist Corps Commander:—

> 'Your task is to protect the rear of the Army on the left flank, and this task must be carried out at all costs. The Army Commander is convinced that even a greatly superior force is not in a position to break the resistance of the famous Ist Corps, upon whose action the success of the operations against Allenstein and beyond depends.'

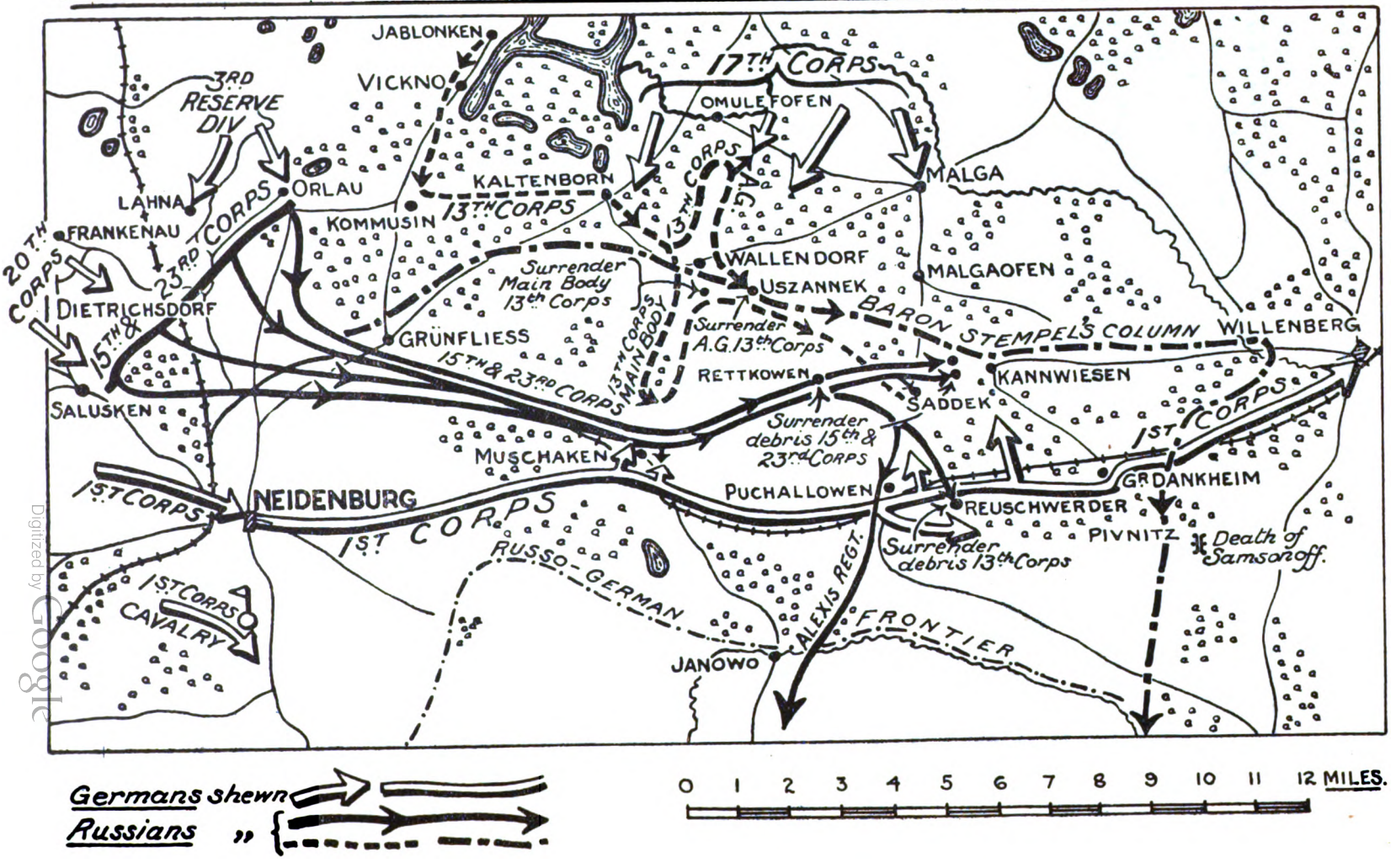
Both the 15th and 6th Cavalry Divisions were under the orders of the Ist Corps Commander. Here, again, the Russians failed to make use of their Cavalry. There was little news

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

THE FINAL DESTRUCTION OF THE 2ND ARMY, 29TH-30TH AUG. 1914.



Digitized by Google

of the enemy, except at Lautenburg and Strasburg. The Cavalry was employed exclusively on this flank, reporting the presence of enemy columns and giving way in front of them. The Ist Corps Commander, instead of backing up this Cavalry with strong Infantry detachments, with orders to act offensively and penetrate the enemy screen, merely took up a passive attitude, with his troops deployed in a long line.

The whole of the Ist German Corps had detrained within a day's march of the Russian position, and had moved up closer to it without being observed. The Russian Commander had fifty squadrons of Cavalry to oppose the Germans' nine and yet he allowed himself to be surprised.

Attacked on the 26th and 27th by a strength of about three Divisions, the Russian left flank gave way completely, being driven, first to Soldau and then to Mlawa, allowing the victorious Germans to close in on the left flank of the Russian centre.

The Russian centre, the 2nd Division (XXIIIrd Corps), XVth Corps and XIIIth Corps, found themselves heavily opposed in the direction of Hohenstein—Tannenberg, continuing to advance during the 26th, 27th and 28th. A withdrawal was then ordered by Samsonoff, when he realised that his flank detachments had been driven from the field. Fighting rear-guard actions as they went, these 2½ Corps were finally enveloped and practically exterminated in the Forest of Grünfliess. The Ist German Corps had closed the southern exits along the railway line from Neidenburg to Willenberg, and the XVIIth Corps the exits to the north.

Two small parties only escaped by resolutely breaking through the enveloping line. Samsonoff found himself within the fatal ring, and is supposed to have shot himself in his despair.

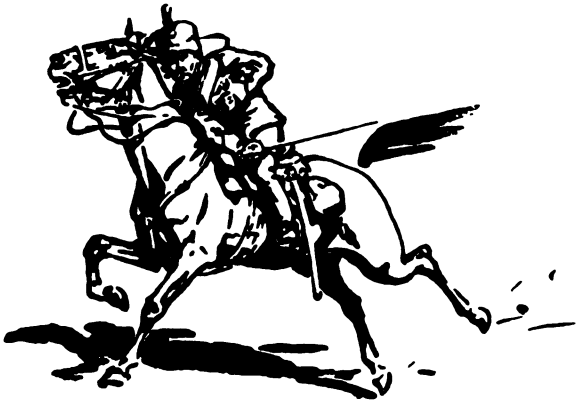
The Germans claim the following results :—95,000 un-

Digitized by Google

wounded prisoners; 30,000 wounded prisoners; 40,000 dead; 500 guns.

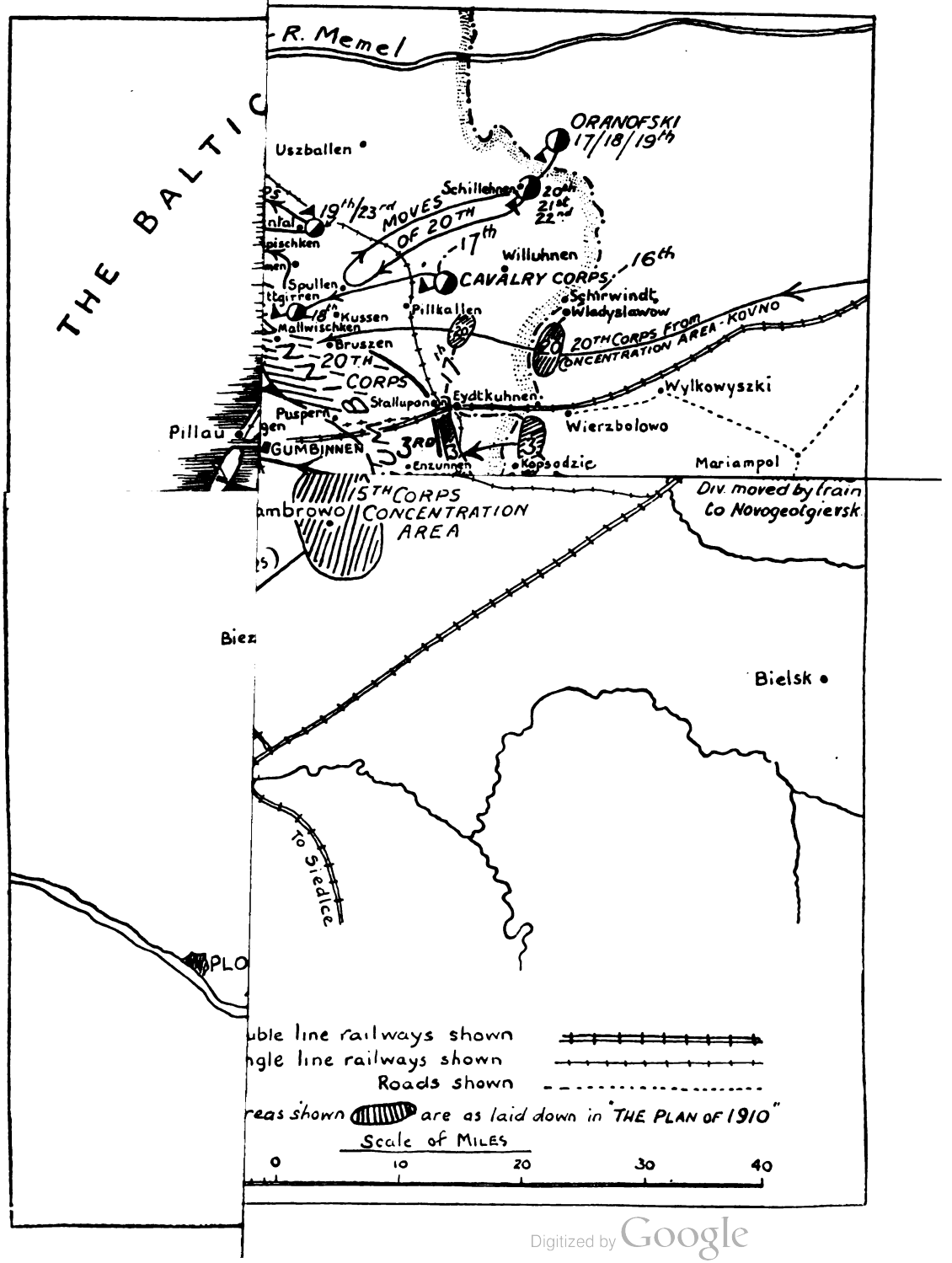
Samsonoff's failure was due to lack of reconnaissance as much as to faulty administrative arrangements. Not only were the men sent hungry and weary into battle, but they were surprised on every occasion.

The Germans had nothing but Corps Cavalry, and, of that, 48 squadrons only in the theatre of action. The Russians had 94 squadrons, of which 72 belonged to the three Cavalry Divisions.



Digitized by Google

RUSSO Theatre of Operations
illustrating in August of that Year.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE MOBILE DIVISION OF THE FUTURE

THE tactical problems in connection with a delaying force, made up of Cavalry and other mobile arms, were thought out in detail at a staff exercise held at the Equitation School last year, and the summing up by General Sir Philip Chetewode was published in the CAVALRY JOURNAL in October.

The object of this article is to interest our readers in the Mobile Division of the future, in hopes of promoting discussion and extracting fresh ideas.

It may appear to some that the questions with which we are dealing are such as should be decided by the higher commanders, but it will be seen on closer inspection that many of the factors which make for success are in the hands of junior leaders. Moreover, when war comes upon us, and it generally comes when least expected, the troop leader of to-day is the regimental commander of to-morrow.

'The strength of an Army, like the power in mechanics, is estimated by multiplying the mass by the rapidity. A rapid march augments the "morale" of an army and increases all the chances of victory.'—('Military Maxims of Napoleon.')

The laws of strategy and tactics require modification and revision from time to time, in order to cope successfully with the various inventions which come to light. The 'Principles' of the conduct of war, however, remain unaltered, and for this reason the maxims of Napoleon are as sound to-day as when they were written.

'Mass multiplied by rapidity,' how true! We have seen much of the former during the late war—nations in arms, armies whose strength ran into millions, mass attacks by

Digitized by Google

innumerable divisions; but it is the second factor, 'mobility,' which must be the special study of Cavalry.

If we can increase the mobility, we can reduce the mass and yet obtain a similar result; for there comes a time when, by increasing the bulk of a cavalry division, we automatically decrease its mobility. The details of composition are, therefore, of the greatest importance.

The powers of a really mobile force are unlimited, the faster they can move the greater will be the result. Rapidity of movement, however, will effect little if we cannot carry with us the means of hard hitting when the opportunity occurs. Let us take the Cavalry Division as at present constituted and see how we can, in the first place, increase its mobility. If we study the evolution of Cavalry from the early ages, through successive periods, we see the pendulum swinging backwards and forwards. At one period we find the cavalryman clothed in little more than a shirt, and riding on a pad in place of a saddle; the other extreme is shown in the days of chivalry, with the heavy armour piled on to such an extent that the horse is unable to move out of a walk. At the close of the late war the pendulum was swinging in the wrong direction: every year more and more kit was being piled on to the horse, and the number of wheels on the increase, the cavalry horse actually carrying twenty stone, and what with food *échelons*, ammunition carriers, tools, explosives and all the other impedimenta, the Division had become cumbersome. It is obvious, that if we are to regain our mobility, the pendulum must be made to swing in the right direction. The ideal mobile force must have the maximum of mobility, combined with the greatest possible hitting power, and a minimum of vulnerability. Now let us consider each of these necessities in detail. By mobility we mean the power to reach a given point in a thoroughly fit condition in the shortest possible time. The means by which this will be obtained are, first of all, quick thinking on the part of the leaders; secondly, all units

Digitized by Google

thoroughly trained in reconnaissance, and the smaller units instilled with determination, and the knowledge how, rapidly, to brush aside all minor opposition. The impedimenta which accompany squadrons must be only such as are absolutely essential, and, finally, the weight on the horse's back *must be cut down.*

When the above factors have been taken into consideration, it should be possible to make a fairly good estimate of the distance which such a force may be expected to cover, and the maximum rate of march which it can maintain.

This estimate having been made, the next step is to consider how the fighting efficiency of the mobile force can be increased by the addition of such units of other arms, and mechanically propelled vehicles, as can keep pace with the cavalry over any sort of country. Here we must invite the experts in these various arms to think out to what extent they can guarantee the assistance we require.

Our fire power has been increased since 1914 by the addition of extra machine guns and Hotchkiss rifles, but as this mobile division is to be an absolutely self-supporting and independent unit, at the disposal of the C.-in-C., we require more than we have at present. Armoured cars to protect our flanks and help our advanced guards—tanks which can follow in close support, ready to take on any opposition which is delaying our advance; additional artillery on tractors, especially howitzers; aeroplanes to help our reconnaissance, and Infantry in lorries where roads are available.

To the above must be added a more reliable system of wireless and, finally, anti-aircraft defence.

The whole question of vulnerability must be carefully studied: unnecessary casualties must be reduced to a minimum by the adoption of suitable formations, the consideration of visibility and invisibility according to the nature of the country, and protection against night bombing.

Now it will be seen that, by the addition of the units

Digitized by Google

suggested above, the fire-power of the Division will be more than doubled. This does not mean any corresponding reduction in the Cavalry spirit. It is the resolute man on the galloping horse that is going to do the business, but no means must be neglected which may assist him to reach his objective, and reach it quickly. This great mobile unit may be asked to perform a stupendous task. It will be sent many miles ahead of the army, and, whether it is to carry out a raid on the enemy's communications or to gain information or seize positions, it may be days before the main army catches up. During this time they must be able to protect themselves, and it is here that the addition of infantry in lorries will come in.

Peace conditions may not admit of a mobile division of the above nature being trained as a unit, but it is essential that the leaders should be given ample opportunity of thinking out the tactical problems, and that the various arms of which the division will be composed should draw back the doors of their watertight compartments and become thoroughly conversant with each other's ideas.

We may sum up the means of increasing the 'Mobility' and the 'Fighting power' of the Division, while at the same time reducing its 'Vulnerability,' as follows:—

(*a*) By ensuring the selection of the best leaders, and it may be as well, under this heading, to quote from one of the best writers on cavalry, General von Pelet-Narbonne:—

> 'The personality of the leader in all wars turns the scale. I reckon the importance of the personal influence so highly, that I consider all else should give way to it, though often this personality only develops in war.
>
> 'Ever-readiness and the ability to rapidly form bold resolutions, are far more required in cavalry than in other arms. The age for a cavalry leader

Digitized by Google

seems to be that when the full strength of manhood is attained, when the will to dare is not yet over-influenced by the wish to weigh, and the leader of horse should be sought amongst men who still find pleasure in galloping across country. Tactical and strategical knowledge, with the assurance born of experience in the leadership of men, are further indispensable qualities, since youth and hard riding of themselves are not enough.'

(*b*) A high standard of training in reconnaissance, horsemastership and march discipline.

(*c*) Reduction of the weight on the horse.

(*d*) The abolition of all impedimenta which is not absolutely essential.

(*e*) Improvement in wireless system and intercommunication between units.

(*f*) The attachment of tanks, aeroplanes, armoured cars, tractor-drawn Artillery, and Infantry in lorries.

(*g*) The selection of suitable formations, on the move and at the halt. Under this heading it must be impressed on all that the 'Concentration' of a division does not mean 5,000 horses in one field, as it was interpreted to imply in 1914. A division is just as well concentrated, in fact very much better so, when its brigades are a mile or two apart. A brigade likewise with its regiments separated by over half a mile, and a regiment with its squadrons no closer than 400 yards. The object of the old system, namely, that all should see with the same eye as the commander, can be just as easily attained by assembling the leaders away from their commands, provided that they have a good system of communication with their respective units.

Finally, the strength of a chain is that of its weakest link, and no matter what arrangements may have been made to ensure mobility, all the efforts may be annulled

Digitized by Google

by the faulty reconnaissance of a patrol leader. No stone must, therefore, be left unturned to ensure that junior officers study their profession, and by this means give a reasonable chance of success to any scheme which the higher commands may work out for a Mobile Cavalry Division.

In conjunction with this article, it is of interest to consider how our Allies, the French, are dealing with the Cavalry problem. The following is based on a study of their 'Règlement de la Cavalerie,' which has just been published :—

The French doctrine on Cavalry may be summed up in the phrase 'the Cavalry manœuvres on horse-back and fights on foot,' which is to be found in their Cavalry 'règlements'; this would seem to imply that the horse is no longer regarded as an active element in the battle itself, but has become only a means of transport. One inclines to the opinion that the newly constituted 'Light Division,' as the French Cavalry Division is now called, is a very mobile and powerful fire unit, partaking more of the nature of mounted infantry than of what is understood in the British Army as a Cavalry Division.

But an important point to bear in mind, when studying the Cavalry organisation, is that for the French the problem is an European war, and that their organisation and training is designed with this end in view.

The French Cavalry is divided into :—

(*a*) Light Divisions ('Divisions Légères'),

(*b*) Corps Cavalry,

these two parts being quite distinct from one another.

The Light Division.—This name has replaced that of 'division de cavalerie,' as 'division de ligne' has replaced that of 'division d'infanterie.' This change of title denotes an important change in the tactical handling and organization of the French 'Light Division'; the necessary re-organization has already been effected in 3 out of the total 5 such Divisions,

Digitized by Google

these 3 being stationed on the Rhine and the north-east frontier of France.

It is not yet certain whether the new title will be permanently adopted, as the Cavalry themselves are opposed to it, since they consider that it may tend to destroy the special characteristics of the arm. The Higher Command are, however, thought to be in favour of it as representing the more composite nature of the modern Cavalry Division, which has resulted from the necessity for providing it with a greatly increased fire-power in modern war, in order to enable it to overcome resistance and thus to maintain mobility.

These 5 Light Divisions will, in war, form part of the General Reserves at the disposal of the Commander-in-Chief.

The composition of a Light Division will be as follows :—

H.Q. (staff and services).

3 Brigades each of 2 Regiments of 4 Squadrons.

1 Group of Cyclists consisting of :—

(*a*) 1 H.Q. company, including a section of 3 groups of machine guns (12 guns) and a section of 3 mortars (58 mm.) carried in lorries.

(*b*) 1 Company of 3 ' péletons,' each of 3 sections of cyclists and 1 group of machine guns (4 guns).

2 Groups each of 3 batteries (4-gun) of horse artillery.

1 Group of 3 squadrons of armoured cars (37 cars).

1 signalling detachment.

1 detachment of cyclist engineers.

1 bridging section.

1 squadron of aeroplanes.

The administrative services with a Light Division include :— Supply; Pay and Postal; Provost *personnel*; Sanitation; Mechanical Transport; Mobile Veterinary Section. For a special task the Light Division may be reinforced by infantry carried in lorries, additional artillery, both guns and howitzers,

Digitized by Google

and aeroplanes. It is probable that tanks would also be allotted in special cases.

The Cavalry Brigade, as shown above, consists of a H.Q. and 2 Regiments each of 4 squadrons; but for the execution of special tasks, machine gun sections, cyclists, and infantry may be attached to the Brigade. Further, when the Brigade is acting independently, additional staff and *personnel* for purposes of *liaison* and communications are added.

Corps Cavalry.—The Corps Cavalry consists of 1 Regiment of 1 H.Q. squadron and 4 squadrons per Army Corps, of which 1 squadron is normally detached for work with each of the 2 divisions of the Corps.

It may be taken that a French Cavalry Regiment is now equal in fire power to a French Infantry Battalion.

The composition of a Corps Cavalry Regiment is as follows :—

H.Q.

1 H.Q. squadron, including a group of machine guns.

2 groups of squadrons, each consisting of H.Q. and 2 squadrons.

Tactically, the Corps Cavalry Regiment is organised as follows :—

(*a*) Regimental H.Q., H.Q. squadron and Corps Reconnaissance Group.

(*b*) Reconnaissance Group of the ' Division de Ligne ' (Infantry Division).

(*a*) The Corps Reconnaissance Group consists of :—

H.Q.

2 squadrons (each of 4 troops and a group of machine guns).

1 company of cyclists of 3 sections and a group of machine guns.

1 ' péleton ' of motor machine guns (4 cars, 5 motor cycles and one wireless set on lorry).

Digitized by Google

(*b*) The Reconnaissance Group of the 'Division de Ligne' consists of:—

H.Q.

1 squadron of 4 troops and a group of machine guns (eventually there will be 2 squadrons with a proportion of the 'division de ligne').

1 company of cyclists of 3 sections and a group of machine guns.

1 'péleton' of motor machine guns (4 cars and 5 motor cycles).

The Corps Reconnaissance Group is employed *en principe* to reinforce the Reconnaissance Groups of the 2 infantry divisions of the Corps, so as to augment the means which these latter dispose of for the missions one or both of them have in hand. A portion, or the whole of the Corps Reconnaissance Group, coming as a reinforcement to one of the Divisional Reconnaissance Groups, passes under the orders of the commander of this latter group, so as in no way to upset the normal system in the division concerned. It is, however, often found an advantage, under these circumstances, to place the whole of this reinforced Group under the orders of the O.C. Corps Cavalry Regiment, as he has the necessary staff, signal services, etc.

When, as is often the case, an Army Corps has no cavalry of the Army operating ahead of it, the Corps Reconnaissance Group can be employed for more distant work; under such circumstances it acts as a detachment to find out some definite information, and not as a screen on the whole corps front.

The Reconnaissance Group of the Infantry Division, assisted by aeroplanes, screens the march of the division and normally acts under the orders of the Advance Guard Commander. If the division has an exposed flank, it operates in conjunction with the Flank Guard, or else undertakes this mission unaided by other troops.

Finally, each of the 3 infantry regiments of a Division is

Digitized by Google

to have a 'péleton' of 25 cavalry scouts (3 sous-officiers, 3 corporals, 19 troopers) commanded by an officer. Henceforth this new organisation will relieve the Divisional and Corps Reconnaissance Groups of all responsibility for finding men for *liaison* duties inside the Division. If a battalion is detached its proportion of mounted scouts will be sent with it.

Frontages. The following are the frontages which are considered by the French as suitable for a squadron and a regiment respectively, though, of course, there can be no fixed formula :—

Squadron.

'Encadre,' *i.e.*, with other units on the flanks, 220–330 yards. 2 troops in line, 2 troops in support.

Isolated or 'encadre' in an action on a wide front, 440–550 yards. 3 troops in line, 1 troop in support.

I. In a big action. Battle in depth with Artillery support.

Regiment.

Offensive. 440–550 yards. 2 squadrons in first line. 2 squadrons in reserve, m.g.s sub-allotted. 1 'fusil mitrailleur' per 33 yards.

Defensive. (1,090–1,650 yards with 2 squadrons on the line of resistance and 2 squadrons in reserve.

II. Action on a wide front; artillery support unorganised ('aléatoire').

Offensive. Surprise by envelopment, 1,300–1,650 yards.

Defensive. 3 squadrons deployed with 3 groups of m.g.s (6 guns). 1 squadron and 1 group of m.g.s (2 guns) in reserve. 1,750–2,200 yards.

Digitized by Google

THE EDITOR OF THE CAVALRY JOURNAL OFFERS A PRIZE FOR THE BEST SOLUTION OF THE FOLLOWING PROBLEM.

The Competition is open to all readers of the CAVALRY JOURNAL.

PROBLEM NO. XVI.

WITH reference to the article in the current issue of the JOURNAL, 'The Mobile Division of the Future,'

How can the weight on the horse be reduced?

Answers to be given under two headings—

(*a*) Where the division hopes to live on the enemy's country;

(*b*) Where little or no food will be obtainable.

The present weight which the horse has to carry is approximately as follows :—

On the Man.

	lbs.	ozs.
Clothing, including boots, braces, cap, drawers, field dressing, great coat, cap comforter, socks, jacket S.D., knife, pay book, pantaloons, puttees, shirt, spurs, Cardigan, soap, towel, respirator -	27	0¾
Arms.—Bayonet and scabbard - - - -	1	8¾
Ammunition, cartridges S.A.A. 100 - - -	6	0
Accoutrements.—Bandolier, water-bottle, haversack, mess-tin, steel helmet, waist belts and frog, ration bags, field glasses, notebook, watch, pipe and tobacco - - - - - - - -	14	10
Add one day's rations - - - - - -	1	9½
Total on Man - - - - -	50	13

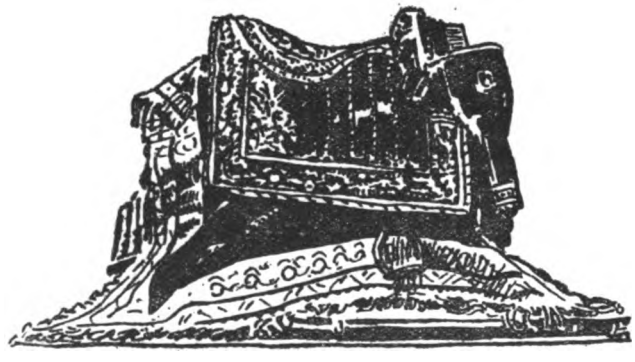
Digitized by Google

On the Horse.

	lbs.	ozs.
Bridle (with head and built-up rope), Saddle (with blanket and rifle bucket), ground sheet, nose bags, surcingle pad, picketing pegs, heel rope, picketing rope, horse rubber, curry comb, sponge, horse shoes in case, water bucket, wallets, horse bandolier, man's blanket, wire cutters, corn, rations one day, hold-all, housewife, change of washing	74	3½
Arms.—Rifle, breech cover, oil-tin, sword, lance, cartridges 90	23	14
Total on Horse	98	1½

	lbs.	ozs.
Total carried on man	50	13
Total carried on horse	98	1½
Weight of average man (10 stone)	140	0
GRAND TOTAL	288	14½

Approximate weight, 20½ stone.



Digitized by Google

THE PRINCE OF WALES'S OWN SCINDE HORSE

(continued)

By Lieut.-Colonel E. B. Maunsell, *p.s.c.*

In late 1857 it was decided to raise a third Regiment, the nucleus being the other two.

The Frontier remained comparatively quiet till 1866, when the Murrees gave trouble. In January, 100 sabres under Ressaldar Mir Kassum Ali encountered a large body and killed and wounded over 50 of them.

A few weeks later a party of 24, under Jemadar Manover Ali, moved in pursuit of some raiders, followed up by 100 sabres under Ressaldar Tej Singh, who caught him up just as he was preparing to engage them.

Both parties charged together, the Murrees losing 15 killed and many wounded. The Jemadar was badly wounded. Ressaldar Tej Singh, having collected the stolen cattle, once more started in pursuit, until the raiders gained the hills. He then brought his detachment back to his post, where he arrived after being 15 hours in the saddle and covering some 70 miles.

In 1867 trouble with Abyssinia led to Lord Napier's expedition, of which the Third Regiment formed part. It was employed with the pioneer force and was thanked in despatches.

Hitherto it had not been the custom to teach irregular horse the sword exercise, but in 1870 orders were issued that it was to be taught.

Digitized by Google

In the same year further symptoms of making the service more regular were the introduction of hussar pattern saddles and evening stables. The saddles were bought in England and were of excellent quality, many being in use in the Regiment in 1900.

At the outbreak of the Afghan War in 1878 the 3rd Sind Horse formed part of General Pallisser's Cavalry Brigade in the advance from Chaman on Kandahar.

A skirmish took place at Takht i Pul, in which a troop took part, but otherwise Kandahar was peacefully occupied. In January, 1879, a reconnaissance under Biddulph moved to Girishk on the Helmund, chiefly to tap new sources of supply. At the end of February it was decided to return to Kandahar, but meanwhile there were rumours of hostile gatherings upstream. In consequence, two Squadrons of the Regiment and 100 rifles of the 29th Bombay Infantry were detached under Colonel Malcolmson, 3rd Sind Horse, to watch the fords from Zamindawar, where the gatherings were most suspected.

This detachment then became the rearguard of Biddulph's force in the withdrawal to Kandahar, remaining one march in rear.

On February 26 it was at Khushk i Nakhud.

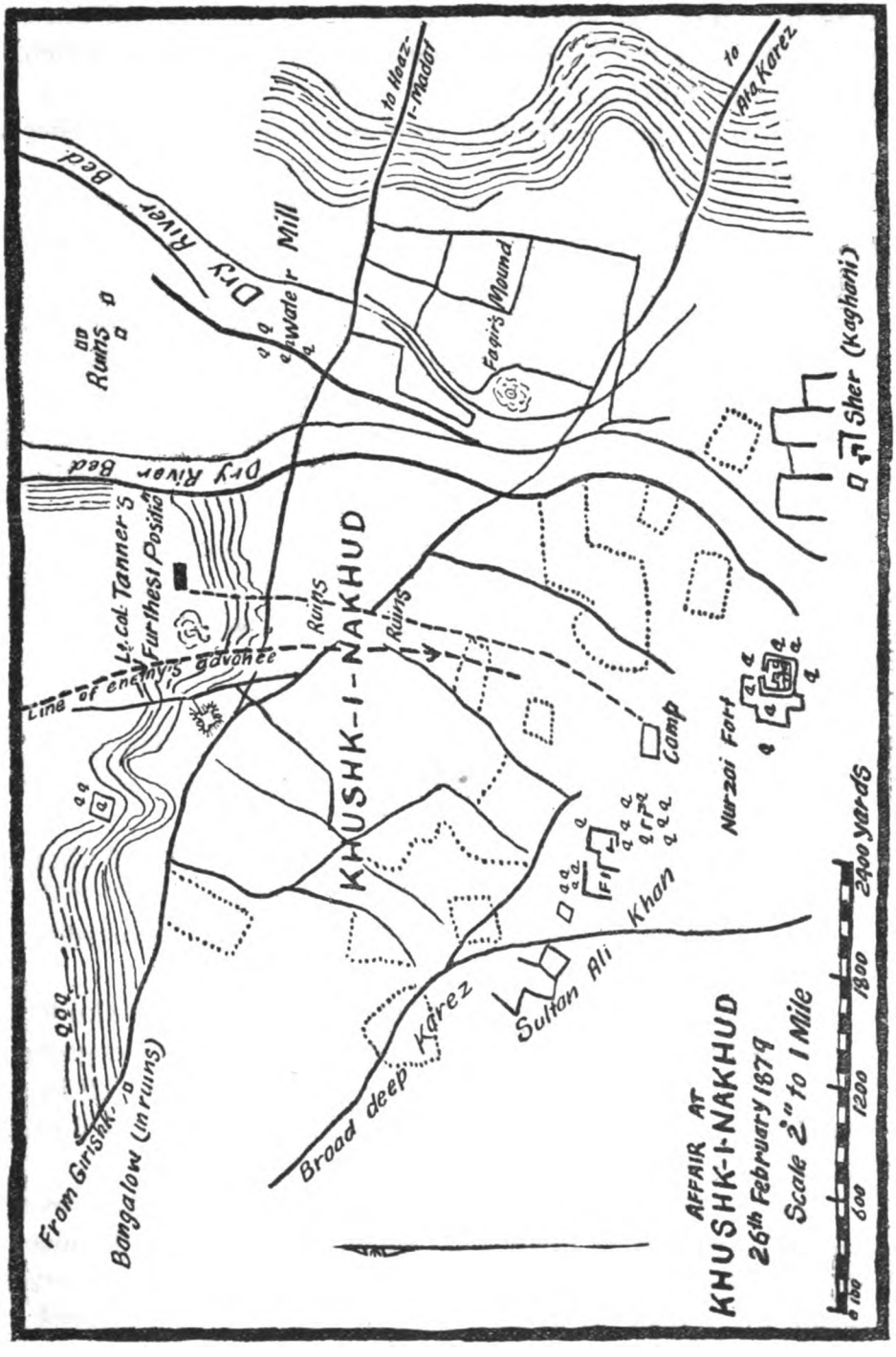
As the situation seemed quiet, Colonel Malcolmson ordered a saddlery inspection in the afternoon, the saddlery being all opened out.

This inspection was in progress when the Regimental grass-cutters were observed urging their camels back to camp at a gallop, while those grass-cutters who had ponies were careering in. This was followed up by a report from the escort that a large body of ghazis were approaching.

Shortly after a mass of tribesmen, with banners, was observed approaching over some high ground about a mile and a half to the North of the camp.

The infantry fell in and the saddlery inspection terminated

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

abruptly. The 100 rifles were directed to move out and draw the enemy over the good going away, from the nullahs, which were to the North-east.

Meanwhile the cavalry got their saddlery hastily together and saddled up.

On the infantry getting the enemy under their fire, the latter edged off to their right, making apparently for the village of Sultan Ali Khan.

The Sind Horse had by now saddled up and fallen in. The two Squadrons charged the hostile left centre, gallantly led by Major Reynolds.

A fierce hand to hand fight, lasting some ten minutes, ensued, when the enemy were forced to retreat, still disputing the ground fiercely.

Reynolds was ordered to pursue, while Colonel Malcolmson, with a portion of his men, tried to intercept a small body of the enemy who were making for Sultan Ali Khan.

The latter, however, encountered a broad and deep kareze and the Afghans succeeded in reaching shelter.

Meanwhile, the rest of the cavalry and a portion of the infantry had been following up the enemy, when, as night was falling, they were called off.

The hostile strength was estimated at some 1,500, of whom 500 were ghazis and 50 horsemen.

Abu Bakka, a notorious robber chief, was reported to have been killed and some 200 others.

Major Reynolds had been hit early in the affair by a bullet, but he still led his men to the attack, and so became engaged in personal encounter with the enemy, when his horse fell in a kareze, and, before he could recover himself, he was cut down and hacked to pieces.

Four of the Sind Horse were killed and twenty-three men wounded, the latter including Colonel Malcolmson. Twenty-eight horses were also lost. The casualties were thus pretty severe for a fight with Afghans.

Digitized by Google

From accounts of Officers who knew the 3rd Sind Horse, it was a regiment considerably above the average of native cavalry of the time and Malcolmson was one of those rare commanding officers of the period who believed in spit and polish, hence the saddlery inspection.

The employment of the infantry as a decoy should be noticed.

This particular action was the most brilliant cavalry episode in the fighting in Southern Afghanistan during the whole war. Malcolmson was awarded the C.B., a great honour in those days. The charge is commemorated by a picture by Major Giles, the well-known artist, who himself served in the Sind Horse.

On the peace of Gandamak the garrison of Kandahar was greatly reduced, the troops belonging to the Force being *écheloned* as far back as Peshin, near Quetta.

When the outbreak at Kabul occurred the 3rd Sind Horse were at Khush Dil Khan, near Peshin. It had suffered much from cholera.

It returned to Kandahar in March, 1880, detaching a Squadron to Khelat i Ghilzai.

The Squadron remained at Khelat i Ghilzai until Roberts picked up the detachment while *en route* to relieve Kandahar. It had, in the meantime, taken part in the action at Sir i Asp on July 1st.

The Maiwand disaster took place on July 27, 1880, and the 3rd Sind Horse had the misfortune to be involved in it. In common with other Bombay troops it was subjected to abuse and ignorant criticism.

There is no reason to suppose the Regiment had in any way fallen off since Khushk i Nakhud; a unit that has carried out a feat of arms that is the talk of the Force does not fall off, provided its Officers are the same.

An account of Maiwand and the events leading up to it form the subject of a special article.

Digitized by Google

Almost immediately after Roberts had relieved Kandahar he fought the battle which routed Ayub.

In this action the Bombay troops watched the Baba Wali Kotal on the right.

When the Afghan army broke the Bombay Cavalry Brigade, consisting of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry and 3rd Sind Horse, was directed to push through the Kotal in pursuit.

Several parties of the enemy were engaged and some 100 Afghans were killed. Most of Ayub's army had, however, dispersed. This latter feature is always one to reckon with in small wars, and for this reason cavalry must be far quicker jumping off than is necessary in the case of war with regular troops.

The Bengal Cavalry Brigade on the extreme left found itself hung up by bad ground and also failed to come up with any regular troops.

The regiment pursued as far as Mansurabad, some 15 miles, returning long after dark to bivouac. Maiwand was thus to some extent avenged.

In 1882 certain reductions were made in both the Bengal and Bombay armies, many regiments being disbanded.

The 3rd Sind Horse, being the junior Regiment in the Bombay cavalry, was broken up, large numbers of its officers and men being absorbed in the two older Regiments.

From accounts of officers who knew the Regiment, it was reckoned as being one of the best units in the Bombay Cavalry, both in war and sport.

A very long and deadly period of peace followed, but the regiments were constantly furnishing escorts to Sir Robert Sandeman and other Political Officers in all parts of Baluchistan and in parts of Persia.

There were many alarms of forays and sundry minor skirmishes, but little more.

Life in this detestable part of the country included all the disadvantages of active service with none of its excitements.

Digitized by Google

Sir Robert Sandeman had, by his able administration, deprived us of the latter.

In 1887 General Luck, a well-known cavalry officer of the time, held a camp of exercise of the Sind Cavalry Brigade at Sibi, one of the first of its kind.

This camp of exercise was much talked of and did an enormity of good. At its conclusion, as a test of endurance, he ordered the First Regiment, now the 5th Bombay Cavalry, and the 7th Bombay Lancers, a newly raised unit, to march across the desert between Sibi and Jacobabad, the principal scene of the exploits of the Sind Horse in its early days.

The Sind Horse completed the distance, 118 miles, in 40 hours, marching *viâ* the foothills.

The 7th Bombay Lancers marched a slightly shorter distance, alongside the present railway line, in 36 hours.

It is believed that the length of this march is nearly a record. The Sind Horse lost no horses as a result of it, extraordinary to relate.

In 1893 the class composition of the Regiment was modified, the enlistment of Sikhs and Pathans commencing.

The composition at this period became one squadron Sikhs, one Pathan, one Hindustani Mussulman, one of Rajputs and Mussulmans of Rajputana.

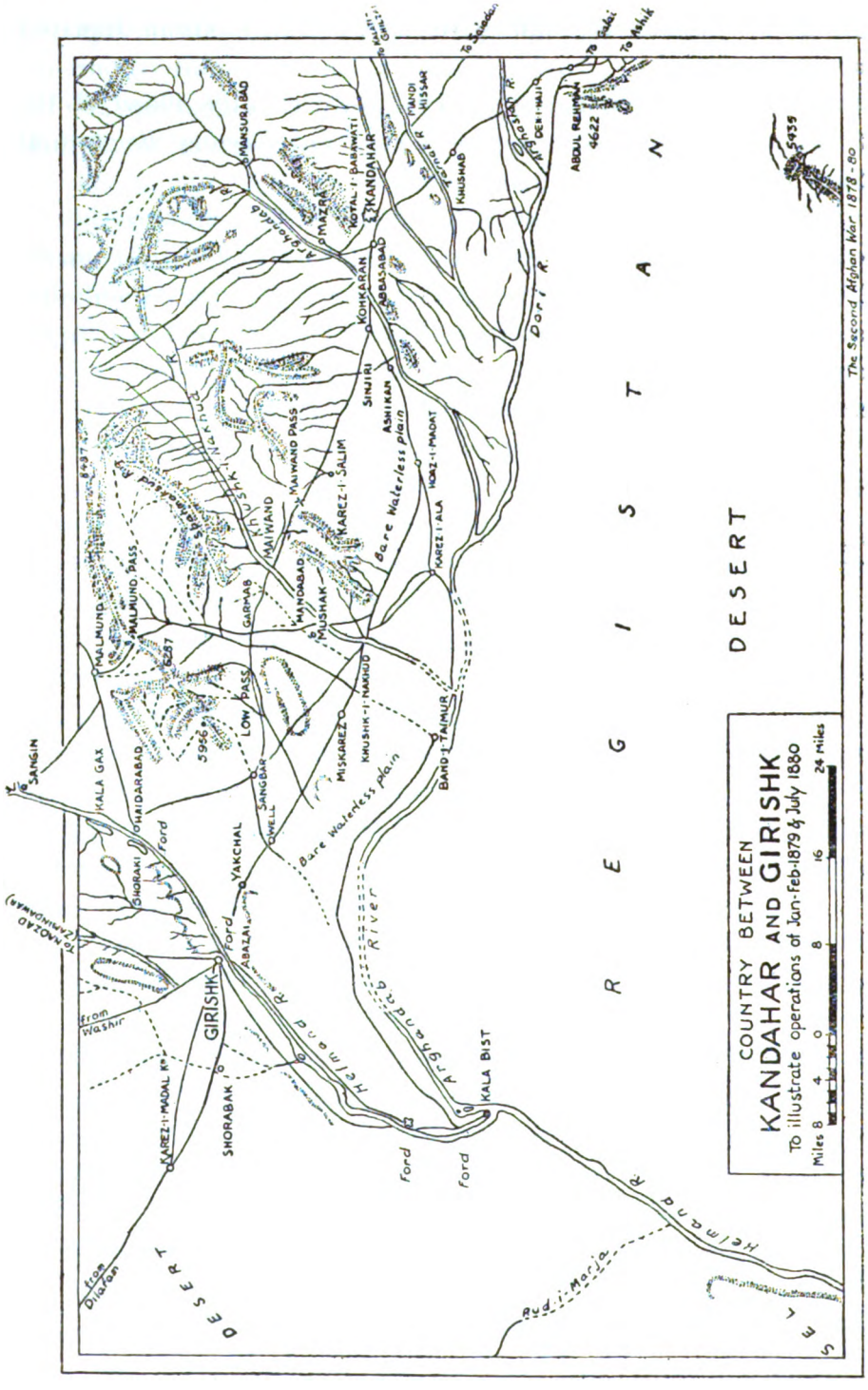
The recruitment of Derajat Mussulmans, in lieu of the Hindustanis and Rajputs, commenced a few years later and continued until the end of the Great War, when the recruitment of Mussulman Rajputs again commenced.

In 1899 trouble suddenly broke out in Mekran and a small expedition was despatched in great haste from Karachi. 50 sabres of the Second Regiment, then the 6th Bombay Cavalry, under Lieutenant Naylor, accompanied it, but landed late.

The Mekranis opposed the advance at the southern entrance of the pass leading to Turbat from Pasni at a point called Gokh Prusht.

Their number was estimated at some 1,500.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

The cavalry had not arrived when the action opened, having only reached camp, after a series of double marches, that morning. On hearing the gunfire it saddled up at once and arrived in time to take a prominent part in the attack, being detached to act dismounted from some high ground on the enemy's right.

The Mekranis were routed, leaving some 200 dead on the ground. No pursuit was possible owing to the mountains. Subsequently many forts were destroyed, and there was much hard marching in this particularly noisome country.

In 1901 trouble broke out afresh. Mekran and the Persian border were a first-class area for raids and counter-raids on the part of the numerous petty chieftains who lived in strong mud forts, much in the same manner as our baronial forefathers. There were no British troops within some 600 miles, and the Persian troops were troops of the opera bouffe.

Some local levies were the only so-called forces in favour of law and order, and the idea of war possessed by them was that it must be made as safe as possible. Their ideas on the capacities of the Snider rifles and carbines with which they were armed were remarkable, for they considered 1,000 yards the closest range they should fight at.

It is not altogether to be wondered at, therefore, that the many turbulent barons thoroughly enjoyed themselves. Some most daring and skilful raids were carried out as far as 150 miles inside the British border by a couple of chieftains who resided some 80 miles inside the Persian frontier.

In order to give some semblance of law and order, arrangements were made with the Persian Government to despatch a small expedition from Karachi, under Major Tighe (now Sir Michael Tighe), of which 50 sabres of the First Regiment, under Lieutenant Maunsell, formed part.

This Force was to cross the Persian border and co-operate with some Persian troops brought down by the Governor of Kirman. Before it did so, however, it had to reduce a fort

Digitized by Google

called Nodiz, which the above-mentioned levies had been besieging for the last five months—the siege being conducted on very safe lines, the besieged being free to move out and raid if they thought fit. The Cavalry and mountain battery marched the whole way from Jacobabad, some 600 miles, in six weeks, and arrived after a forced march of 60 miles in 30 hours, just in time to take part in the attack and capture of Nodiz by the 27th Baluchis.

The Force then moved on into Persian territory and met the Persian troops at Magas, the baronial castle of one of the most prominent raiders.

The Persian troops had shown considerable discretion in not attempting the capture of this place and had not even ventured to attempt an investment—such an operation involved too much danger apparently.

On the arrival of the British, however, the chieftain of Magas surrendered, the news of the fate of Nodiz having reached him. His fort was enormously strong and its surrender was welcomed with relief by many in the Force, for mountain artillery would have been useless against the solid clay walls.

Numerous other forts subsequently surrendered and were destroyed, but all resistance had ceased.

In 1905 Lord Kitchener re-organised the whole of the Indian Army and, to the immense joy of all ranks, the Sind Horse ceased to be a local unit, having surrendered with alacrity all so-called privileges connected with service in Sind or Baluchistan.

There is not the slightest doubt that localisation of units in a dull country where there is no longer the stimulus of constant fighting is harmful. Certain high Civil authorities wished to retain the Regiments as local troops on the ground that they knew the country and the people. It takes but little time to learn these points provided the discipline and training of units is sound.

Digitized by Google

It was with relief that the Regiments finally turned their backs on this most evil of evil lands and moved to stations where facilities for training were greater and where they were brought into contact with other troops. The records of both Regiments in the Great War, and subsequently in the Arab Rebellion, show that they have in no way fallen off from the days of John Jacob.

NAPOLEON'S ARABS

Major Schill, a celebrated German Legion Cavalry Officer, in 1807 took from Napoleon several beautiful Arabian horses, which had been presented to him by the Sultan. Enraged at this loss, the Emperor set a price of 100 napoleons on Schill's head. The latter gave himself little concern about the menaces of the French Emperor, on whose head he, in his turn, set a price, and, to show how little he valued him, the sum offered was a very small one. Napoleon was very fond of these horses and sent to demand them from Schill, at the same time promising to pay him 4,000 crowns in gold or whatever sum they might be worth. His letter was addressed: 'Au Capitaine des Brigands, Schill.' Schill's answer to him was as follows: 'Dear Brother, I am more than pleased at having taken 7 of your horses, as I see by your letter that you put so great a value upon them, but I cannot accept the 4,000 crowns in gold. I am not in any want of money and should the occasion arise I can always find sufficient in the military chests of the French Army, which I am sure to take. If, however, instead of this you will replace the four horses which you stole from the Brandenburg Gate in Berlin, you shall have those I have taken from you without further payment.' The letter was addressed as follows: 'Au Colonel de tous les Brigands, mon honorable frère Napoléon.'

A. L.

Digitized by Google

REMINISCENCES OF SOLDIER JOCKEYS IN BYGONE DAYS

(continued)

By Lieut.-Colonel T. B. Phillips, O.B.E.

Ding McDougal, of the 13th, was a name to conjure with in India; for twelve years he was quartered in the plains, and the whole time burnt the candle at both ends. At one time he was quite the best soldier jockey in India, and owned several very famous racehorses. When the regiment left India he sold several of his best racehorses to a certain Rajah; no cheque arrived, and after six months in England he decided to exchange back to India, and offered to bet large sums that before he had been in India a week the money would be paid. Knowing Ding very well I should not have liked to get on the wrong side of him, and so did the Rajah, and on Ding's arrival in Bombay he found a cheque in settlement waiting for him. Ding only rode one race in England, which was rather a fiasco.

A brother officer had a useful mare called Soubrette. She was entered for a two-mile Hurdle Race at a race meeting near Slough. They had taken over a beautiful old house and were going to turn it into a club with a racecourse, polo ground, &c., &c., and cut out Sandown, Hurlingham, &c. The meeting duly took place and we formed a party of three, not including the mare Soubrette. We were full of expectations, as it was thought we had a good thing. The race started, but at a hurdle just opposite the stand she overjumped herself

Digitized by Google

and pecked badly. Ding went behind her ears and tried to get back to the plate but had to go on to the floor. This cost him 150 yards, but the mare was only beat by three lengths, and so our good thing went west. Percy Smith, who was doing secretary and manager to this club, asked us to stay to dinner, saying there was a train to London about twelve midnight. We accepted and were done tophole, but unfortunately when we arrived at Slough we found the last train had left at 11.30. We were due on parade at 8 a.m. the next morning at Colchester. What were we to do? No kit, but we vegetated to a second-class pub. where I remember going to bed, leaving Ding greatly interested in a very plain barmaid. We arrived next morning and got on parade just when they were coming home; awful ructions, but in those days it was the usual thing to make some allowance for delays due to racing. Percy Smith had rather a funny career. He started in an Infantry regiment, and owned a few fair horses on the turf; anyway, in the long run he went broke and left the Service. He vegetated all over the world, was in the embassy at Peking when besieged by the Boxers, managed a big hotel in San Francisco, came back to England and took on the Raleigh Club, and ended as Secretary of the St. James's Club, which he ran for years. He was a most amusing man and, as for feeding, no one could beat him.

Another famous Indian jockey was the late Captain Frank Shakespear, 4th Bengal Cavalry. He headed the gentlemen riders in India for two years during the early nineties, riding for Lord William Beresford, Colonel P. K. Beaver, Mr. Jimmy Macleod, and Mr. Lawrie Johnson, for whom he won many races, including two Indian Grand Nationals.

Perhaps his best performance was with an Arab pony owned by Mr. W. B. Wishart, 'Lal Khan,' which animal was never defeated, and won for his owner some 25,000 rupees in stakes, a large sum in those days.

Although nearly six feet in height, he was able to ride

Digitized by Google

nine stone three pounds, had the best of hands and an iron nerve, riding under the name of Mr. Childe.

This officer failed for the Service and then enlisted, I think, in the 10th Hussars. Within a year he was Rough Riding Sergeant-Major, and got his commission in under two years.

Woolmer, of the Lancashire Fusiliers, rode a lot of winners in India. He was not a good horseman, but out there had great success. He was the son of a parson, and tried to live on his pay. One night I dined with him at his mess; it was a guest night. He confided in me that he was broke to the world and must make a bit that night. I noticed that he did not drink anything at mess and towards the end of the dinner, when the others had done themselves fairly well, he backed himself then and there to run round the barrack square so many times in so many minutes. He got on a good deal of money and then proceeded to accomplish the feat well inside the time. The next time I met him was in London, and he told me he had exchanged to India and was trying to persuade Father Cox to advance him enough money to get there. This was accomplished, and Woolmer, with a greyhound bitch, proceeded on board the transport. The bitch on the voyage out presented him with a litter of pups; on arrival in Bombay these were sold, and with the proceeds a pony was bought. The pony turned out one of the best in India and won a lot of races, and was the foundation of a very successful racing stable, a lot of money being won. Leaving India some years later he had a very good sale, and came home full of money, but I am afraid most of it was lost racing in Ireland in a very short time. The last time I saw him he drove over fifteen miles in an open dogcart to dine with me, and on his return he got wet through to the skin, caught a chill, and never recovered.

Reggie Ward, of the Horse Guards, was one of the best of the soldier riders in his day. The best horse he ever owned was Cathal, on whom he was second in the National won by Drogheda. The first time I met Cathal was rather disas-

Digitized by Google

trous to me. I had taken a mare down to run at a small meeting in Ireland where I thought the opposition would not be very strong. However, Cathal turned up, but was not good enough to win, being second to a mare called First Prize. The following week he was sold to go to England, I think for £1,500.

Duncan Aikman, of the 13th Hussars, had the makings of a very fine race rider. Unfortunately he suffered from the same complaint as the Shaver and had no use for bed. His elbow was also apt to move a bit too often. He was very keen, but would never give himself a chance. On one occasion, when quartered in Ireland, he took his long leave and came to London. He arranged with Woodland, who trained near Epsom, to go down and ride gallops. Woodland was really a cab proprietor in London with a strong liking for steeplechasing, and any horse he came across at Aldridges or elsewhere with a long tail and a bit of blood was immediately bought, the animal being sent to Epsom, tried and schooled over jumps; if no good he reverted to the shafts of a cab. Duncan was young in those days, and in spite of sitting up all night till it was time to catch a 5 a.m. train seemed to thrive on it, but it could not last. On one occasion Duncan gave me a very uncomfortable half-hour. He left the regiment but came to stay with us for the Dundlak races; Woolmer was one of the party. He had a steeplechase horse that he wanted to sell and Duncan was very keen to buy it. There was a difference of £300 in the price Duncan was prepared to give and what Woolmer asked, and they haggled over it for two days. On the last night we were playing whist, and very early in the morning we decided to have one more rubber. I cut with Duncan, and Woolmer was playing with Jim Maher. Before we started Woolmer said to Duncan: 'If I win the rubber you pay me my price, if you win you can have the horse at your price.' A difference of £300! We started, and they won the first game and we the second; then they proceeded to get the first six tricks of the last game, and to win we had

Digitized by Google

to get the last seven. It was an anxious time for me, but we did it, and Duncan got his horse and saved £300 on the deal.

Bobby Fisher, of the 10th Hussars, was a very fine but rather unfortunate rider. The doctors made a good thing out of him, as on various occasions he broke both legs, both arms, both collar bones, several ribs, dislocated both shoulders, and had concussion seven times. He might have won the National, but, owing to one of his accidents, he sold Roquefort a short time before the horse won the National; this was bad luck for Bobby. Roquefort had already been placed third in this event. In 1887 he won the Gold Cup on Dalesman, and in 1876 topped the list of gentlemen riders.

Another 10th Hussar, Junks Onslow, was hard to beat. He met an untimely end in the early part of the war. He was shipping remounts and met with an accident that killed him. Junks had the reputation of being the rudest man in the British Army. On one occasion we were playing bridge. A newly-joined subaltern, an Irishman, was impressed to make the fourth, who hardly knew one card from another. One hand he led absolutely the last card he should have done; it suited my hand and saved the game. Junks was furious and said to the boy: 'I suppose you looked over my hand to see what card to lead.' The boy came to me the next morning to ask my advice. He said Major Onslow had accused him of cheating at cards, what was he to do? I laughed, and said he was not to worry and I would see about it. I went to Junks and told him that he had accused the boy of cheating at cards the previous night. I said the boy was in an awful state and had asked my advice, whether to call out Major Onslow or shoot himself. Junks at first did not remember saying anything about it, but when I quoted his words he remembered. He sent for the boy and apologised profusely. Poor Junks often blurted out things he regretted afterwards.

Junks won the Gold Cup three times; in 1888 on Bertha, 1898 on County Council, and in 1903 on Marpessa; he also

Digitized by Google

won the Irish Grand Military three times, and the Maiden Military Chase five times. The best horse he ever rode was a horse called Covert Hack. In 1899, 1901, and 1903 he won the Cunningham Cup at Punchestown with this horse.

General Burn-Murdoch, of the Royals, won the Grand Military Gold Cup twice, once on Larva and again on the Midshipmite. The Midshipmite (the property of Captain Powell, a gunner) was about the best horse he ever rode and would jump any course, but could not get more than 3½ miles. He finally went as charger to Colonel Schofield, V.C., who was on the Staff at Aldershot. Schofield told me it was almost impossible to get him to jump the smallest ditch.

Captain W. Murray-Threipland, Grenadier Guards, was rather too heavy to get as much riding as he would have liked. In 1899 he won the Grand Military on Lambay, which, I think, was his last ride in public. He had a great success at the Household Brigade meetings, winning the Brigade Cup four times and being third twice. On a horse called Traynor he won 23 races out of 26, and on Frontier 27 out of 53.

I have forgotten to mention one of the best riders of the early '80s who could hold his own against anyone—Percy Bewicke of the 15th Hussars, who was also a very fine polo player. After leaving the Service he managed a famous racing stable, and afterwards, for a few years, trained in the North. He is now established at Newmarket and pulls off a fair number of races. The best horses Captain Bewicke ever rode were Cameronian, The Primate, Lady Helen, and, last but not least, Soliman; on this latter horse he won the big hurdle race at Auteuil. He headed the gentlemen riders in 1891 and 1892.

Since the first part of my article appeared in the January number I have received a letter which contains the following amusing story about Jonas Hunt:—

He was for many years tenant of my uncle's place, Boyton Manor, and for some reason there was a High Court writ out against him.

Digitized by Google

He swore and let it be well known round the village that, if the bailiff came near him, he would shoot him, and always went about with a pistol butt sticking out of each coat pocket.

The bailiff heard that Jonas went to his bath every morning to a little dressing-room next door to his bedroom, and when Jonas was seated in the middle of one of those old-fashioned flat brown baths trying to sponge the small of his back, the bailiff rushed in with the writ; but he, the bailiff, never thought he was dealing with the A.D.C. to the famous Lord Cardigan, and that he had been through the Light Brigade charge. Jonas up with his pistols, fires at the bailiff; the bailiff bolts, leaving the writ on the floor. The bullet made a hole in the oak panelling, which is always kept sacred and honoured.

The sequel is very interesting.

The bailiff goes off to the police-station, down comes the local Superintendent and marches Jonas off to the lock-up.

Jonas Hunt's man of law finds out that the writ was about six hours out of date. Jonas Hunt, therefore, had the right of shooting an intruder rushing at him when in his bath, and got off all police proceedings. He then got heavy charges against the High Sheriff of the county. The High Sheriff, being a friend of his, they dined together in London and tossed double or quits; but he got £300 out of the firm who issued the writ. So Jonas scored all along the line.

I last saw him at Bibury Races the year in which he died.

It may be a point of interest to you to know that Queen Victoria always asked for him to be Officer to her escort, whenever he was in the neighbourhood, disregarding whatever Regiment it was.

I had my finger in the bullet hole only a fortnight ago.

David Campbell, 9th Lancers, holds a record that I think will stand for many years and very likely be never beaten. In one year, 1896, he rode the Soarer, starting at 40 to 1, to victory in the Grand National; won the Grand Military and played in the winning teams of the Regimental and Subalterns Polo Tournaments; but for bad luck, he would have added a win in the National Hunt Race. He was to have ridden Ludgershall, but took a bad toss in the previous race, so Ripley got a chance winning mount on Ludgershall, which won easily. David had ridden the horse in all his schooling gallops and knew him from A to Z.

He did well during the War, and is now a Lieut.-General and a K.C.B., an excellent advertisement for Polo and Race-Riding.

There are many other soldier jockeys whom I should like to have mentioned but space forbids.

Digitized by Google

The late CAPTAIN JONAS HUNT, 4th Light Dragoons.

(He rode in the Charge of the Light Brigade at Balaclava).

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A CAVALRY CHARGE IN THE WESTERN DESERT: THE DORSET YEOMANRY AT AGAGIA

By an Eye-Witness

Although Egypt proper remained fairly peaceful during the winter 1915-16, clouds had for some time been gathering on the Western Frontier. Here Egypt marches with Tripoli, and when the Italians entered the War their troops in occupation were withdrawn to the coast line. A certain number of Turkish troops, with guns, had been sent to harass the Italians, and in November, 1915, it was reported that they had joined the Senussi tribe, who lived in the Libyan Desert. Later it was ascertained that two Turkish Generals, Gaafar Pasha and Nuri Bey (brother of Enver Pasha), with a Turco-German staff, were organising this force of Turks and Senussis, and that the Berbers and Bedouins of Tripoli had thrown in their lot with them. This constituted a threat to Egypt, and our advanced posts at Sidi Barrani and Sollum were withdrawn to Mersa Matruh and Dabaa, the railhead of the Western line.

The Turkish Generals with their German staff soon made their presence felt and considerable liveliness was experienced on this front during November and December, 1915. Two successful engagements were fought in December, when it was found that the enemy were well provided with machine guns (reported to have been transported by submarines) and that an increased number of Turkish officers and N.C.O.s had joined them.

Towards the middle of February, 1916, aeroplane reconnaissance disclosed a large force of the enemy entrenched at

Digitized by Google

Agagia, 80 miles west of Mersa Matruh. It was also reported that Barrani and Sollum were strongly held.

General Payton, who had recently been appointed to the command of the Western Force, immediately dispatched a column under Brig.-General Lukin, commanding the South African Infantry Brigade, to deal with these forces.

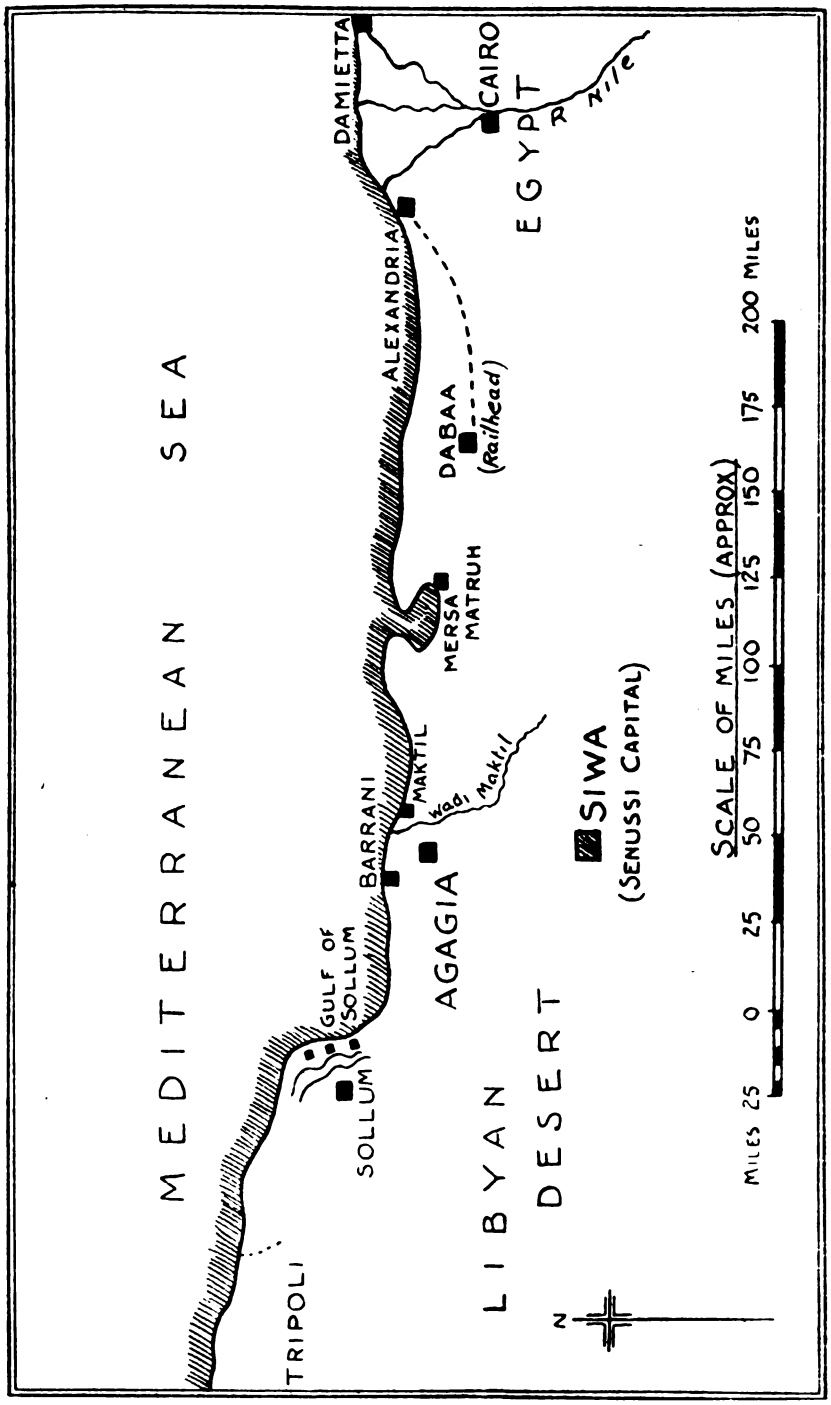
Lukin's column consisted of Notts. Battery R.H.A., Dorset Yeomanry, 1st Squadron Bucks Hussars, Armoured Car Squadron, S.A. Infantry Brigade, 1st Field Company Kentish Territorial Engineers.

It marched out from Mersa Matruh on February 20th, and on the morning of the 25th reached Wadi Maktil, about four miles north of the enemy's entrenched position. The bivouac at Maktil was shelled by the enemy just after sunset on the 25th; these guns were immediately engaged by the Notts. Battery and silenced. In anticipation of a night attack on the bivouac at Maktil, the original plan of a night march and assault at dawn was altered in favour of daylight operations on the 26th.

The night of February 25/26 passed without incident, and at five o'clock on the morning of the 26th the cavalry moved out under the command of Colonel H. M. W. Souter, of the Indian Cavalry, then commanding the Dorset Yeomanry, to locate and reconnoitre the enemy's position. Supported by the main body, four officers' patrols were pushed forward to reconnoitre, and it was found that the enemy were occupying their original entrenched position at Agagia. Aeroplane reconnaissance confirmed the cavalry reports that there were no outlying detachments, and it was clear that the entire force of the enemy were concentrated at Agagia. The cavalry occupied a line of sandhills overlooking the enemy's position from the North, whilst the officers' patrols continued their reconnaissance working round both flanks.

The position occupied by the enemy consisted of a series of sandhills and sand dunes, a mile in length and 2 miles in

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

depth, situated on a small plateau in the Libyan Desert. This area had been entrenched and wired at vulnerable points. The ground sloped gently down towards the sea to the north and also, in a lesser degree, to the east and west. The enemy thus had a commanding and clear view of the ground on three sides, and could operate over a comparatively large area on interior lines. For an attacking force there was not a particle of cover, and it was difficult to concentrate an attack on so ill-defined a position. Further, the absence of any natural feature, such as a river or a main approach, precluded the selection of an objective for the cavalry on the enemy's line of retreat. All that cavalry could do was to get behind the enemy, pen them in in this position, and pounce on them in the plain if they tried to escape.

At 9.20 a.m., after receiving reports, General Lukin moved from Maktil with the remainder of his column (Notts. R.H.A., 1st South African Infantry Brigade, and Field Company R.E.) to attack the enemy's position. As soon as this column came within view of the cavalry, Colonel Souter left his troops in observation and rode back to report in person to the column commander and receive his instructions. He was given the difficult task of cutting off the enemy's retreat.

Returning to his command he gave the order to mount, and moved round the western flank to seize a small range of sandhills at the south-west corner of the enemy's position, where a number of tracks leading into the desert had the appearance of a possible line of retreat. During the advance the enemy brought their machine guns to the western flank of their position and opened a heavy fire on the Yeomanry, but the squadrons were widely extended, and only a few horses were hit. On reaching the first objective a dismounted advance was made from ridge to ridge of the sandhills to pin the enemy more closely to his ground, and prevent the escape of small detachments. The enemy quickly transferred machine guns to meet this attack, and Major J. Goodden, second-in-

Digitized by Google

command of the Dorset Yeomanry, was seriously wounded while leading his men in one of the rushes. The co-operation of the armoured cars in these operations was most effective, although the sand-dunes rendered their movements very difficult.

About midday, the Notts. R.H.A. commenced their bombardment of the enemy's position, which heralded the commencement of the main attack. The infantry had to advance over an open plain without a particle of cover, and the enemy quickly moved their machine guns again to meet this new threat. The South African Brigade, in spite of the natural disadvantages under which their attack was launched, advanced with the greatest dash and determination and drove the enemy from position to position. It was a really fine performance. As soon as the exact direction of the infantry attack could be accurately gauged the cavalry moved to a second position due south of it, immediately opposite the centre of this attack, and were ready to deal with an enemy retreat in any direction. About 1.30 p.m., a standing patrol reported that a convoy of camels was issuing from the south-east corner of the sand-hills. The squadron of the Bucks Hussars was dispatched to capture this convoy. They dealt faithfully and effectively with it. The whole of the enemy's baggage was captured, his tents and impedimenta burnt, and the escort killed or made prisoners to a man. The camels, however, were another business, as anyone who has had experience of these beasts can appreciate, and the panorama of the gallant yeoman, struggling in unequal contest with the refractory camel, or chasing the fleeing dromedary across the Libyan Desert, was one not easily to be forgotten.

About 1.45 a message was received from General Lukin, stating that the infantry had launched their attack and that the enemy were retiring. He trusted that the cavalry would prevent their escape. Soon afterwards the enemy were seen issuing from the eastern flank of the sand-hills, and it was

Digitized by Google

found that machine guns had been posted on the surrounding bluffs to cover their retirement. Orders were sent to the squadron of the Bucks Hussars to return at once. Unfortunately this order miscarried and never reached the Squadron Commander.*

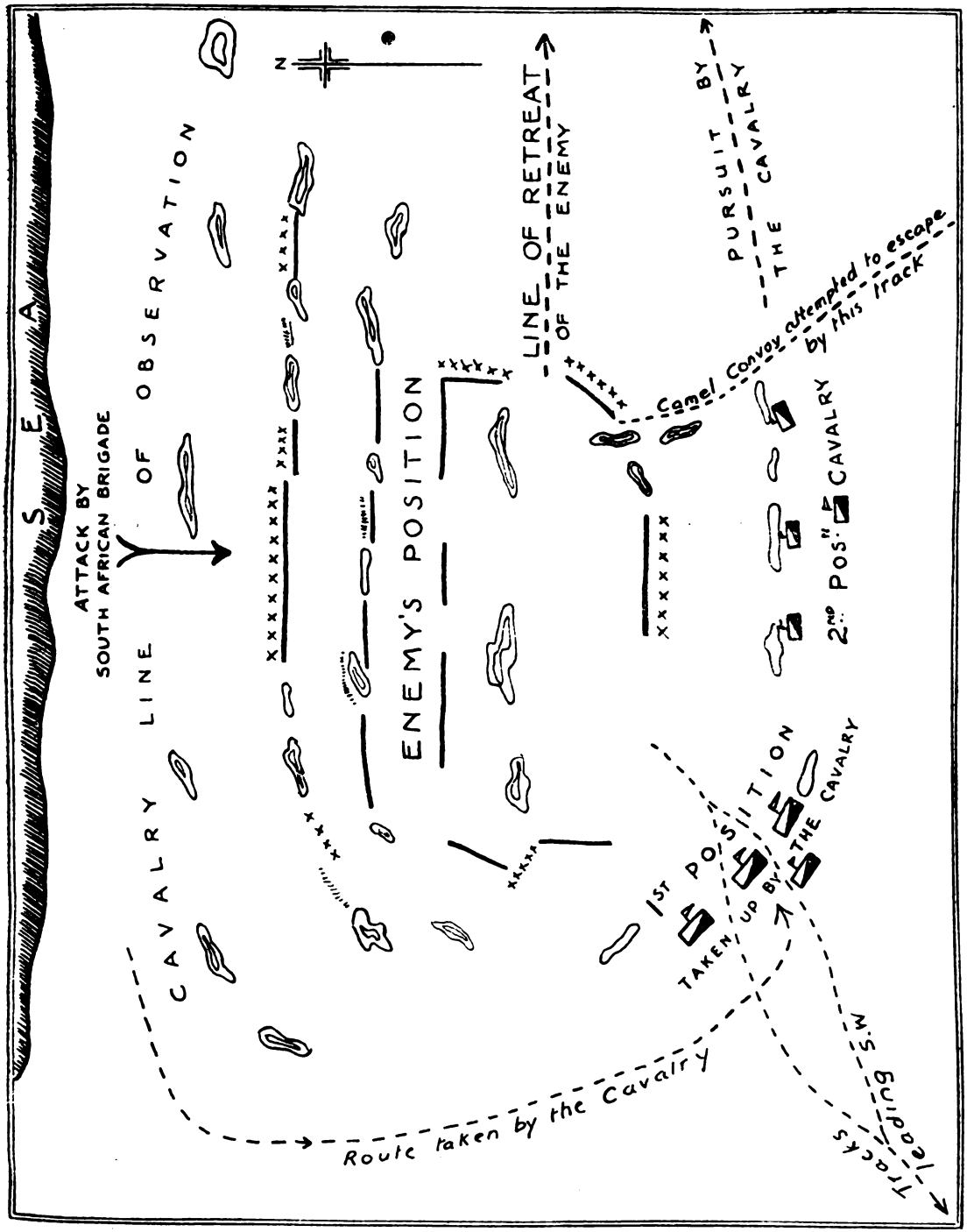
After a personal reconnaissance the Cavalry Commander came to the conclusion that the force retiring was the main body of the enemy, who were now attempting to escape under cover of a strong rear guard, which included the machine guns.

As the sand-hills were protected by intermittent wire and trenches, he decided to let the enemy get well clear of this position before launching his attack, and ordered his column to move on parallel to their line of retreat. About 3 o'clock he called a halt to give the horses a breather, and after a careful inspection of the enemy and the intervening ground through his glass, came to the conclusion that all conditions were favourable, and that he would attack at once without waiting for the return of the Bucks Squadron, who were still out of sight. It had been intended that this squadron should form the 3rd or 'mopping-up' line in the attack, but in order to make no changes at the last moment, the attack was launched with the first two lines as arranged, composed solely of Dorset Yeomanry.

The advance was made for a distance of about 1,200—1,400 yards over a slightly ascending plain. The enemy's rear guard was admirably handled, and with it were all the machine guns, and there was no getting away from them. The only thing to do was to gallop them, and get into the enemy beyond with the sword. In spite of the machine-gun fire, the squadrons advanced with the utmost steadiness. About 50 yards from the enemy the order was given to charge,

* The cheer of the Dorsets when they charged was actually heard by the Squadron Commander, although several miles distant. As he fancied he could also discern the sound of galloping horses, he knew something was afoot. He immediately rallied his squadron and moved with all speed towards 'the sound of the guns,' but unfortunately arrived too late.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

and with a yell the gallant Dorsets hurled themselves upon the enemy, who stood with great determination till the lines of galloping horsemen got fairly into them. Then at last they broke, and getting beyond the control of their officers fled, literally howling, across the Desert.

The effect of this charge on the nerve of the enemy machine gunners was instructive. At first, when the squadrons were but a distant line of extended horsemen, the plain was well swept by half-a-dozen guns. As the squadrons got nearer the fire was less accurate and apt to be wild. At the last the firing was very wild and only half the guns kept going.

In the middle of the enemy's lines Colonel Souter's horse was killed, and he was brought down within 50 yards of where the Turkish General, Gaafar Pasha, was standing, surrounded by his staff. When the galloping squadrons had passed on Colonel Souter, with Lieut. Blakesley and Trooper Brown, who had also had their horses killed, approached and demanded the surrender of the Turkish General and his staff: the timely arrival of the machine-gun troop enabled this important capture to be placed beyond the possibility of rescue. The other Turkish General, Nuri Bey, was sabred and left for dead on the battlefield, but was carried away after dark.

The squadrons pursued and hunted the enemy in all directions over the Desert. One incident of the pursuit must be chronicled. Lieut. Paulet, Dorset Yeomanry, rallied his troop and struck out a line of his own. He had been twice wounded in the charge and was determined to have his revenge. Of fine physique and a good swordsman, he literally mowed a lane through the retreating enemy, till he was shot from behind at the range of a few yards while in hand-to-hand conflict with a group who had turned at bay. It was the search for his body that revealed the execution done by him and his troop, as their attack could easily be followed by the sheaves of dead Senussis.

The casualties in this charge were somewhat severe, if we

Digitized by Google

include those in the pursuit, when men got isolated or were shot from behind. Five officers and twenty-nine other ranks were killed, and five officers and thirty other ranks wounded; eighty-five horses were killed or had to be destroyed.*

The enemy's loss was computed at the time at about 300 sabred; but subsequent information placed it at a far higher figure. Apart from the casualties, there can be no doubt as to the moral effect of this charge on the enemy, and it is not too much to say that he never fought seriously again. The opinion of the higher command is expressed in the following extract from the records of the Dorset Yeomanry. General Peyton, in a letter, describes aptly the effect this charge had on further operations.

'That charge,' he says, 'following the brilliant infantry attack by the S. A. Infantry Brigade, settled this small campaign, and although we did not reap its full fruits until some three weeks later, it was the battle of Agagia, in which the Dorset Yeomanry took so leading a part, which really sealed the fate of the combined Turks and Senussis who had contemplated an attack on Egypt. . . .'

The remark made by Gaafar Pasha the day after his capture to a British officer was illuminating. He had got over his shock and was inclined to be contemptuous. 'C'était magnifique, mais ce n'est pas selon les règles;' then he added, 'It is only British Cavalry who would have done that.'

* General Lukin, when he saw that the Dorset Yeomanry had been engaged over a wide area in the Desert, sent a whole battalion, although they had taken part in the infantry attack earlier in the day, to assist the Dorset Yeomanry parties in recovering their wounded. By this means every wounded man was recovered a clear hour before sunset.

Digitized by Google

THE TRAINING OF YOUNG PLAYERS AT POLO IN THE CAVALRY

By Lieut.-Colonel E. D. Miller, C.B.E., D.S.O.,
President of the County Polo Association.

Much has been written lately on the subject of why Polo has deteriorated in England, and why there are not as many good teams and individual players now as there were before the War.

Reasons have been given by many of the best authorities which may be summed up as follows :—

1st. Losses in the War, when not only many of the best players, among whom were Captain F. St. J. Atkinson, Hodgson's Horse; Captain Leslie Cheape, K. D. Gds.; Captain F. Grenfell, 9th Lancers; R. Grenfell, E. H. Leatham, 12th Lancers; B. Osborne, 15th Hussars,—all players of international class; and two old internationals, Captain Noel Edwards, 9th Lancers, and Captain Herbert Wilson lost their lives, but also a very large number of other leading players and potential first class players were killed or badly wounded.

Also for nearly seven years hardly any players were trained. For two years after the Armistice most of the Cavalry Regiments were distributed about Ireland, Palestine, Turkey, the Rhine and Mesopotamia. The result of this was that promising young players on starting again in 1920 found that they could not play as well as when they left off in 1914.

2nd. The largely increased expense of the game. Ponies are expensive and scarce; wages have doubled; forage is more expensive, and railway fares are nearly doubled.

Digitized by Google

This is not likely to improve in the immediate future.

3rd. The great increase in the number of motors kept, which means that the 'new rich' do not keep ponies for their boys, who can all drive a motor or ride a motor-bicycle, but who do not learn to ride.

The 'new poor' cannot keep both motors and horses, so, as a rule, they do without horses and keep a motor.

Perhaps, when the 'new rich' learn to appreciate the joys of country life, they will find out the value of a horse, and will have their boys taught to ride. A very great deal is being done in hunting countries and in the horse-shows all over England in this direction by getting up children's sports on ponies and by giving prizes for riding competitions to children at the horse-shows. These boys and girls ride extraordinarily well.

4th. The scarcity of good polo grounds and practice grounds in England.

This is hard to rectify, for London Polo has lost seven grounds near London since 1914, and only gained one (viz., Templeton); but this does not apply to India, where good practice grounds are not scarce.

5th. The increased size of the polo pony, which makes it far more difficult to train and ride and which causes the production of a far higher percentage of failures.

This difficulty is likely to right itself in time, but at present few really good 14·2 and 14·3 ponies are bred. Before 1914 it was easy enough to get a good green 14·2 pony; now it is difficult. This is due, I think, to so many small mares being destroyed in the War, and to the terrible conditions in Ireland, which was formerly our chief source of supply. At present we have to depend chiefly on the Argentine.

6th. The boys who were not old enough to fight had nothing to ride, and with their fathers at the front had no one to teach them.

Digitized by Google

The result of all this is that we have very few good, experienced players under 40 years of age. The teams that won the Roehampton Open Cup, Ranelagh Open Cup, the Champion Cup and the Inter-Regimental averaged in age 42 years, and only two of them will ever see 40 again.

Only time can ameliorate the effects of the War. 35 years is the prime of life for a polo player, experience is essential in polo, and a man seldom makes an international player till he has had at least five years' experience of first class polo behind him.

But I am writing for the Cavalry, whose difficulties are not so great as those of their civilian brethren, especially if they are quartered in India.

They have, as a rule, free stabling, soldier grooms, forage at Government rates, probably one Government pony, a regimental polo club to pay travelling expenses and to lend them money without interest for the purchase of ponies, and riding schools to train their ponies in; they have skilled instructors in horsemanship and they ought to have skilled instructors in polo too.

There is no sort of reason why the standard of polo should not quickly be raised in the Army if subalterns are as carefully taught the game as they are taught every other part of their profession. I maintain that training in Polo should be an important part of a Cavalry Subaltern's education, for there is no better school for high class horsemanship and for training in quickness of brain, eye, hand and arm.

Hunting may be an equally good school; and for a boy when he first joins, I am not at all sure that it is not even better, for it teaches him not only horsemanship and quickness of decision, but also a good man to hounds has, as a rule, a good eye for a country, and makes a good cavalry scout or patrol leader.

Polo has one great advantage over hunting as a training

Digitized by Google

school for young officers in that it means team play, requires unselfishness and fosters *esprit de corps*, whereas hunting is necessarily an individual sport.

The only regular and reliable source from which English Polo players can be drawn for certain in the future is the Cavalry branch of the Army, British and Indian. This has been the case for many years and is likely to be even more so in the future.

If we analyse the composition of the International Teams since 1902 who have represented England against America we find that:—

In 1902, when three matches were played, six different players took part, viz.:—W S. Buckmaster, F. M. Freake, C. D. Miller, G. A. Miller, C. P. Nickalls and P. W. Nickalls; all these players received their education in civilian Polo.

In 1909 five civilians played, viz.:—F. M. Freake, P. W. Nickalls, H. Rich, Herbert Wilson and Lord Wodehouse, and only one soldier, Captain Hardress Lloyd.

In 1911 there was only one civilian, Herbert Wilson, and three soldiers, Captain Leslie Cheape, Noel Edwards and Hardress Lloyd.

In 1913 there were four soldiers, Captains Leslie Cheape, Noel Edwards, W. V. Lockett and R. G. Ritson; and one civilian, F. M. Freake.

In 1914 all were soldiers, viz.:—Captains F. W. Barrett, Leslie Cheape, V. Lockett and H. A. Tomkinson.

In 1921 there were three soldiers, Majors F. W. Barrett, W. V. Lockett, Lt.-Col. H. A. Tomkinson, and only one player of civilian training, viz.:—Lord Wodehouse.

Up to about the year 1910 the best civilian teams, such as Sussex (The Peats), Rugby, Roehampton and the Old Cantabs., were far stronger than any regimental team.

In 1914 the 12th Lancers won the Coronation Cup at Ranelagh, but they did not meet the Old Cantabs.; the 17th Lancers won it in 1922 against the Argentine Team.

Digitized by Google

In 1922 there was only one fairly good civilian team, *i.e.*, Cirencester—Captain R. R. Smart, M. Kingscote, Hon. A. Hastings and Captain L. Sheddon—with an aggregate handicap of 26.

I do not count the teams which now-a-days win the Champion Cup, which are simply scratch combinations of the best players on the best ponies, irrespective of the nationality of the men.

In 1922 there were in the official handicap list some thirty English players handicapped at 7 or more who started Polo in the Army and only about ten who began as civilians.

I think that for the reasons given it is evident that the Cavalry as far as Englishmen are concerned is the chief source of supply for the Polo players of the future, especially as so few young civilians are playing.

The question is, are we making the best of our opportunities? I maintain not.

The American and French Armies have taken up the game very seriously since they were practically introduced to it by our Army on the Rhine after the Armistice. They quickly saw the advantages of it, not only as a school for horsemanship, etc., but also they realised how no man can excel at it unless he keeps himself fit, and how a good regimental Polo Club and the interest of the game keeps young officers out of trouble and gives them a clean and wholesome interest, especially in dull country stations.

I heard the following story, the accuracy of which I cannot vouch for, but I am told it is true. 'The Officer Commanding the Cavalry Riding Establishment at Saumur put in an application for ponies to be supplied in lieu of horses for purposes of Polo. This was promptly refused. He waited some months and then he reported that the horses supplied were too big and that he required some small handy horses for the purposes of teaching the higher branches of equitation, stating that he had discovered that there were certain exercises

Digitized by Google

which could be carried out on a large flat field, such as making three or four men strike a ball in one direction, with three or four men trying to strike it in the opposite direction. He said that he noticed that these kinds of exercises required a smaller type of horse and would have a good effect in rapidly improving the horsemanship of the officers under instruction.'

He got his small horses and so Polo started in the French Army. The game is now officially recognised and has increased so rapidly that the Army was allowed in 1923 to hold a Regimental Tournament at Le Touquet, all mounted on small Government troop horses, of which there is a large supply bred in the South of France, called 'Tarbes' or 'Anglo Arabes,' most suitable for the game.

I wish our Army authorities could authorise the issue of the same sort of small horses to Sandhurst and Woolwich cadets, but I fear that in this instance the expense would be prohibitive as it would mean extra horses, for they could not carry cadets in equitation classes in the morning and play Polo in the afternoon.

The American Government went one better than the French: they supplied a number of ponies to their officers on the Rhine, gave them free saddlery, sticks and balls; Colonel Melville and others instructed them and they sent a Team to London at Government expense in 1920 which won the Novices' Cup at Ranelagh.

In 1923 the American Army Team defeated the British Army at Meadow Brook to the great surprise of every one. It is admitted that our ponies had not got over the voyage and that Major Lockett was a cripple. But still how was it done? By careful training and preparation. In the words of Lieut.-Colonel T. P. Melville, 17th Lancers, 'The American side had been playing together for the last two years continuously. For three months in 1922 and for the three months previous to the matches they had been struck off all military

Digitized by Google

duty and had devoted themselves entirely to practice and the schooling of their ponies. Another officer (an ex-trainer of race-horses) was similarly struck off, and the stable-management was in his sole charge.'

All the ponies, except three of Major Beard's, were Government owned. They had been collected from all the Army centres and out of the 50 at their disposal about 16 were quite first class. The remainder were good practice ponies and the players had sufficient spare ones to knock the ball about daily at full speed.

Polo is a game, and no English Officer in authority would advocate striking our soldiers off duty for three months to prepare for a match: it savours too much of professionalism. At West Point (the American Sandhurst) a large number of ponies, about 60 I believe, are kept and the cadets when they come to a certain seniority are taught Polo as carefully as they are taught the other branches of equitation.

I am not saying for a moment that our Government can supply our subalterns with ponies, saddlery, etc., in the same way that the American and French authorities do to their officers. They have already done a good deal to help, and in the future may do more; but I do say that very much more can be done in the way of instruction and encouragement to the young player than is done now in many regiments.

Take a cricketer or a golfer: if he has a son whom he wishes shall follow in his own footsteps and become a first class cricketer or golfer, he, as a rule, sees that he has the very best professional instruction from the beginning; whereas, I think, in many regiments the rudiments of polo are not taught to newly joined subalterns.

For instance, how many boys when they first join are put on a wooden horse and taught how to hold a stick in the right manner, and how to hit the ball correctly in the same way that he is taught to play with a straight bat and keep his eye on the ball at the nets at cricket, or to swing a golf

Digitized by Google

club correctly and follow through without moving his head and without shifting his feet?

The riding instruction in the Army has vastly improved of late years, and the average standard of horsemanship has correspondingly improved.

The standard of horsemanship in the Cavalry was distinctly low before the South African War, and gradual improvement was noticeable from 1902 till a big stride was made on the supersession of the old promoted non-commissioned officer Riding Masters by skilled Instructors, who are now selected for their jobs because they are not only educated in the theory of *haute école* riding but also because they are experts at riding horses in jumping competitions, good steeplechase riders, fine men to hounds and expert polo players.

These new instructors have certainly greatly raised the average standard of horsemanship among officers and men, particularly among the officers; and this is largely due to the great improvements in the training at Sandhurst and Woolwich, and to the excellent results obtained from the Equitation Schools at Netheravon, Weedon and Saugor, whence skilled and carefully trained instructors are sent back to their Regiments.

Is it too much to ask that in each Regiment there should be at least one officer, perhaps the equitation officer, perhaps another, who should devote a great deal of his time to the teaching of Polo and of the still higher class of horsemanship which is necessary if a man is to reach the highest standard of play.

Also it should be the duty (and this is done in most regiments) of one or two officers to buy the ponies for the newly joined subalterns. Many a boy's Polo is ruined by his purchasing unsuitable ponies.

High class, *haute école* riding is in every way admirable, but there is a higher class of horsemanship than this and that is the horsemanship of the best steeplechase riders—of the men who can ride a young bold horse safely over a big

Digitized by Google

country in a quick thing to hounds, of the tip top polo player, of the expert rider of show jumpers, and, above all, of the cowpuncher.

In this article we have only to deal with polo, and I maintain that the horsemanship required in a first class polo player is of a very high standard, because everything has to be done at racing pace. Curiously enough some of the best exponents of the art have never been in a military riding school in their lives. Take, for instance, the riding of the Argentine players, John Traill, John and David Miles and Lewis Lacey. They may not all have what we consider to be perfect hands, but they appear to be entirely independent of reins and stirrups. They can reach right out of their saddles and hit the ball all round their ponies, and can ride half-schooled, difficult ponies in a way that makes the onlooker imagine the pony to be well trained. This style of expert horsemanship is probably acquired through the practice they get in rounding up cattle and because all their outdoor work is done on the back of a horse. It is certainly admirable.

Riding school training is most excellent as a foundation and, of course, is absolutely essential in the training of every Cavalry officer; but when it comes to the rough and tumble of a hard fought game of polo, although the correct aids still come into play, good hands, balance and reach, and the power of hitting all round one's pony at full pace with a slack rein, take the place of the military seat. In fact, this is where the merits of the cowboy style of riding tell.

One of the greatest difficulties that the young officer has to contend with is that he has not enough ponies to enable him to do sufficient practice at speed in order to make him stick-perfect, and in England he has not the smooth grounds to practise on. All I can say is that he must practise as much as possible and that he cannot expect to attain proficiency without a great deal of practice and in the early stages this practice must take place under expert supervision. The

Digitized by Google

wooden horse is much neglected, it is marvellously good practice for hand, eye and arm.

When I joined my regiment, 36 years ago, the senior officers were not great performers at Polo; indeed, they had never even got through one tie in a Regimental Tournament, but four of them were very keen—Major M. G. Neeld, Captain B. Herbert, Captain Anstruther and Captain C. H. Butler. They took the greatest interest in the play of the new joined subalterns, of whom there were several. The last named officer lost his health and could not play, but he kept his ponies for our benefit and helped the Captain of the Team, W. G Renton, who was our senior subaltern with ten years' service, to train the subalterns. All these officers lent us their ponies. Butler and Renton were very strict task-masters. They reaped their reward when the Team, consisting entirely of subalterns, won the two Regimental Tournaments and the two Calcutta Tournaments of 1888 and 1889, eight different subalterns taking part in the four tournaments.

Captain de Lisle (now Lieut.-General Sir Beauvoir de Lisle) did better still a few years later, for, without any money behind them, he trained the Durham Light Infantry so well that they won the three Inter-Regimental Tournaments in 1896, '97 and '98. Of course, circumstances are very different now to those days: ponies were then cheap, they were smaller and easier to train, and easier to ride when trained. The game, too, was an easier one to play; so such a high standard of skill both in horsemanship and in hitting the ball was probably not required.

Still, I am quite sure that by better organisation and by taking a great deal of time and trouble in the training of the player and of the pony, many more good teams and good individual players can be produced than has been the case since the War.

I am no pessimist with the idea that the English Polo player of the future will not be as good as his predecessors.

Digitized by Google

Nor do I consider it a disgrace to be beaten by such fine performers as the Americans. For I think our time will come, perhaps this year, perhaps in a few years' time. But I am not an advocate of specialisation. I was myself in the fortunate position of being able to teach my own boys the rudiments of the game when they were very young, but few fathers are in the position that I was. When our boys are at school most of us like to see them excel at school games, cricket, football and racquets, and in the holidays to go well to hounds; later on we hope they will be first rate all-round sportsmen, able to take their part in any form of game or sport.

Our circumstances are not, as a rule, such that we can put our boys on handy old polo ponies and teach them the game at the age of 15 or 16. Raw ponies are quite useless for the purpose, a fact which the Americans know very well; young boys had far better begin on bicycles, which is capital practice, but expensive in bicycles!

Major Rouse in the *Polo Monthly* advocates the starting of polo schools at Eton and Harrow. Having had two boys at Harrow, I do not consider this plan to be feasible. Of course, the earlier in life a boy is able to begin the game the better for him, but I think we must make up our minds that as a general rule a boy's polo education will not begin until he goes to Sandhurst or to Oxford or Cambridge, or till he joins his regiment. If he is a fair cricketer and a promising horseman he will, with competent instruction, very soon become a good polo player, provided that he can get himself properly mounted. The great thing is to encourage the young officers in every possible way and to put them through as strict a training in the rudiments of polo as they are put through as regards equitation.

But they must be started in the right way—

1. How to hold a stick and how to hit the ball;

2. How to leave a pony's head alone when hitting the ball;

Digitized by Google

3. How to stop and turn the pony and how to make him gallop with a loose head and how to make him change his legs.

Then comes the training in the game, which should include plenty of encouragement and no abuse. Every keen boy makes lots of mistakes, but he does not do so on purpose, especially remembering never to reproach a player for missing a goal as it makes him nervous next time.

Lastly, special instructions must be given in the training of green ponies, for a soldier can never excel at polo unless he can train his own ponies. Many of the Regiments which have risen to the top of the tree at polo have done so through the efforts of one, or at most two, men in the first instance.

The most noticeable instances that I can remember of this are Tweedmouth and Harold Brassey of the Blues; Rimington and Neil Haig, Inniskillings; Colvin and Jenner, 9th Lancers; Vaughan, 10th Hussars; MacLaren, 13th Hussars; Renton, 17th Lancers; Badger, 12th Lancers; Romer Lee and Schreiber, 20th Hussars, and De Lisle, Durham Light Infantry. What has been done before can be done again even in a Regiment that has no great Polo record.

One reason why English Polo Teams fail is owing to the dearth of good Number Two's. This is due chiefly to four causes :—

1st. The best players in each Team naturally drift back into the positions of Number Three or Back, because they are as a rule the mainstays and captains of their sides, and so do not get the training and experience in playing forward.

2nd. It is the most difficult position in the game because the ball has, as a rule, to be picked up in awkward positions at top speed. A first-class Number Two must be an accurate striker and a good goal-getter. He must be able to play Number One or Number Three, as he will be constantly finding himself in those positions in the course of the game.

He is the real pace-maker of the Team.

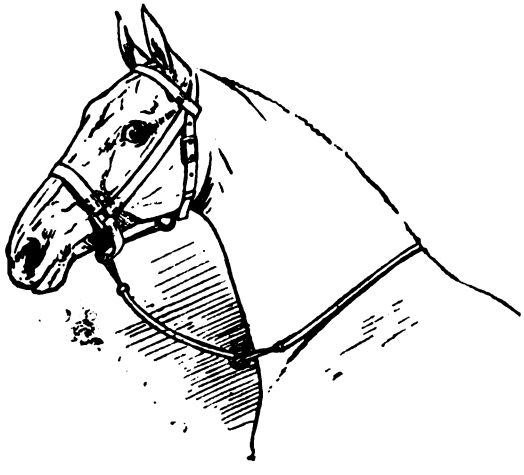
Digitized by Google

3rd. The average good player does not play Number Two if he can help it, because, if he is the best man on the side, he does not find that the ball comes up to him, and also because he finds that he can save his young ponies and even improve them when playing Number Three or Back, but when playing Number Two he must always keep them at full stretch.

4th. The ideal Number Two is young, strong, with nerves of iron, a quick thinker and must be full of dash and enterprise.

Successful Teams have always had a good Number Two. Sussex, A. E. Peat; Rugby, G. A. Miller; Old Cantabs., F. M. Freake; Roehampton, Herbert Wilson and M. Nickalls; Durham Light Infantry, Capt. H. B. Wilkinson; Freebooters, Lord Southampton and A. Rawlinson; 10th Hussars, Capt. E. W. E. Palmes; 17th Lancers, Capt. H. B. Turnor, and many others; above all America, M. Waterbury and T. Hitchcock. Why did we lose the American matches in 1913 and win in 1914? Because we did not have a good Number Two in 1913, and Leslie Cheape played in that position in 1914.

Here is the chance for the Cavalry Subaltern.



Digitized by Google

REGIMENTAL POLO

By Lieut.-General Sir Beauvoir de Lisle, K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.

From the earliest days, the game has owed much to Regimental Polo, and though Regimental Teams have not been able to compete successfully in our Open Tournaments, our International Teams have always included a majority of players who had the advantage of the training and discipline which has always been a noticeable feature in Regimental Polo.

In these days Regimental Polo is so firmly established in all Cavalry Regiments that it seems superfluous to offer advice, the more so as in Lieut.-Colonel E. D. Miller's standard work 'Modern Polo,' nothing has been omitted which would assist those who want to study the science of the game. On the other hand, this work deals less with Regimental Polo than Polo in general, and it is to the Regimental officer I wish to address my remarks. Watching Polo both at home and in India with the greatest interest, as I have done for many years, I have been impressed continually by the fact that, with few exceptions, our teams have been capable of much improvement, sometimes with as much as 30 per cent., for want of a coach.

In all other games professional coaches are a necessity, and, though none of us want to see professionalism introduced to the Polo Ground, there are many 'old hands' who would gladly offer their expert advice and assistance, but for the fact that they have lost their own skill and that they know

Digitized by Google

youth must always be impatient of advice from anyone no longer in the front rank. At the same time there are so many Regimental Polo Players who are desperately keen to raise the standard of their teams that, even at the risk of quoting well-known platitudes, I am encouraged to offer the advice of an old ' has been.'

The team which looks for improvement should first consider the four essentials of Tournament Polo, essentials which are so often disregarded, resulting in much disappointment. I am well aware that young soldiers have many other interests besides polo, and may not be prepared to give the time and the interest to acquiring the essentials; but there are some who are ready to take the greatest trouble and who, for want of the advice of the ' old hand,' may despair of improvement.

The four main essentials of Tournament Polo, in order of importance, are as follows :—

1. To be stick perfect.
2. To be a horseman.
3. To have a knowledge of the game.
4. To possess good ponies.

How to become stick perfect. My experience shows that any player with a handicap of 4 or 5 can raise his handicap at least two points by giving one hour a day to stick practice for a month. Once stick perfect, a week's practice is all that is necessary to get back one's best form, though some players who have not a natural eye may require a fortnight. Here I must impress on my readers that the month means hard work for six days of the week, and not three or four days.

The following method of stick practice is that adopted by all the members of a successful team I coached some 30 years ago, and I have no hesitation in asserting the many tournaments they won were due chiefly to the fact that every member was stick perfect. Every morning, after the bath, we swung light Indian clubs, first 50 times, after one week 100 times, after the second week 150 times, and after the third week and

Digitized by Google

before all tournaments 200 times. The swing can easily be learnt in a couple of days, and the clubs cannot be too light. This exercise loosens the muscles of the shoulders, arms, and wrists, and at the same time puts a muscle in the right place.

All who have played in Tournaments can recall times when the arms and shoulders began to stiffen at the end of a hard game, and even easy strokes were made difficult. Swinging clubs have often won a tournament when other things were equally matched.

Every day, during the training period, every member of the team sat for half-an-hour on the wooden horse and had balls bowled to him, slowly at first, but at the end of the month balls were sent in fast and from every direction. When the player could meet two balls out of three bowled at right angles to the wooden horse, on the near side as well as the off side, he was considered stick perfect on the standing horse. Wooden horses have never been popular in England, whereas in India, in my day, they formed the usual furniture of every compound (paddock). There must be a reason for this. It is due in part to the fact that in India there are more servants and their families available, but I am convinced the chief reason lies in fashion, added to the fact that it is not easy to get a serviceable wooden horse made in this country, and also that few players realise its advantage. If any player wishes to have the best dimensions of a wooden horse I will gladly supply them.

A good substitute can be made by using a wooden packing case about 30 inches high and filling it with soil. Standing on this platform, raised to the height to suit the swing of the stick by means of an extra row of bricks, if required, the same result can be obtained. The eye will be trained and the muscles will be hardened. The improvement after six days' practice from the wooden horse (or platform) is so amazing that players are too often content with one week of it, instead of adhering to the whole month.

Digitized by Google

In addition to the club-swinging and standing-horse practice, the daily practice from the moving horse is equally necessary. If the first can take place in the morning and the work on polo ponies in the afternoon it is an advantage, as at first the muscles of the shoulders are inclined to stiffen-up after half-an-hour's practice, so some rest is advisable before mounting the ponies.

It was our rule to have twenty minutes' practice on each pony every day during this month, and also on the mornings of match days. With four or five ponies to exercise, this meant very hard work, and it was this severe preparation that made us capable of lasting out, when our opponents showed signs of fatigue.

The first week mounted should be at the walk and trot. It is quite interesting work to canter a pony after a ball, and it is deadly dull walking, and most irritating to hit the ball at a trot. The man who cannot hit at the walk and trot will never be as good with the stick as one who has gone through every kind of stroke in slow time at the most difficult paces, but I admit it is a high test of keenness as well as of endurance. There is one consolation: the work at a walk and trot, in addition to being good practice for the rider, is the most excellent training for the pony, if ridden with a slack rein.

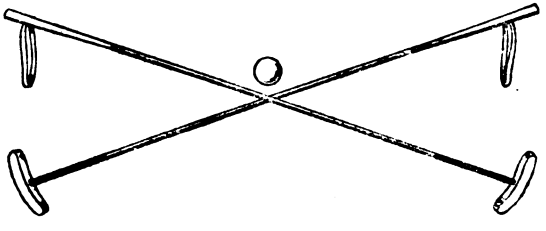
The best practice with a stick and ball is to use two balls, drive one 30 yards and the second over and 30 yards past it. To take two balls round a ground twice without missing or losing direction is a high test, even at a walk. To do this at a fast canter was our test of being stick perfect alone. Then came combined stick practice, of which there are many variations, but all of which can be carried out only by good sticks on good ponies. I have given these practices in my book, 'Polo in India,' but the simplest and best for two players is for A. to drive to and past B. A. then pulls up, B. goes for the ball, *looks back* to see where A. is and hits back to him and *pulls up*. A. meets the ball and drives on again, and

Digitized by Google

so on. The value of this practice is long driving, meeting the ball, and training ponies to stop on their hocks. When this is carried out successfully by both players leading alternately, it can be varied by the leader, B., giving A. a signal and sending his back-hander to the right or left, A. having gone to the place on B.'s signal and again meeting the ball before it stops. The last variation is for B. to hit back without signal and for A. to judge from his action where B. will send the ball. It sounds easy, but I have never found any but stick-perfect players on well-trained tournament ponies capable of carrying out these practices with any success.

Finally, practising at goal at all paces and all angles completes the exercise necessary for good stick work. It is easy to hit goals at half and three-quarter pace, the difficulty lies in practice at speed without ruining tournament ponies. To obviate this we used to take a couple of spare ponies to tournaments which were unrideable in the game, but were used for fast practice only. Chosen for soundness and hardiness, they were kept racing up and down the ground at speed, and they certainly earned their keep.

In a later article I propose to discuss the other essentials of a first-class polo player.



Digitized by Google

A PORTRAIT: BEING A REMINISCENCE OF 1917

By Major Ardern Beaman

From time to time mighty cataclysms of nature, violent convulsions of the ocean's bed, fling up to the surface creatures that are most strange and awful to our mortal gaze. Naturally, the greatest upheaval in our world's history has been very fertile in such phenomena, and, beyond all possible shadow of doubt whatever, the war's most striking wonder was my soldier-servant Beaven.

I was accorded the privilege of his service, not because he had had previous experience of the high art of valeting; not because he had a commanding presence, nor yet because he was distinguished by intelligence or activity; but because his feet were flat. At first sight this appears a poor reason for the selection of an office so vital to my comfort and efficiency. On second sight it appears to be an even poorer one. It is perhaps superfluous to state that the selection was not mine. Philosophers have observed, with the profound penetration of their race, that the malignity of fate works in mysterious ways, and through unexpected mediums. The fact that Beaven's pedal bone lacked that graceful arch peculiar to the human species,— with the exception of the celebrated Bonnie Jean,— prevented him from *marching* to glory. The first day that he appeared upon the barrack square, it was evident to his keen-eyed sergeant-instructor that Beaven was not in his proper sphere. Furthermore, between the poor malformed feet and the master-brain which actuated them, there existed a sympathetic mental confusion; for Beaven could never be taught to differentiate

Digitized by Google

between his left foot and his right—a fatal defect in the aspirant to military renown. He carried no marshal's *bâton* in his knapsack; and with the absolute and positive frankness of his kind, and in lurid diction that left no detail to the imagination, the sergeant-instructor made this painful fact abundantly plain, both to Beaven himself and to his superiors. The barbaric and untutored heads of certain infantry authorities were scratched in bewilderment over the perplexing case, till at last a brilliant streak of genius flashed through the darkness. 'Transfer him to Cavalry.' A severe seismic shock was registered throughout the Continent of Europe, due to the turning in their graves of Cromwell, Rupert, Zeithen, Murat, Lasalle, Anglesea—and in their châteaux of Haig, Robertson, Allenby, Chetwode, and other leaders innumerable and immortal. Thus it was that a transformation was wrought and Beaven found himself a gay and gallant trooper in a crack Yeomanry Regiment. His gaiety and his gallantry, however, he concealed with perfect success; and what passed in the nebulous regions called by courtesy his mind, during this startling transition, is an impenetrable secret that will go down with him to the grave. Did that grand old word 'yeoman' wake in him any echoes of Ancient Merrie England, St. George, and the glorious Past? Did it thrill him to the core that he, Christopher Beaven, was now one of the yeomen, the bowmen, the truemen of England? Did he see himself in glowing phantasy spurring sword in hand, through shattered ranks of Dutchmen and Hunmen and Suchmen, over the Rhine, and on and on in mad, wild triumph, to Imperial Potsdam itself? Reader, since you ask me, I am of opinion that he did not. From the barrack square to the field of glory is a long stretch of the imagination. And although his arm, number, style and title had changed to one so sonorous and so chivalric, it was again on a drab area precisely similar to the first drill square that he found himself, and again required to perform the same unmasterable combinations of brain and foot. In one respect only, one dire

Digitized by Google

respect, did his present situation differ from that other, in which he had played a part so brief and so unheroic. A new factor entered into his life—a factor of hitherto nameless, unimagined horror, in comparison with which the minor miseries of the barrack square paled into insignificance. It was attempted to bring him into relations of the closest intimacy with that strange, unknown quantity, the horse. In far away happy days, before the insane topsy-turvydom of the war had so seriously interrupted the placid tenor of his way, he had, of course, often seen this beast on road and field. Indeed he had even heard tell that the horse is a noble animal, the friend of man; but he had regarded both the animal and the statement with distant and dreamy abstraction, as a physical and metaphysical problem entirely beyond the confines of the plane on which he had his being.

For some weeks to come he would not be asked to take such liberties with this monster that pervaded all the scene as to bestride its back, or to bend its inferior will to his all-powerful human overmind, which holds dominion over beast of the field and fowl of the air. No, that was a vague haunting nightmare of the future. For the present there was, so to speak, a reversal of nature's law, and his relations with this lower creation were of a distinctly menial and humiliating character. He had to attend with scrupulous care to its toilette; he had to consider its comfort on every occasion before his own; and at all sorts of inconvenient hours to himself he had to minister to its insatiable carnal wants. For him Limbo held no terror equal to morning and evening stables. The introduction to his unwelcome equine affinity was effected by an old-world troop-sergeant with marked lack of courtesies usual to such social ceremonies. Beaven stood in the troop stable petrified; on all sides he could vaguely distinguish through the gloom the huge, shadowy, distorted forms of champing, fretting, kicking horses. The ceaseless and piercing neighs, the din of jingling harness, stamping hooves, clattering stable gear, and the oaths

Digitized by Google

of the groomers, added to his bewilderment; and the semi-darkness made the whole scene more infernal. He stood rooted to the floor, immovable. A cold sweat broke out on his forehead as he gazed with dropped jaw and clammy hands at the juggernaut before him. Not all the objurgations, all the sarcasms, all the blasphemy and all the personalities, of which the troop-sergeant had an inexhaustible command, could move him one step towards that demoniacal creature.

Thus for the second time in his short military career a problem arose of which he was the centre. It was perfectly plain that he was again not in his proper sphere. The normal course would have been to recommend his transfer to infantry; but that worthy arm had acted upon the first principle of strategy in using the offensive as the surest means of defence. They had struck first and struck hard, and thereby secured immunity from the proprietary of Beaven. Any attempt to return him whence he came would now not only savour of a *tu quoque*, but would give rise to an endless correspondence of fast-growing mountainous files, which would long outlast the duration of the war. While our cavalry was frankly perplexed by the situation, an instrument of Fate in the humble shape of myself arrived upon the scene. Part of the wreckage from a distant battle-line, I had drifted by slow degrees and on many tides over continents and oceans to this sequestered backwater of the war in wayward, wilful, heart-bleeding Erin. By the time of my arrival Beaven had been prevailed upon to approach sufficiently near to his horse to tickle it timidly and tentatively with the grooming brush; but always with a strained expression of extreme terror, and in a highly defensive fashion, poised the while lightly as could be on the heels of his flat feet, ready for instant flight. He had been given the quietest horse in the troop, but the provocative nature of his ministrations as well as the irritation which his manifest distrust engendered in the heart of so noble an animal, excited even that placid old quadruped to occasional signs of restiveness. This confirmed

Digitized by Google

Beaven's darkest suspicions. He had never believed that the horse is a noble animal. He had never believed that it is the friend of man. From the first, instinct, that unerring voice of nature, had taught him to recognise in it an awful enemy. Times there were when horses appeared to the casual observer to be gentle and harmless; sometimes even playful and friendly. But Beaven knew better. He knew the folly of trusting that capricious quadruped; he knew that when it appeared in repose it was in reality contemplating baleful treachery; and in its every movement he detected some design of deep malignity to the human race, and to himself in particular. This attitude of mind on his part was peculiarly unfortunate for me, as he united with the care of my person that of my horse. In other words, besides being my valet he was my groom. But I am anticipating.

As I said before, the Cavalry of England for the first time in history, owned itself beat. St. George, our patron saint, was invoked in vain; the adroit slaughter of a dragon was a minor enterprise compared to solving the problem of Beaven. At this critical stage of the war there befell my opportune arrival. My sphere of action was limited, my duties humiliatingly insignificant—bones and dripping; even my proper pride could not blind me to the patent fact that I was regarded, along with other such birds of passage, as an encumbrance, or, in the simple and stately diction of the Lake Poets, a damn nuisance.

But one supreme service I rendered to that heterogeneous corps to which I had the honour of being attached. I solved the riddle of the sphinx. I required a servant and a groom. A mighty load lifted from the minds of the squadron authorities. Beaven!! The Major's brow cleared, the care-worn sergeant-major walked once more with a jaunty step. The oppressive cloud had evaporated, the prospect was again serene—for them, that is, but not for me.

Beaven was classified as C iii. Having no head for mathe-

Digitized by Google

matics I have never been able to master the meaning of these classification symbols, or actually to fathom what depth of degeneration is signified by this particular formula. All I do know is that it is one of the lowest grades on the human scale.

It took Beaven precisely three days to find my quarters; and on the fourth day I beheld him face to face. Frankly, I was not impressed with favour. He was below the middle height, square built, and moved with a rotary action from crown to heel. His hair was dank and ragged, his face round and of an unwholesome clammy pallor, his eyes of a blue so light as to be almost colourless, and very big and protuberant after the manner of boiled gooseberries; while a yellow-brown, irregular and moth-eaten moustache failed to conceal a few blackened stumps of teeth, set in an indeterminate, pulpy mouth. The lower jaw drooped; the chin was weak and receding. His cap, perhaps to harmonise with the rotary movement of his body, was invariably set at three-quarters right. No orders, requests, exhortations, or entreaties could effect its proper settlement for more than a few consecutive minutes. And as to apparel, he had a genius of personal untidiness. This was strange because he kept my rooms scrupulously clean and tidy. But, conversely, it has been established by process of induction that many transcendental Knuts live in quarters of indescribable chaos.

Thus Beaven and I became acquainted. Instinct and the evidence of my eyes warned me that it would be unwise to demand much of him at one time, so I explained briefly my simple requirements, and gave him a few commissions to execute in the town, just outside the barrack gate. On being asked if he understood; he replied that he did, in a voice of mournful cheerfulness, and I began to hope that perhaps, after all, appearances were deceptive, and things not so bad as they looked.

That night was the bitterest ever known in Ireland. A wild wind came shrieking down from the Curragh, withering all with its blighting blast. The fairies cowered tremulous in rath and

Digitized by Google

dell. A pious peasantry crossed itself fearfully as it heard the pæan of the witches who rode the gale upon their broomsticks, screeching in mad ecstatic harmony with the tumult of the elements. It was the bitterest night ever known in Ireland. And that night my bath was the coldest ever known in Ireland. After dinner I returned to my quarters in pleasant anticipation of the blazing fire I had discussed with Beaven. In fact we had held quite a long conversation about it, and I believed I had wholly enlisted his interest in the matter. I thought that, with him, this method might be more successful than a curt order. Before I reached the door, however, an icy presage of evil chilled me to the marrow. It proved only too well founded. The fire was extinct—dead beyond all hope of resurrection; and, moreover, the room was in thick darkness. I fumbled for matches in their accustomed place, but they had gone,—so had Beaven, his pantry was bare. Returning with borrowed matches I advanced on the lamp. I am not skilful in the management of lamps, and the unequal struggle continued with diminishing success on my part. The flame would leap up with tantalising brightness, burn boldly for a few minutes and then expire. Realising at last that there was no oil therein, I gave way to despair. No fire, no light. I crept miserably away to bed. But here again were no roses. The wire foundation of my bed having given way during the small still hours of the night before, depositing me, not without violence, on the floor, I had told Beaven to draw another from the Quartermaster's stores. I now, by the dismal, uncertain radiance of a match, discovered the framework of the bed, dismantled, and neatly stacked in a corner of the room, and my bedding laid upon the floor, with nothing but an antique, incredibly meagre and attenuated mattress between my sensitive body and the extremely nobby boards.

A number of grim days elapsed before the hard cruel fact penetrated my understanding that there were many unaccustomed things I should have to do for myself. For instance,

Digitized by Google

within a few days of the incidence of Beaven, my mare began to assume the elegant proportions of a skeleton. This was particularly distressing as she had been handed over to me on the distinct understanding that I should get her into big condition. I would ask 'Did you give the mare her feed this evening, Beaven?'

'I give it to her yesterday,' he would reply with a touch of hauteur. A visit to her stable during grooming hours might provide three several pictures—(*a*) Beaven, afar off, cleaning saddlery; (*b*) Beaven, afar off, dreaming—a study in still life; (*c*) (the most usual) a stable void of Beaven.

At Hythe they believe the arcanum of successful instruction is illustration, explanation, imitation. You show the pupil what you wish him to do, you explain each movement in the minutest detail with jerky and convulsive gestures, and then you make him do and explain it himself. Nevertheless this infallible method proved a signal failure with Beaven. The illustration aroused no interest in his breast, no ray of intelligence in his lack-lustre eyes; the explanation fell on deaf ears; and he was totally incapable of anything so unoriginal as imitation. So, in my old age, I took to the gentle art of grooming.

Beaven was not communicative. He had no light conversation, nor any political or party bias; but he had one fixed and definite idea. He was dissatisfied with the war, and he yearned for the day when it should cease. The condition of Belgium, Poland, and Servia had nothing to do with this attitude of mind. He was not, it must be confessed, a champion of the liberty of small nations. He was not, as far as I could gather, in sympathy with the social movements of Russia, Germany and Spain. He saw the dreadful casualty lists without emotion, and his strong dislike of the Irish was wholly a personal matter between himself and the small boys of Newbridge, who mocked themselves unmercifully of his strange gait and grotesque appearance. His dissatisfaction with the

Digitized by Google

war, then, was not based on ethical grounds; nor had he any quarrel with the manner in which the operations were conducted by our Generals and Statesmen. No, his war-weariness sprang from a throbbing heartache for his *alma mater*, for the venerable piles and dreaming spires of Oxford. It was there that he used to have his being: an existence now looked back upon, through the sombre medium of military service, as one of halcyon felicity. In a small hotel he filled the humble but important position of 'boots.' His duties were to clean the knives and boots. Having no knife, I was unqualified to estimate his capabilities in that respect, but as the possessor of a pair of boots I deduced that his knife-cleaning propensities were approaching the brilliant—otherwise he must hardly have kept his place in what he assured me was a flourishing and populous hotel. He was, perhaps, wise to specialise in that branch of his science, since knives are part of the permanent property of a hotel, whereas boots are but a passing episode.

His duties about my person were light. He had merely to keep my quarters swept and garnished, and to attend to my wardrobe, which latter, owing to a temporary and totally insignificant success on the part of the German-Mediterranean-underwater-boat-service, was meagre in the extreme. But although he performed the first duty with praiseworthy exactitude, there was a sad falling off in the other. Within a few days of my arrival he had acquired for me the unenviable reputation of being the dirtiest officer in the Brigade. One of the few joys in the dull routine of our barrack life was to see me mount for parade. All ranks not otherwise employed made a point of attending this spectacle—a publicity which was highly distressing to such sensitive natures as mine and that of Beaven. The procedure, which never varied, was as follows: Ten minutes after the appointed hour, convulsively clutching the reins, treading delicately upon his heels, and wearing an expression of supreme agony, Beaven was dragged to the squadron office by my mare. Then, while I gazed at the turn-out with

Digitized by Google

sinking heart, wondering where to begin the work of complete readjustment, some of the less coarse-natured among the onlookers stepped forward and lent a hand. The bit was removed and replaced right-way on; the curb chain flattened; the blanket unfolded, correctly refolded, and the girths done up—what time Beaven stood an impassive spectator of the busy scene. Next I proceeded to mount. This part of the ceremony was obscured in an almost impenetrable haze of pipe-clay arising from the head rope and my leathers, due to Beaven's peculiar method of treating the same. He then placed the off stirrup inside-out upon my right heel, and like the White Knight of old, I galloped off after the long vanished squadron, trailing clouds of snow-white glory.

One does not strike a child a savage blow across the face; a harsh word to Beaven would have been equally brutal.

My levée, too, was not without its proper rites. After laying out my clothes and preparing the evening bath, Beaven would ask 'What time will you be called, sir?' I replied, 'Half-past six, as usual, Beaven.' 'Half-past six, sir? Yes, sir, good-night, sir.' Precisely at six I would arise and go into Beaven's pantry and rouse him from profound slumber. Then I returned to bed and dosed blissfully. At half-past six a pudgy paw shook me lightly by the shoulder and the voice of Beaven gravely announced 'Half-past six, sir.' 'Good morning, Beaven, thank you' I replied with equal gravity, and so began another strenuous day. There was, however, one variation to this solemn matutinal rite. Sometimes—though it is fair to state, at rare intervals only—half-past six came, and no pudgy paw was laid lightly on my shoulder, no voice gravely announced the flight of time. I thereupon retraced my steps to the pantry, and found Beaven seated on a bale of hay, staring fixedly into space. It is impossible for me to hazard what forms of thought were passing through the shadowy chambers of his mind. It was not, alas, the sweet and tender abstraction of love, for there was nothing of the romantic in his composition.

Digitized by Google

Thirty-one summers had passed drearily over his head and left him unscathed by Cupid's darts. He was in no woman's heart enthroned; nor did he desire such regal circumstance, except, of course, in that of his mother, to whom, he informed me with a real and quiet dignity, he made an allowance of sixpence a day. Perhaps in beatific reverie he was back again among his boots and knives on the scholastic bank of Cherwell.

He was not a great reader. In fact his sole literary recreation was my correspondence. As he was a slow reader and this occupied his whole morning, it was fortunate both for me and my mare that my communications were few and laconic; mostly of a financial nature, referring to articles supplied in the by-me-long-forgotten-past. I can imagine no duller form of reading, but *chacun a son goût.*

Poor Beaven! I owed you much. The regular and steady exercise occasioned by doing your work had given me back my strength, the vigour and the bounding joy of life. I rode wistfully along the fragrant lanes, and over the rolling landscape that had become so dear, with its deep, mellow woods, and its thousand associations of legend and faerie—with its filmy dream mountains in the distance, and its warmhearted, imaginative, child-like people of the soil, fretting for they know not what, but whose charm creeps surely around the hardest heart. In a few days I should pass again across the waters to the inferno beyond. But Beaven would remain. He would never know the rain of steel and fire, rending shattering shell, the creeping deadly gas. He would never feel the red wild exultation of the charge, the brute lust of blood, the weariness beyond endurance. He would never know the splendid fellowship of arms.

But perhaps, in years to come, when the world was sane again, among the boots and knives of gentle, dreaming Oxford, it would please him to remember that in the days of the Great War he was once a gay and gallant trooper of the King.

Digitized by Google

CATCH AS CATCH CAN ON THE FRONTIER

By Major H. F. Whitby, 19th K.G.O. Lancers

The recent crimes on the Indian Frontier have revived the memory of a once notorious raider and outlaw, Multan Khan, whose band terrorised the Peshawar Vale during the years 1907–08.

Multan was a Pathan, an Afridi of the Zakha Khel; he was supposed to have been a Lance Naik in the . . . . Punjabis, a Regiment well versed in Frontier warfare, from whom he learnt his tactics and strategy. Lack of education led to his being passed over for promotion and so, disgruntled, he 'cut his name,' as the saying goes.

'Why,' thought he, 'should I have to read and write? That is the business of the Babu or the Bunnia. I have seen fighting with my Regiment. Am I unfit to command men just because I cannot read or write?' Honour was at stake —the 'Izzat,' dear to every Mohammedan, but worshipped by the Pathan—he must go.

Harvesting a scant crop off stony soil was not to his mind. He saw the 'Jewans' (young men) of his tribe swaggering about with stolen Government rifles and favoured by all the women. He could do better than they. He left behind him the delights of husbandry, and enlisted a following which became one of the most redoubtable gangs of raiders the Frontier has ever seen.

They were then all of one clan, the Zakha Khel, desperate and hardy men and outlaws all, well armed with rifles stolen

Digitized by Google

from British India, excellent shots, and experts in all the nice little intricacies of raiding and border fighting.

Raid after raid they made. What could be easier than to lie up during the day in some of the numerous nullahs of that 10 miles wide borderland between the hills and Peshawar, to make a surprise attack on a village at night; and then to scatter, and either make their several ways across the border, or take refuge singly or in pairs in any of the villages in the Vale. Multan's prestige was high, all knew it was death or a visitation on the village if information was given away. The Cavalry Regiment stationed at Peshawar was many times turned out to try and catch them, but in that beautiful hunting country of dykes and irrigation ditches, they couldn't move off the road at night. The raiders never used the roads but ran their loot on pack mules up dry canals under cover of darkness and by daylight had faded into thin air. So acute was the situation at one time, for about a fortnight during the height of the raiding season, that one squadron slept fully armed with their horses saddled in instant readiness. And so the merry game went on.

The railway station at Pabbi, between Peshawar and Nowshera, and even the Peshawar City station itself, were duly raided. The cash was removed and the wretched Hindu station-master carried off for ransom. If the ransom was not forthcoming at the fixed place and stated time, the station-master's grieving relatives would receive a gory ear, pickled in salt and done up in sacking, by way of showing that the matter of the ransom was reaching a climax. It was seldom necessary to send the other ear.

Multan's crowning effort was to raid Peshawar City. The plan was very simple if very bold, but his men were bold. They were quietly introduced into the city by ones and twos by the local Lady Jezebel and her fellows of the same persuasion, over the city walls as of old. Each man

Digitized by Google

had his station told off to him by the Robber Leader (hadn't he served in Peshawar with the . . . Punjabis?). These posts all commanded a certain quarter in which was the Bunnias' street, where all the rupees were to be found. On a certain date, at the time of evening prayer, when in an adjacent mosque some more helpers had unostentatiously assembled and were devoutly praying, the signal was given, as the pack ponies, to carry away the loot, entered the Bunnias' street. Every man was at his post, and the worshippers left the mosque. Then the fun began. Any who showed resistance, or any unfortunate police constable who appeared, was either shot by Multan's skilfully placed picquets, or dealt with by the raiding party with the transport. In half an hour the work was done. A house was set on fire to add to the confusion, and off went a peaceable looking convoy of three or four pack ponies carrying over a lakh of rupees (£6,000).

The picquets prevented pursuit, shooting from the house-tops any and all who attempted such an unwise proceeding.

When the convoy had trickled down alleys and byeways and was making its way in the dusk clear of the city, the covering party quietly dispersed to havens of rest provided for them by the friends of the Lady Jezebel, till such time as they too could slip away in the darkness, to cross the border when opportunity offered. Loud were the cries for vengeance. The harassed Superintendent of Police, hastily summoned by a mounted constable (the telephone in those days in far off cities seldom worked), arrived and collected awful and gruesome reports. The next stage in the proceeding was an order to the Cavalry to gallop out and cut the band off from the hills. Out they went on a murky night; a cold dawn broke and they could see nothing. The raiding band had dissolved in the night, some to refuges in the villages of the Peshawar Vale, others to remain in safe harems with light o' loves in Peshawar City itself.

The main body of raiders, that is to say, the convoy—just

Digitized by Google

a little party of three unostentatious pack mules, driven by three or four dirty looking Afridis—vanished up some little nullah or path, and were easily concealed till the friendly border was reached. And so once more the troops returned, and Multan had accomplished another raid.

All this was very well up to a point, but people began to get a little tired of their night's rest being spoilt because of a 'Budmash' called Multan.

His tribe, the Zakha Khel, had many times been told that, if they did not cease their raiding, the long-suffering Indian Government would be forced to take action. Eventually it was decided to send a punitive expedition against them and a force was formed under the command of Sir James Willcocks. The Zakha Khel villages were destroyed, their frontier towers blown up, their crops laid waste, and they were defeated in the field. A sense of their responsibilities, and the result of too much raiding into British India, was forced upon them.

It is unnecessary to enter into details of that little expedition. Suffice it to say that promises were exacted for future good behaviour, and fines for compensation were paid. Meanwhile Multan had fled into Afghanistan. It was futile to hold the Zakha Khel 'Jirga' responsible for him; all that could be done was to make them deny him refuge and prevent any of the young bloods joining him. This was done and for a time all was peace.

Multan appears to have enjoyed the brief interlude of serious fighting: he sniped camps and raided baggage camels, and having scruppered a picquet and possessed himself of a very good Service rifle—the then new pattern short-barrelled Lee Enfield—retired for the hot weather into Afghanistan.

When the fierce heat of the Peshawar summer had abated, his restless energy began to assert itself again and his thoughts turned to his old happy hunting ground. He could no longer,

Digitized by Google

however, enlist his confederates from his fellow clansmen. The Zakha Khel remembered their promises or, rather, 'The Week-end War.' There was plenty of other material in that turbulent land and he trusted that men of mixed tribes would serve his purpose. This mixing of tribesmen was his undoing.

The first action planned for the ensuing campaign was a raid on a small village in the Phandu Plain, some seven or eight miles from Peshawar and only three or four from the Border. The party was to descend into the plains by night, lie up in the convenient caves and nullahs during the day, raid the village the next night and then be off, and miles over the Border before daylight. A simple plan and a nice easy one to blood the new pack, and, better still, a vengeance on the village, which had once given information as to the outlaw's movements. They would never do that again, the Lambadar's throat should be slit as a warning to others, and the prestige of Multan Khan re-established in the Vale.

This particular Lambadar was born under a lucky star. One of the new band proved to be a traitor, and the benign Government had placed a reward of many thousands of rupees on Multan's head. It would be easy, the traitor thought, instead of going to the trysting place, to slip into Peshawar and tell the Political Agent. If carefully worked, suspicion could be avoided and there were rupees to be gained. Of course, he could never go back to the land of the Border and Blood Feud; but what matter? he was an outlaw anyhow. He had heard that Burma was not a bad country even if a little hotter than the Tirah highlands. The Burmese women, rumour said, were nice; he would be a rich man and marry one and set up as a Contractor. Members of the raiding parties had been known to be killed, so he was running a risk in any case.

One night the Political Agent received a message that someone wanted to see him and would only give his message

Digitized by Google

to the Sahib. The next morning Sir James Willcocks, then commanding the Peshawar Division, was to have inspected the Indian Cavalry Regiment, the 19th Lancers (Fane's Horse) stationed at Peshawar. All was ready and the usual somewhat listless attitude when waiting for an inspecting officer had settled on everybody; the Colonel was watching a flight of birds and thinking, one suspects, of his hawks or of the boat he was building. Interest revived on the arrival of a staff officer; a few words of his conversation with the Colonel were heard: 'No inspection to-day . . . Multan . . . information . . . at once." Officers were sent for to the Regimental Office and over the map information was given that our old friend Multan was at that moment lying up in the caves of a nullah on the Phandu Plain, some seven miles away. This time we could hunt by daylight, we could move off the roads and across country. A plan was quickly formed for an enveloping move by two squadrons, a third to get rapidly on to his line of retreat and close the exits to the hills, while the fourth was to go straight for the outlaw's lair. Off we all went, a fine hunting morning and a good scent this time.

The fourth squadron, under Captain L., then the master of the Peshawar Vale Hounds and subsequently a Brigadier in the Great War, were the first to get in touch with the enemy, who opened the battle by firing on the leading patrol. The main body of the squadron was by this time exceedingly small owing to the number of 'stops' it was necessary to leave in the numerous nullahs on the way to prevent the raiders sneaking away unnoticed, as had happened at night on former occasions. There was no time to be lost or they would once more fade away. Captain L. hurriedly collected all he could, a body of about the strength of a troop, consisting of his two subalterns, C. and M., an Indian Officer, a farrier, a trumpeter, and the few remaining sowars, and galloped to the place where the patrol reported they saw the

Digitized by Google

raiders departing. L. charged straight in: he was shot through the knee; M.'s horse was shot dead and M. stunned by the fall, and some of the sowars were killed and wounded. It looked as if the raiders might get away once more. A troop from the flank galloped up in the nick of time and C., the remaining subaltern, taking command, engaged the enemy in a fire fight as the country now was hardly rideable and there was a distinct danger that the enemy might slip away down one of the nullahs in the broken country. C. managed to hold them by his fire, and was gradually reinforced in driblets by patrols, stops, and scouts, attracted by the sound of firing. The raiders, ably led by Multan, fought a rear-guard action in the most approved style, making good use of their modern rifles for covering fire. Several of them were killed or wounded and Multan himself was killed by a Duffadar. The remainder took up a position in a cup-shaped depression and appeared to be prepared to fight to an end. The other squadrons, having heard the firing, were galloping hard to the scene.

The raiders were now surrounded, and we shouted to them to throw their arms down, as the game was up. This they did when they realised the tables were turned, saying, 'All right, we're Pathans and have made a good fight,' or words to that effect as Courts Martial have it.

A perspiring company of the 57th Rifles now arrived on the scene, having 'doubled' practically the whole way from Peshawar—a Pathan company led by the gallant J. W., who was afterwards killed in France. The Pathans of this company, true to type, couldn't bear to see the surrendered rifles of the raiders lying untended on the ground, so promptly proceeded to annex them. The Pathan Squadron in the Cavalry promptly interfered. 'Bang' went one of the rifles in the scuffle, for they were of course loaded, and 'Bang,' 'bang' went two more from the other end of the raiders' position. However, no one was hurt, and the raiders

Digitized by Google

stood quietly looking on, smiling sardonically. Order was restored and, the fight being over, matters were handed over to the District Superintendent of Police and a Political Officer, who had been in the hunt throughout. The latter had his bridle reins cut in two by a raider's bullet, but otherwise escaped injury.

Those of the raiders taken alive were conducted to Peshawar Jail, where they were all subsequently hanged.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA

LIEUT.-GENERAL H. G. CHAUVEL, G.C.M.G., K.C.B.
Commander Desert Mounted Corps, E.E.F.
Now Inspector-General Commonwealth Military Forces, Australia.

BRIG.-GENERAL L. C. WILSON, C.B. C.M.G., D.S.O.
3rd Light Horse Brigade, A.I. Force.

MAJOR-GENERAL E. TIVEY, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., V.D.

BRIG.-GENERAL W. GRANT, C.M.G., D.S.O.
Commanding 4th Australian Light Horse Brigade, E.E.F.

Digitized by Google

SOME AUSTRALIAN CAVALRY LEADERS

THE decisive *rôle* played by the Australian Mounted Troops in the Egyptian Expeditionary Force is well known to all students of cavalry warfare, but the leaders of those mounted troops are for the most part mere names to the British Cavalry. The photographs on the opposite page and the short biographical notes that follow should, therefore, be of interest to our readers.

Lieut.-General Sir Harry G. Chauvel, G.C.M.G., K.C.B., was born at Tabulam, a cattle station on the Clarence River in northern New South Wales, in 1865. His grandfather was a retired officer of the Indian Army, who acquired the property in 1842. Chauvel originally intended to enter Sandhurst, but his father's interests in landed property in Australia could not be overlooked, and he took up station life, joining a cavalry unit, the Upper Clarence Light Horse (raised by his father in 1886), and now expanded into the 12th (New England) Light Horse and the 15th Light Horse (New South Wales Northern River Lancers).

In 1890 he took over the management of his father's cattle station on the Darling Downs and joined the Queensland Mounted Infantry. In 1896 he joined the Queensland Permanent Staff and, after the Federation of the Australian States, held several important Staff appointments. In the South African War he commanded successively the Queensland Mounted Infantry, Chauvel's Mounted Infantry, and the 7th Australian Commonwealth Horse, and earned a C.M.G. and a Brevet Lieut.-Colonelcy.

He began the Great War in command of the 1st Australian

Digitized by Google

Light Horse Brigade, was promoted to command the Australian and New Zealand Mounted Division, and finally the Desert Mounted Corps.

Major-General E. Tivey, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., V.D., was first appointed to a commission in the Victorian Mounted Rifles in 1889.

Served in the South African War (1900–2) as a Squadron Leader in the Victorian Imperial Regiment, and second in command of the 1st Commonwealth Contingent.

On his return to Australia he held the appointment of Brigade Major of, and subsequently commanded, the 3rd Light Horse Brigade.

He embarked in 1915 with the Australian Imperial Force in command of the 8th Australian Infantry Brigade, which saw service in Egypt and France.

He commanded the 5th Australian Division in France in 1918 and 1919, and now commands the 2nd Australian Cavalry Division.

Brigadier-General W. Grant, C.M.G., D.S.O., was born at Hawell in Victoria on September 30, 1870. Son of Edmund Craigie Grant, a mineowner and landowner in that district. Educated at the Brighton Grammar School and the Melbourne University where he graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Civil Engineering. He was engaged for two years in railway construction, and then relinquished his profession to supervise the family interests in pastoral properties. In 1896 he bought the Bowerville Station on the Darling Downs, Queensland, and has made that his home.

He obtained his first commission to the Queensland Mounted Infantry in 1901 and succeeded to the command of the Darling Downs Light Horse in 1910.

At the beginning of the Great War he was appointed to the command of the 11th Light Horse Regiment, which he

Digitized by Google

raised and trained. He took part in the Gallipoli campaign with his regiment and in all the important actions of the Egyptian Expeditionary Force, commanding first the 3rd and then the 4th Light Horse Brigades. He earned a D.S.O. with a bar and a C.M.G.

Brigadier-General Lenham Chisholm Wilson, C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O., a Queenslander from Brisbane, where he practised as a solicitor. He began his military career as a trooper in the South African War, commanded the 5th Light Horse Regiment in Sinai and was promoted to command the 3rd Light Horse Brigade in October, 1917.

CHURCH BELLS WHICH RECORD MILITARY HISTORY

THE eight Bells of St. Helen's Church, Worcester, bear names and inscriptions as here shown :—

I.	*Blenheim.*	'First is my note, and Blenheim is my name; For Blenheim's story will be first in fame.'
II.	*Barcelona.*	'Let me relate how Louis did bemoan His Grandson Philip's flight from Barcelon.'
III.	*Ramilies.*	'Deluged in blood I, Ramilies, advance Britannia's glory in the fall of France.'
IV.	*Menin.*	'Let Menin on my sides engraven be, And Flanders freed from Gallic slavery.'
V.	*Turin.*	'When in harmonious peal I roundly go, Think on Turin and triumphs of the Po.'
VI.	*Eugene.*	'With joy, I bear illustrious Eugen's name Fav'rite of fortune and the boast of fame.'
VII.	*Marlborough.*	'But I, with pride, the greater Marlborough bear, Terror of tyrants, and the soul of war.'
VIII.	*Queen Anne.*	'Th' immortal praises of Queen Anne I sound, With Union blest, and all these glories crown'd.'

Digitized by Google

ENGLISH AND FOREIGN WRITERS ON MILITARY INSTRUCTIONS FOR CAVALRY

By Lieut.-Colonel F. H. D. C. Whitmore, C.M.G., D.S.O., T.D.

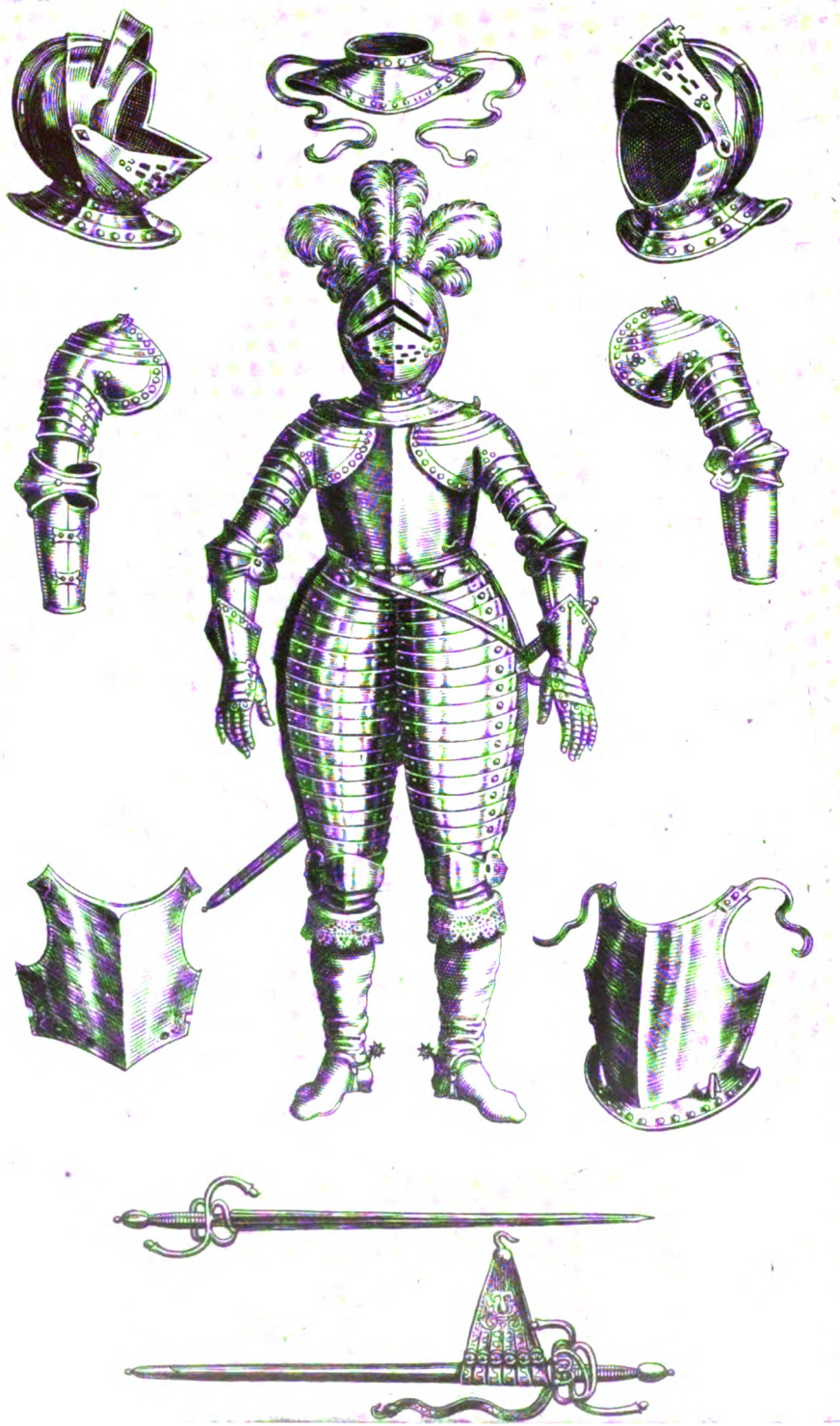
The previous four numbers of this *Journal* have contained a *précis*, also reproductions of chapters, taken from a book written by Captain John Cruso called 'Military Instructions for the Cavallrie.' This book was printed and published in the year 1644, and is the second edition, apparently, of a book written about ten years before that date. Captain John Cruso is very honest in his letter of introduction to the reader and explains that he is endeavouring, in his contribution, to supply what has been lacking in books on this subject, written by George Basta, Count of the Holy Empire, and Luys Melzo, Knight of Malta. He complains that these authors, although their works afforded good directions, 'had so written, as if none should read them but such as were already skilfull in the Art Military.' He, however, justifies his complaint against them by quoting from Ælian, who, he says, lodged the same complaint against those who wrote books on the same subject before him. 'Omnes fere ita unanimiter scripsisse, quasi docere homines vellent non ignores, sed satis earum rerum peritos, quas explicare statuerent.' (*Ælian de instruend acieb Cap. I.*).

John Cruso tells us that a writer, Wallhausen, does supply this defect, 'but for the first rudiments, for the handling of arms, etc., he (as all others) is silent.'

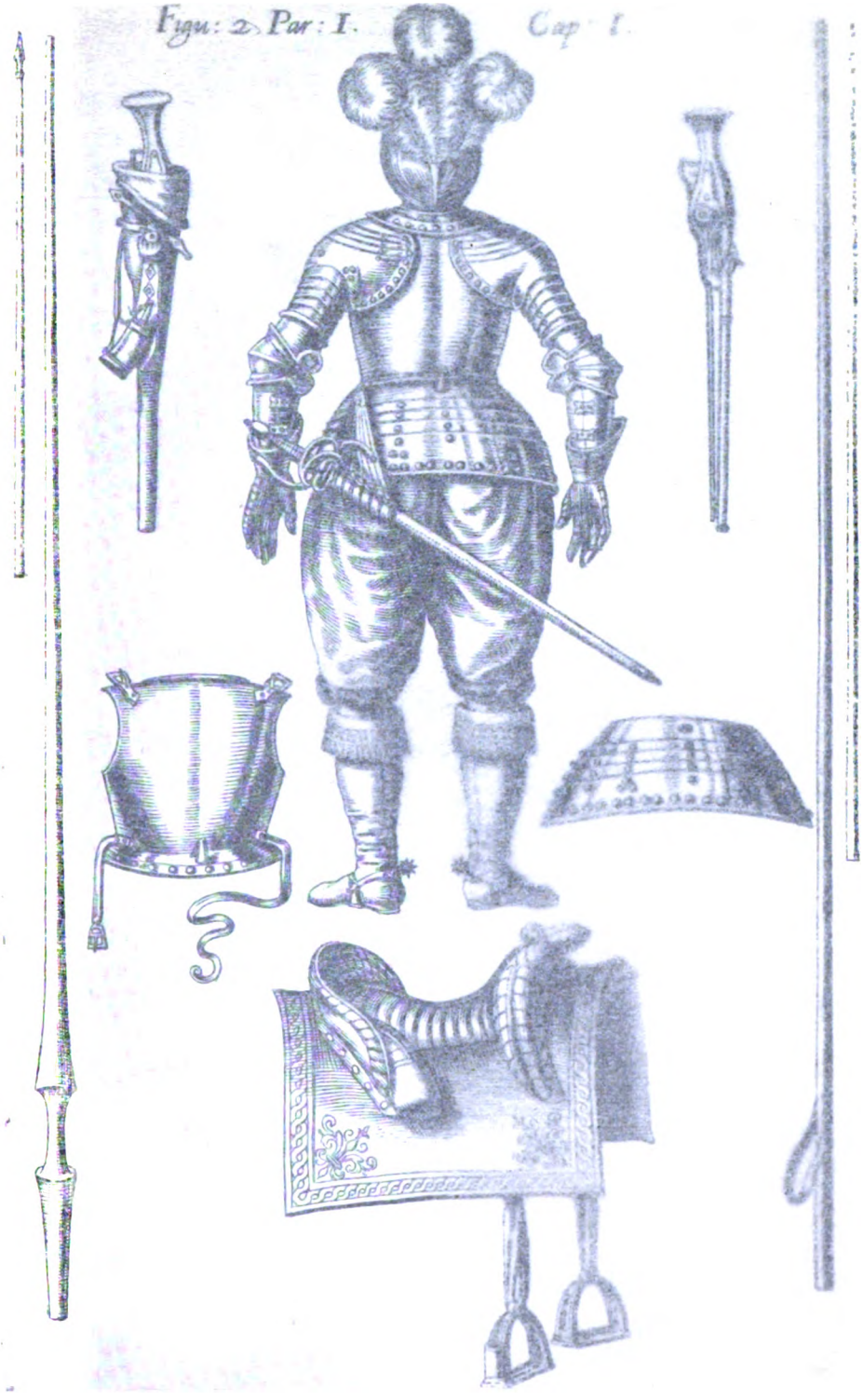
It is somewhat curious that our friend Captain John Cruso made no further reference to this last-named military writer, because it is obvious that he took upon himself to copy

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

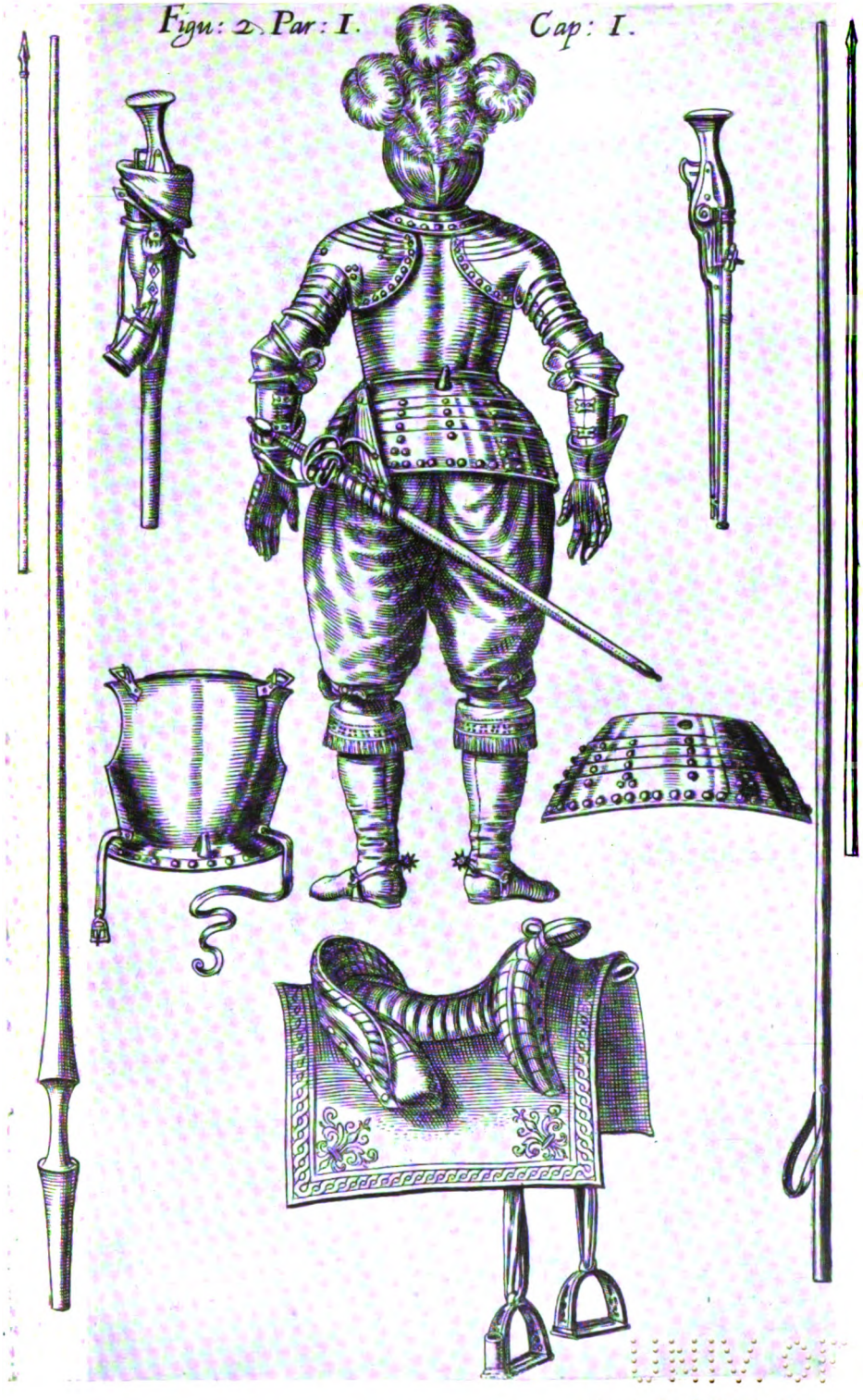


Digitized by Google

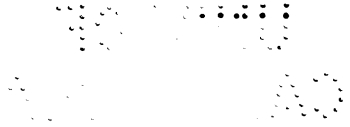


Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

practically the whole arrangement of Wallhausen's book of instruction to the Cavalry.

Jean Jaques de Wallhausen was Principal Capitaine des Gardes, et Capitaine de la louable ville de Danzick, and he wrote his book 'Art Militaire a Cheval Instruction des principes et fondements de la Cavallerie, et de les quatre espaces, Ascanoir Lances, Corrasses, Arquebus, et drageons, avec tout ce qui est de leur charge et exercise.' This book was printed by Paul Jaques at Francfort in the year 1606. The arrangement of this book, which is written, of course, in French, is almost identical with that of John Cruso. He divides his book into five parts, dealing with the various arms in the first part, followed by exercises in the second part, the employment of different arms in battle in the third part and so on. The most significant instance, however, of John Cruso's respect for Wallhausen is in the illustrations which accompany his book. The illustration reproduced with this number is from the book of Wallhausen. Now, if the reader will refer back to page 273 of the July number of the *Cavalry Journal*, 1923, he will see the same grouping of armour; only, in order to save space, Captain John Cruso crowded the two pages of illustrations into one. There are quite a number of similar instances of this sort both as regards the wording and also illustrations.

We are indebted to His Grace the Duke of Buccleugh for the references to both of the books under review. Captain John Cruso's book was found at Bowhill, and the book written by Jean Jaques of Wallhausen was found in the library at Boughton.

Digitized by Google

HUSSARS

By Captain Russell V. Steele

When Mathias Corvinus succeeded to the crown of Hungary in the middle of the fifteenth century, Mahomed III. and Frederick III. conspired to dethrone 'the boy king.' Mathias, however, rose to the occasion. He decided to form a regular and powerful force of cavalry, and decreed that one man should be enrolled out of every twenty families. The men were to share the expense of equipment and horses among themselves. This Cavalry or Militia went by the name of Hussars—the term 'hussar' being derived from the Hungarian words, *huss*, twentieth; *ar*, pay. These horsemen used large swords, straight or curved, which were worn attached to a girdle at the waist. A certain number of men were equipped with thin straight thrusting swords.

Skirmishing in loose formation, they swarmed all over the country, and, where possible, encircled the enemy. Their saddles of light wood were covered with skins, under which were carried their housings and pistols. A folded blanket served as a 'numnah' and bridoons were used in the place of bits. The riders were thus enabled to pasture their horses quickly when a halt was called, without the necessity of unbridling.

The uniform of these Hungarian horsemen was designed from the practical point of view, and was afterwards copied by a number of European armies.

The headdress was, in its original form, probably the same as that worn by the Uzbecs of Bukhara: a conical cap of

Digitized by Google

silk or cloth bordered with fur; the top, being allowed to fall over, made the hanging bag. This cap was called a 'colback,' from the Turkish *kalpak*. The Turks may possibly have introduced it into Hungary or they may have found it there, as the Hungarians were of Oriental origin. The hanging bag was probably to protect the neck against sabre cuts.

The English term 'busby' came into use when the Hungarian fur cap was first adopted in the British Army about the year 1808.

The jacket or dolman was worn short and braided down the front. Over this was worn a pelisse or hanging jacket, braided all round with fur, and generally slung over the left shoulder. Tight pantaloons and low, leather, spurred boots completed the costume. In later years a sabre-tache was also worn, attached by three leather slings to the sword belt. As firearms, a brace of horse pistols were carried on the saddle.

A coloured print of a Hungarian Hussar in 1710 (Plate I.) shows the brown fur colback with red hanging bag, red dolman, and pantaloons with yellow facings, and low boots of yellow leather. A blue pelisse lined with fur is slung over the left shoulder.

The horseman is riding a fiery Hungarian mount.

In Poland, light cavalry of the Hussar type had been in being since the Middle Ages. They wore a hauberk and depended on the sabre. As time went on they were equipped with an extra sabre and rode out on their forays with one sabre slung to their side and the other under the left thigh, fastened to the saddle.

Well equipped, and with their saddlery and clothing covered with a profusion of furs, they must have made an imposing show as they marched out with a numerous retinue of servants. These servants formed in rear of their masters, to aid and assist them in battle.

At a later period the Polish Hussars adopted the battle

Digitized by Google

formation of squadrons of 100 Hussars in the front rank, with four ranks in rear composed of the four armed servants of each Hussar. Zeddler states that these Hussars carried lances 19 feet in length with coloured pennons. When fighting the Austrians, Frederick the Great encountered great difficulties through the vigilance and dexterity of the enemy's Hussars. These light horsemen swarmed all over the country-side and captured numbers of the Prussian convoys and patrols.

Although quite unable to withstand Frederick's Cavalry in regular pitched battles, yet they completely outclassed them in irregular warfare and outpost duty.

In 1744 the Austrians had 10,000 Hungarian Hussars, who acted as a screen for the army and cut off the Prussian communications. Carlyle relates that no less than six despatch bearers were sent by Frederick to an outlying general in succession, but not one of them penetrated the screen formed by the enemy's Hussars. The letter bags were captured and for four weeks Frederick was cut off from the outside world.

The Prussian Hussars (Plate III.) were organised in regiments of ten squadrons each (51 officers, 110 sub-officers, and 1,440 troopers composed a regiment).

The proportion of officers was much larger than in the Austrian service. Frederick profited by his war experiences and improved the outpost training of the cavalry, but it was in shock tactics that his cavalry excelled. With such daring and impetuous leaders as Seidlitz and Zeiten, his cavalrymen could ride down all opposition. It was Frederick the Great who first conceived the idea of Horse Artillery to aid his Cavalry in the attack.

The uniform of the Hussar regiments was modelled on that of the Hungarians, and although from 1759 to 1846 various changes were made in the headdress, and overalls displaced pantaloons and knee boots, the dolman and pelisse remained of much the same pattern. In 1759 Von Zeiten's

Digitized by Google

famous regiment of 'Death's Head Hussars' wore a brown fur cap without plume or chin strip, a scarlet dolman with pelisse of the same colour edged with white fur, white buckskin breeches and knee boots. The facings were white.

The uniform of the Duke of Brunswick's Hussars, the 'Black Brunswickers,' at the time of the Waterloo Campaign, was black. The shako bore on its front the device of the skull and cross-bones. This uniform was worn as mourning for their first Commandant, the Duke of Brunswick.

In the year 1691 Louis XIV. inspected a number of Hungarian Hussars at Versailles, and entertained them in Paris at his own expense. Soon after he ordered the raising of a number of Hussar regiments in the French Army.

The Cavalry of the French Revolutionary Army in 1793 contained twelve regiments of Hussars, armed with carbine, curved sabre and pistol, and organised on a Dragoon basis.

These twelve Hussar Regiments, with twenty-five Regiments of Chasseurs-à-cheval, formed the light cavalry of the army. The Hussars were only supposed to charge in cases of emergency, but Chasseurs-à-cheval were constantly used both for outpost duties and in the charge. The Regiments consisted of four squadrons of about 200 men each. In 1797 General Hoche united the Hussars, Dragoons and Chasseurs together in separate divisions.

According to Jomini, during the campaign in Holland in 1795, the French General ordered a large force of Hussars and Horse Artillery to cross the frozen Zuyder Zee and attack the Dutch fleet in the Texel. The Hussars charged the ships as depicted at the foot of the French Hussar plate, and forced the Dutch Admiral to surrender the fleet. De Marbot relates in his Memoirs that he was enrolled, when quite a youngster, as a trooper in the Egalité Hussars.

He joined his regiment while it was on active service in Italy. Meissonier has made us familiar with the Hussar uniform of this period. A tall black shako tapering toward the top,

Digitized by Google

surmounted by a plume, and encircled by a coloured turban, formed the cavalryman's headdress. No peak was provided, and no chin strap was attached.

De Marbot tells us that his face was soon burnt almost black by the fierce rays of the Italian sun. A tight-fitting dolman and the usual slung pelisse, pantaloons and Hessian boots completed the uniform. The sabre was broad and curved, and a sabre-tache was worn. A distinctive wig was worn by these Hussars, and as well as a pigtail, two plaited 'love-locks' were worn drooping over the collar in front. No doubt this wig protected the nape of the neck from the sun.

All the troopers, according to De Marbot, wore enormous upturned moustachios, but, unfortunately, the youthful recruit's upper lip was devoid even of a downy growth. An old 'moustache' (trooper) soon remedied this defect and with the aid of a little soot and his finger, he quickly presented the youthful recruit with a ferocious pair of moustachios.

They were a roystering devil-may-care lot of fellows those Egalité Hussars, and lived entirely 'on the country.'

Born 'lady-killers' they doubtless fully earned the motto frequently applied to them:

'Croirait-on qu'il fut né seulement pour la guerre!
Il semble être fait pour l'amour'

Napoleon increased the number of Hussar Regiments and altered the uniform. The type of shako was changed and one with a broad top and sloping peak with cheek scales was introduced. A pompom and plume rose from the front of this headdress. Later an enormous fur busby displaced the shako for a time. Conan Doyle's Brigadier Gérard makes a picturesque figure in fiction in the *rôle* of a debonnair Hussar of the Empire. In the campaign in Egypt Napoleon mounted a number of Hussars on dromedaries. They were given dust-coloured coats and called the 'Régiment des Dromadaires.'

After Waterloo the Hussar uniform was again changed,

Digitized by Google

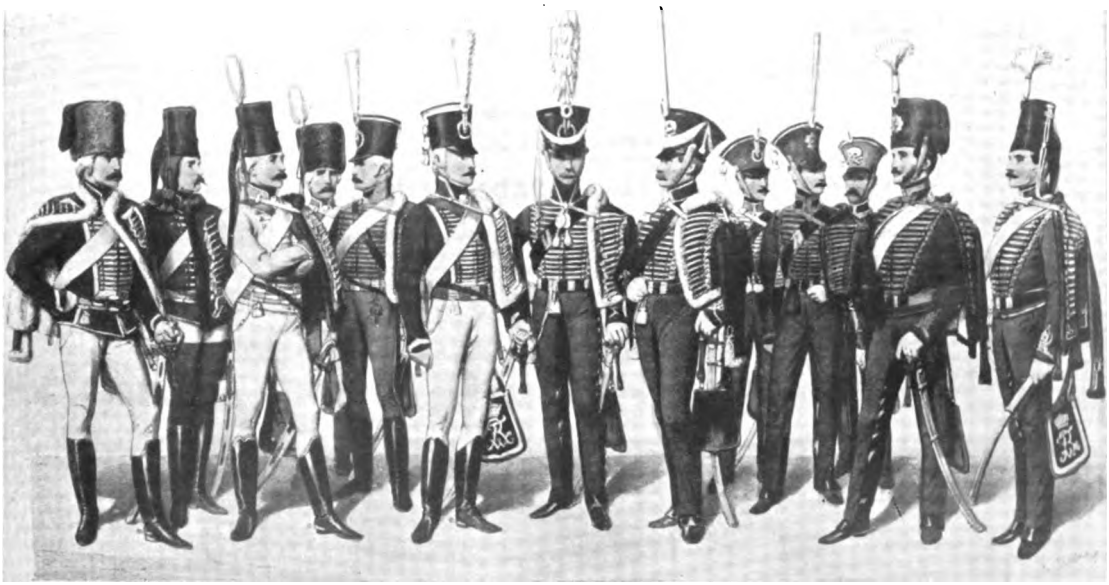
Plate I.

HUNGARIAN HUSSAR, 1710.

Plate II.

HUNGARIAN HUSSAR OF THE LIFE GUARD.

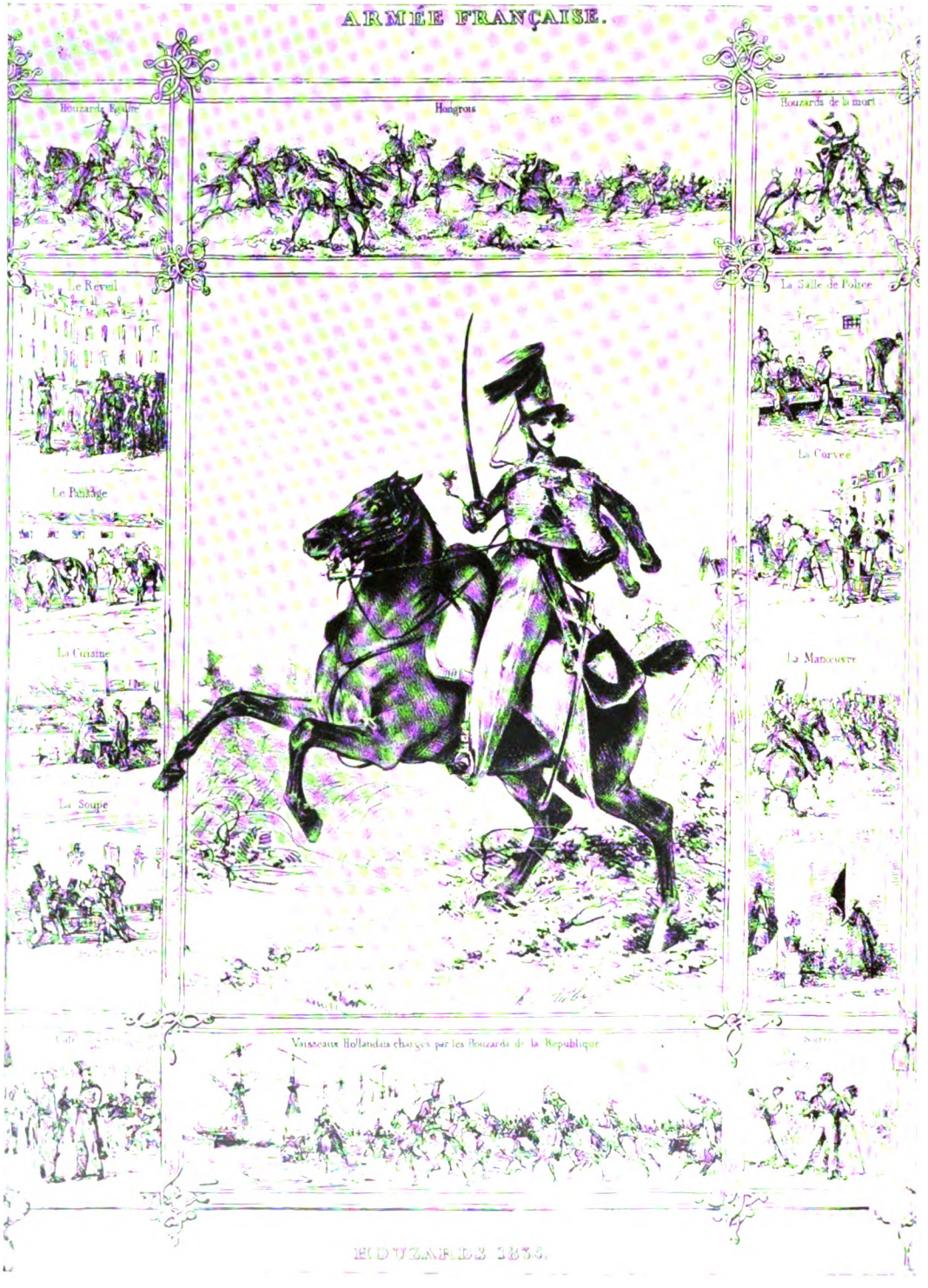
Plate III.



1720 1836 1813 1824 1832

PRUSSIAN HUSSAR UNIFORMS.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

and in 1835 we find them wearing a tall straight plumed shako and baggy red strapped trousers.

About the year 1835 the Hussars of the Guard at Naples wore a plumed shako, scarlet dolman and sky-blue overalls.

The conversion of the 7th, 10th, 15th, and 18th Light Dragoons into Hussars in 1803–1806 introduced new uniforms into the British Army.

The Hussars' jackets and pelisses were very fine. The headdress consisted of a black shako 8 inches deep by 11 inches diameter at the top, with a broad band of lace round it, a 'wheel' in front, and a white vertical plume, and gilt or silver cheek scales. White buckskin breeches and black Hessian boots completed the costume.

In 1808 fur busbies replaced the shako, with a scarlet bag and red and white plume. These again gave way to shakos in 1812.

At one time gold lace 'plastrons' were embroidered on the front of the upper half of each leg of the overalls or pantaloons.

After the Crimean War the dolman and pelisse were abolished in the Regular Army and the present Hussar jacket was adopted. Up to 1914 the slung pelisse was still worn in full dress by at least one Yeomanry regiment. To-day it still survives in a few Balkan Cavalry regiments, and it was worn by some of the officers present at the recent coronation of the King of Rumania.

Digitized by Google

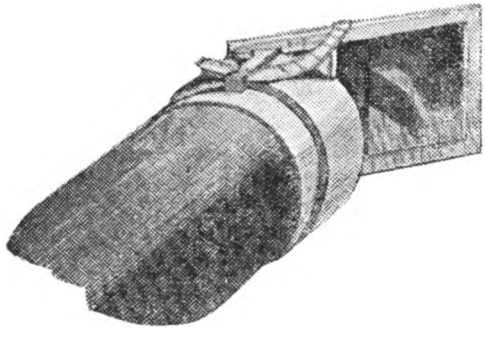
INVENTIONS IN WAR

THOSE of us who served in the trenches at the beginning of the late war will remember the extremely primitive nature of the various 'periscopes' devised to observe from behind cover, and also the first 'hand grenades' made out of 'plum and apple' tins. We thought the ideas were new ones, but, like many of the devices, they were in reality only the reintroduction of old ideas, as will be seen from the following extracts from the *Illustrated London News* at the time of the Crimean War :—

(*Illustrated London News*, August 4, 1855.)

LUBBOCK'S RECONNOITRING REFLECTOR.

'This simple and ingenious apparatus has just been patented by Mr. John Lubbock, of the eminent banking firm of Mansion House Square, and is intended for reconnoitring purposes, giving the person using it, under cover



of any defence work which can afford personal protection, the power of inspecting objects on either side of him, without directly exposing himself to the fire of the enemy whose position he is anxious to obtain information about.

'The apparatus consists of a simple reflector of glass or polished metal, attached to a brass band which fits on the end of the telescope (as shown in the engraving). This is connected with a divided scale and screw for adjusting the angle of the reflector, and opens from the front of the glass with a spring.

Digitized by Google

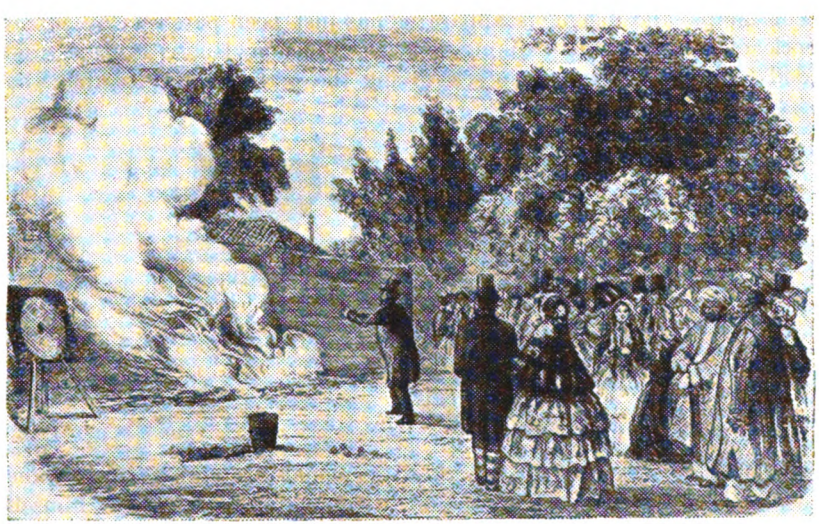
'At the present time, its introduction must be a great boon to Officers and others serving at the seat of war, and the expense being of a most trifling character puts it within the means of everyone.'

(*Illustrated London News*, August 18, 1855.)

Captain Disney's War Projectile.

'A number of experiments have been made during the last few weeks in the neighbourhood of Chelsea Hospital, and, more recently, at Lord Ranelagh's residence, Fulham, for the purpose of testing the merits of a new war projectile, the invention of Captain Disney. From the account given, it appears that the new destructive missile is a reproduction of the celebrated Greek fire, by which, material the most difficult to ignite under ordinary circumstances, are readily consumed. It is said to be admirably adapted for use as a hand grenade, as well as in other modes, and Captain Disney states that the chemical preparations which he employs, if the risk of carrying it out ready made is objected to, can be easily manufactured at the seat of war.

'Captain Disney also established at Ranelagh a shell for causing temporary blindness amongst troops brought within its influence. Of course the company present, which included the Duke of Wellington and a number of officers, took the precaution of keeping at a safe distance from so formidable a projectile at the moment of its explosion, although the inventor stated that he had prepared the charge in a very mild form so as to avoid any awkward consequences to the company assembled. After the fumes had somewhat



dispersed, Lord Ranelagh passed through them without any injury to his optics. Other gentlemen who went up to the shell after it had exploded experienced some irritation in the nostrils, which some of them compared to the effects produced by Lundyfoot snuff.'

Digitized by Google

NOTES

Army Rifle Association

The King's Dragoon Guards and the 14/20th Hussars have proved once again that in rifle shooting the Cavalry can more than hold their own with other arms. They were first and second for The Queen Victoria Trophy (grand aggregate), King George Cup (Officers' Team), Royal Irish Cup (Warrant Officers and Sergeants) and the 18th Hussars Cup. The King's Dragoon Guards were also placed first in the Young Soldiers' Cup.

'B' Squadron, King's Dragoon Guards, won the Squadron Shield, and 'C' Squadron 14/20th Hussars was second.

A Recruiting Poster of the 14th Light Dragoons

A Horse; a Horse; my Kingdom for a Horse!

Now, my lads, for the 14th Light Dragoons, or the Duchess of York's Own. All you who are kicking your heels behind a solitary desk with too little wages and a pinch gut master —all you with too much wife, or are perplexed with obstinate and unfeeling parents, may apply to:

Sergeant Hammond,
Rose and Crown, Whitechapel.

You are quartered in the fertile County of Kent, where you have provisions remarkably cheap, luxurious living to the brave and ambitious mind is but a secondary object, else thousands would repair to the standard of the gallant 14th, could they obtain the honour of being received. Those of address and education are sure of preferment, your comforts

Digitized by Google

in this Service surpass all clerks or mechanics, an hospitable table and capacious bowl of punch that will float or sink the little Corsican Chief.

N.B.—Four Farriers are wanted, and a Master for the Band.

'God Save the King!'

The 14th bore the title of 'The Fourteenth or the Duchess of York's Own Regiment of Light Dragoons' from 1798 to 1830, when King William IV. commanded that its title should be changed to the 'Fourteenth or the King's Regiment of Light Dragoons.'

Recruiting.

A recruiting Sergeant of the 20th Light Dragoons at Charing Cross advertises for such spirited young men as are desirous of making their '*fortunes:*' for that purpose he invites them immediately to repair to his office, opposite to the rich and flourishing house of Drummonds the bankers, where there is more '*gold*' than in '*all France.*'

'The Dorset Yeomen at Agagia.' The original picture by Lady Butler hangs in the County Hall at Dorchester. We are indebted to Colonel J. R. Goodden of Compton House, Sherborne, for the engraving from which the reproduction was made.

Royal United Service Institution

The Secretary of the R.U.S.I. has informed us that while the membership has been steadily increasing since the war the proportion of Cavalry Officers joining is very small. We are confident that Cavalry Officers have not only to visit the Institution to realise the advantages which it offers to members. The subscription is one guinea per year, and the library is the best military library in the country.

Digitized by Google

Battle Honours

Cavalry and Yeomanry Awards

Considerable progress has now been made with the award of Battle Honours for the Great War. The following have been announced. The Honours printed in capitals are those which have been selected to be borne on Colours or Appointments :

1st King's Dragoon Guards.

'SOMME, 1916,' 'MORVAL,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–17.'

5th Dragoon Guards (Princess Charlotte of Wales's).

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'Aisne, 1914,' 'La Bassée, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Frezenberg,' 'BELLEWAARDE,' 'Arras, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Rosières,' 'AMIENS,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

7th Dragoon Guards (Princess Royal's).

'LA BASSÉE, 1914,' 'GIVENCHY, 1914,' 'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'BAZENTIN,' 'Flers-Courcelette,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'AVRE,' 'Lys,' 'Hazebrouck,' 'AMIENS,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'St. Quentin Canal,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

1st The Royal Dragoons.

'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Langemarck, 1914,' 'Gheluvelt,' 'Nonne Bosschen,' 'FREZENBERG,' 'LOOS,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Avre,' 'AMIENS,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Beaurevoir' 'CAMBRAI, 1918,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

The Royal Scots Greys (2nd Dragoons).

'Mons,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'Messines, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Neuve Chapelle,' 'St. Julien,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'Cambrai, 1917,' 'Lys,' 'Hazebrouck,' 'AMIENS,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'St. Quentin Canal,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

Digitized by Google

5th Royal Irish Lancers.

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Gheluvelt,' 'St. Julien,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'Somme, 1918,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

9th Queen's Royal Lancers.

'Mons,' 'Le Cateau,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'La Bassée, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Gravenstafel,' 'St. Julien,' 'Frezenberg,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'Somme, 1916, '18,' 'Pozières,' 'Flers-Courcelette,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'St. Quentin,' 'ROSIÈRES,' 'Avre,' 'Amiens,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

13th Hussars.

'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–16,' 'KUT AL AMARA, 1917,' 'BAGHDAD,' 'SHARQAT,' 'MESOPOTAMIA, 1916–18.'

14th King's Hussars.

'TIGRIS, 1916,' 'KUT AL AMARA, 1917,' 'BAGHDAD,' 'MESOPOTAMIA, 1915–18,' 'PERSIA, 1918.'

16th The Queen's Lancers.

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Ypres, 1915,' 'ST. JULIEN,' 'BELLEWAARDE,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'AMIENS,' 'Pursuit to Mons,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

17th Lancers (Duke of Cambridge's Own).

'FESTUBERT, 1914,' 'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'MORVAL,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'AVRE,' 'Lys,' 'HAZEBROUCK,' 'AMIENS,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

19th Royal Hussars (Queen Alexandra's Own).

'LE CATEAU,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'ARMENTIÈRES, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1915,' 'Frezenberg,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Rosières,' 'AMIENS,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

Digitized by Google

Buckinghamshire Yeomanry (Royal Bucks Hussars).

'ARRAS, 1918,' 'SCARPE, 1918,' 'YPRES, 1918,' 'Courtrai,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'Suvla,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'EL MUGHAR,' 'Nebi Samwil,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Hampshire (Carabiniers) (Dragoons).

'MESSINES, 1917,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'ARRAS, 1918,' 'YPRES, 1918,' 'COURTRAI,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1916–17, 1918,' 'ITALY, 1917–18.'

The Leicestershire Yeomanry (Prince Albert's Own) (Hussars).

'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'ST. JULIEN,' 'FREZENBERG,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'SCARPE, 1917,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

Nottinghamshire Yeomanry (South Nottinghamshire Hussars).

'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'ÉPEHY,' 'St. Quentin Canal,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'SELLE,' 'SAMBRE,' 'France and Flanders, 1918,' 'STRUMA,' 'Macedonia, 1916–17,' 'SUVLA,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'Gallipoli, 1915,' 'Egypt, 1915–16,' 'GAZA,' 'EL MUGHAR,' 'NEBU SAMWIL,' 'Palestine, 1917–18.'

Shropshire Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'ÉPEHY,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'JERICHO,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

West Somerset Yeomanry (Hussars).

'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'ÉPEHY,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

The Warwickshire Yeomanry (Hussars).

'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Épehy,' 'ST. QUENTIN CANAL,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'Selle,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'Suvla,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'Rumani,' 'RAFAH,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Digitized by Google

DOMINION AND FOREIGN MAGAZINES

THE *Revue de Cavalerie* for December opens with an account, by Captain Gazin, of the manœuvres on the Sarre, in which armoured cars with 'tracks,' instead of wheels, were used in co-operation with the advanced cavalry. The tracked vehicles were of the Citroén-Kégresse touring type, and seem to have fulfilled their *rôle* adequately.

Cross country tractors for offensive work with cavalry, the author concludes, should be light, quick moving and handy; they do not require much protective armour. They are valuable for rapidly gaining contact where no roads exist, the reconnaissance of a wide front, and for internal communication.

Another article gives the details of a series of experiments in long and rapid marching which have been carried out from Saumur. In one case 200 kilometres (150 miles) were covered in 52 hours and in another 196 kilometres in 44 hours.

The January number contains an article on Show Jumping, by L. de Sevy, in which the views on this subject generally accredited to the French are somewhat modified. The writer makes a careful analysis from action photographs of some distinguished French horsemen and horses leaping various obstacles. His remarks in the main are directed to assist the rider, and the question of helping the horse by the position of the rider's body is not seriously considered. Some interesting facts about the horses' movements in jumping are disclosed from the photographs, and it is of advantage to study them with special regard to the use of the hocks, and the head and neck.

Digitized by Google

The January number of the *American Cavalry Journal* shows that Cavalrymen across the sea are determined not to miss the lessons of Palestine.

A short review of 'Cavalry in the World War' (Colonel Kirkby Walker) clearly brings out the invaluable services rendered by this arm on all fronts. Of Palestine, he says, 'It is probable that these operations will become a classic, for they constitute a nearly ideal example of the proper use of all arms and of Cavarly in particular.'

Two other articles are devoted to this Campaign, one by Captain Cruikshank (late 18th Lancers) giving an excellent picture of regimental life during the advance.

In the same number Major G. S. Patton, Jr., contributes a delightful imaginative account of future warfare, combined with much common sense, in his 'Armoured Cars with Cavalry.' The description of the charge of the 'Deathbolts' is worthy of Mr. Wells at his best, but the latter part of the article is in a more serious strain. 'As there are no tanks available for issue in this Country which can keep up with any unit of Cavalry,' he confines himself to the study of the duties of armoured cars with advanced cavalry. He is all for mobility rather than heavy armour (wherein he is in agreement with Captain Gazin quoted above), but it is doubtful whether his proposed organisation of cars into troops of nine cars, each of three platoons of three cars, would meet with the approval of Armoured Car Officers in this country as, like machine gunners, they prefer to work in pairs.

Digitized by Google

RECENT PUBLICATIONS

'Elementary Imperial Military Geography.' By Captain D. H. Cole, Army Education Corps. Sifton Praed and Cox, Ltd., 67, St. James's Street, London. 10*s*.

THIS is by far the best book on Military Geography we have yet come across; it contains everything that an officer need know for examination purposes, and indicates many interesting problems which are worthy of a closer study, not only by soldiers but by anyone who takes an interest in Imperial questions.

'Capacity for defence depends on (1) man-power, (2) the raw materials required for war purposes and the means of converting them into manufactured products, and (3) adequate transport to bring each to the required place.' These are the axioms around which the author groups his facts, and he has, we believe, broken fresh ground in selecting this (the correct) viewpoint for the study of Military Geography. By a series of tables he shows that, although a large quantity of wheat, cotton, and other essentials are normally imported into the British Isles from foreign countries, 'the British Empire is almost self-supporting as far as food is concerned, and in fact as far as all commodities of importance, with the exception of petroleum.' It follows that the defence of the communications between the various parts of the Empire is of the first importance, and seventy-five pages are devoted to the most important geographical facts bearing on this question. A chapter on the existing and possible sources of petroleum supply follows, and the latter part of the book deals with the

Digitized by Google

Dominions and Possessions, including their constitutions and government.

If this book reaches a second edition, which it certainly should, we hope that the author will add a chapter summarising the potentialities of the Dominions in man-power and essential commodities (as set forth in the various chapters) and indicating the alternative lines of communication should the normal ones cease to be available.

'Military Law Made Easy.' By Lieutenant-Colonel S. T. Banning, C.B.E., *p.s.c.*, LL.B., B.A., LL.D., published by Messrs. Gale and Polden. 8*s.* 6*d.*

A COMPILATION of some standing. In the thirteenth edition just produced it has been brought up-to-date with the new King's Regulations and other official books. The examination papers and questions which were a feature of the former editions have been omitted, as these are now published by W. O. in the Reports of the Promotion Examinations. The book, however, should be a valuable addition to the catalogue of books necessary for the examination student as well as being a very useful reference for every-day use.

'Veterinary Notes.' By Major R. S. Timmis, D.S.O., Royal Canadian Dragoons. Published by Messrs. Forster Groom and Co. 2*s.*

A VERY condensed, and at the same time a very useful, handbook of reference. The book contains a brief summary of symptoms and treatment of all the ordinary ailments, and should prove a valuable addition to the longer and more detailed works on the same subject.

Digitized by Google

SPORTING NOTES

Racing

THE flat race season which opened a few days ago is likely to be of more interest than usual.

The French, encouraged by their successes of last season, have entered some of their best horses, and there are rumours of several of the best American horses being sent over.

Then there was very little between a good many of last year's two-year olds. Of course, Mumtaz Mahal stood out by herself over a sprint course, but many people maintain that she will never win over more than five to six furlongs. A rather unusual experiment has been tried with her. After last season she was turned out of training for the winter. We believe she is now back with Dawson and hope she has retained her form and that she will develop stamina. Diaphon, Salmon Trout, Knight of the Garter and several others were within about 7 lbs. of each other and it all depends on which has come on most during the winter.

The Royal Artillery held their races at Sandown on Feb. 29.

ROYAL ARTILLERY HUNTERS' STEEPLECHASE of 110 sovs.; 2½ miles.

ARDRUEL (Capt. Dunn), aged, 13st 7lb. ..... Major Cavenagh 1
TANAPEX (Major Walwyn), aged, 13st. 7lb. ..... Owner 2
SINISTER (Mr. C. Darby), aged, 13st. 7lb. ..... Owner 3

Betting—9 to 4 agst ARDRUEL, 7 to 2 agst Tanapex, and 20 to 1 agst Sinister. Won by four lengths; a bad third. Nine starters. Winner trained privately.

ROYAL ARTILLERY UBIQUE PLATE (STEEPLECHASE) of 110 sovs.; 2 miles.

CLIFFORD HALL (Mr. G. Brownhill), b g, by King's Proctor—Lytham Hall, aged, 12st. .....Owner 1
DARK DRAGON (Mr. F. Grove), aged, 12st. 10lb. .....Owner 2
LITTLE CHRISTY (Capt. Sherrard), aged, 12st. .....Owner 3

Betting—11 to 10 on Dark Dragon, 4 to 1 against CLIFFORD HALL and 7 to 1 agst Little Christy.

Won by two lengths; half a length between second and third. Eight starters. Winner trained by owner.

ROYAL ARTILLERY GOLD CUP of 220 sovs.; 3 miles.

LADDOUX (Capt. Latham) b g, by Meleager, dam by Spook—Tricks, aged, 12st. 9lb. .....Owner 1
CLONHUGH (Major Walwyn), aged, 13st. .....Owner 2
BEN VOIRLICH (Mr. H. Lumsden), aged, 12st. .....Owner 3

Betting—6 to 4 agst Clonhugh, 6 to 1 agst LADDOUX, and 20 to 1 agst Ben Voirlich.

Won by two lengths; a bad third. Five starters. Winner trained privately.

Digitized by Google

ROYAL ARTILLERY LIGHT-WEIGHT HUNTERS' STEEPLECHASE of 110 sovs.; 3 miles.

RED EMPRESS (Mr. Sheil's) ch m, by Cellini—Killinchy, aged, 11st. 12lb. Owner 1
AS YOU LIKE IT (Mr. G. Holt), aged, 11st. 12lb. .....Major Cavenagh 2

Betting—6 to 4 agst As You Like It, and 10 to 1 agst RED EMPRESS. Won by four lengths. Five starters. Winner trained privately.

There were two open races.

Three of the best days steeplechasing ever known were held at the National Hunt Meeting at Cheltenham, March 11 to 13. Perfect weather, exciting races and big fields.

THE NATIONAL HUNT STEEPLECHASE of 1,000 sovs.; added to sweepstake of 10 sovs. each: second 150 sovs.; 3rd 100 sovs.; fourth 50 sovs. Four miles.

PATSY V, ch. g by Lord Garragh; dam by Walmsgate (Mr. B. B. Lemon), aged, 12st. 3lb. .....Owner 1
PETER THE PIPER, b or br by The Page or Zria-Gelee (Sir E. Edgar), aged, 12st 3lb .....Mr. P. Whittaker 2
PILOT XI, b g by Jovial–Surprise II (Lord Grimthorpe), aged, 12st 3lb Major Cavanagh 3
The Joker, VIII (Mrs. Caborne), aged, 12st 3lb .....Mr. E. Douglas 0

Also ran—Col. Page-Croft's Red Standard, Mr. H. Deterding's Fearless, Mr. J. Emmett's Cape Pigeon, Mr. G. Gilding's Demon II, Mr. S. Gwyer's Ardmore, Mr. R. Hall-Dare's Collapse, Mr. W. Hanly's Croft House, Mr. H. Holm's Gay Laddie, Lady Palmer's Bonnie Brown, Mr. G. Norton's Proud Lass, Mr. J. Patterson's Jackette, Mr. W. Paul's The Skipper III, Capt. Whitworth's Fluid Magnesia, Mr. R. Young's The Jester III.

(Winner trained by Gore, at Findon.)

Betting—2 to 1 agst Peter the Piper, 5 to 1 agst Fluid Magnesia, 7 to 1 agst Bonnie Brown, 9 to 1 agst PATSY V, 100 to 8 agst The Jester III, 100 to 7 agst Demon II and Cape Pigeon, and 20 to 1 agst any other.

Won by three lengths; bad third, Croft House was fourth, and Collapse last.

Army Point to Point

It had been hoped to hold the Army Point to Point in the Shires this year and a fine course had been selected in the North Warwickshire country, but owing to foot and mouth disease the Committee were obliged to change the venue to the old course at Arborfield Cross. All horses from infected areas were barred, which excluded many keen young sportsmen.

The meeting took place on Saturday, February 15, in perfect weather and was largely attended, the Prince of Wales, the Duke of York and Prince Henry were present. The Prince of Wales and Prince Henry both came to grief, but, fortunately, neither of them was seriously injured. The Army Council were well represented and the presence of many senior officers proved that cross-country riding is still considered an essential part of Army training.

We congratulate Major-General John Vaughan on again winning Earl Cavan's Cup from a large field of jockeys much younger than himself.

Digitized by Google

The results were:—

THE PRINCE OF WALES'S CUP, GRAND MILITARY LIGHT-WEIGHT POINT-TO-POINT STEEPLECHASE.

PIPPIN (Mr. W. J. R. Bedford, R.F.A.) .....Owner 1
CHATEAU D'OR (Captain R. T. Stanyforth, 17th Lancers) .....Owner 2
NIGHTLIGHT (Mr. J. H. Hirsch) (13th-18th Hussars) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Mr. G. S. Meyer's Flash, Captain D'A. Harris's Evergreen Eye, Mr. W. B. Scott's The Unknown, Captain J. de Pret's Red Letter, Mr. D. ff. Blake's Waterford, Mr. J. F. Norris's Garry Owen, Mr. R. B. Colvin's Kismet, the Hon. T. Frankland's Jester VI. and Geisha, Mr. D. V. C. McBarnet's Toby III. and the Prince of Wales's Passport II.

Won by a length; a bad third.

EARL BEATTY'S CUP, GRAND MILITARY WELTER POINT-TO-POINT STEEPLECHASE.

TOMMY V. (Captain F. F. Spicer) (12th Royal Lancers) .....Owner 1
FOXTROT (Mr. A. S. Casey) (Royal Dragoons) .....Owner 2
BUBBLES IV. (Mr. W. B. Scott) (Royal Dragoons) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Lieutenant-Colonel F. W. Bullock-Marsham's Goblin, Prince Henry's Ocean III., Lieutenant-Colonel Malise Graham's Merry Mac, Mr. H. J. Mylne's Tommy Ling, Major W. Holdworth's Paddy, Mr. E. S. Sword's Rouge et Noir, Mr. C. F. Forestier Walker's Lunatic, Captain Rait Kerr's White Socks, Captain P. L. M. Battye's Surprised, Captain Alastair Campbell's The Lear. Lieutenant-Colonel C. Cary-Barnard's Millie, and Squadron Leader J. Everidge's Regina.

Won by two lengths; a length separated second and third.

EARL HAIG'S CUP, CHARGER'S POINT-TO-POINT STEEPLECHASE.

JOHNNIE GO LIGHTLY (Mr. J. C. Friedberger) (R.F.A.) .....Owner 1
GREY TICK (Mr. C. B. Harvey) (10th Royal Hussars) .....Owner 2
KITTY (Lieutenant-Colonel R. C. Williams) (R.F.A.) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Mr. P. L. Wilson's Nonstop, Captain J. H. Dudgeon's Flame, Captain S. V. Kennedy's Fat Anne, Mr. G. W. Heath's Kayenne, Major R. W. Lewis's Tommy, Major F. Anderson's Wilfrid, and Major W. Maitland-Dougall's Take On.

Won by a length; six lengths separated second and third.

NOMINATION RACE.—A Cup presented by the Army Point-to-Point Committee and a sweepstakes of 1 sov. each.

THE PILOT (Mr. P. V. Williams) (Aldershot Command Drag Hunt) .....Owner 1
NIGGER (Mr. P. Brocklehurst Garth) .....Owner 2
BALLYHOURA (Lieutenant-Colonel Malise Graham) (Aldershot Command Drag Hunt) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Prince Henry's Rathgarogue, Mr. C. A. Garner's Rob Roy, Mr. J. N. Purdon's Weapon, Mr. H. Shelley's Seal, and Lieutenant-Colonel R. C. William's Moonlight.

Won by two fields; same distance separated second and third.

THE EARL OF CAVAN'S CUP. Past and Present Point-to-Point Steeplechase.

MERRIE ENGLAND (Major-General J. Vaughan, Retired) .....Owner 1
ROCKSBERG (Lieutenant-Colonel Malise Graham) (10th Royal Hussars) Mr. C. K. Davy 2
LOPPY (Mr. P. L. Wilson) (Royal Dragoons) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Lieutenant C. Buist's (R.N.) Drummer II, Mr. D. ff. Blake's Melba, the Prince of Wales's Little Favourite, Captain E. C. Bowes's Lisleigh, and Captain F. Spooner's Machiavelli.

Won by a length; a neck separated second and third.

Digitized by Google

The Grand Military

Sandown, March 21 and 22

This meeting was a great success. The first day the light was bad, but on the second day it was perfect. The racing was good, although there were many falls, but no one seriously hurt. We were pleased to see one of the races won by an officer of the 13th Hussars, our old regiment. There is talk of the possible transfer of the Grand Military Meeting from Sandown, and Cheltenham is proposed. The reason for this proposed move is that Sandown makes a very good thing out of the meeting and ought to pay more towards the Military funds. We hope the Sandown officials will see their way to be more generous, as the Grand Military Meeting has been held there for so long it would be a pity to move.

First day Results

THE SELLING STEEPLECHASE of 200 sovs.; 2 miles.

NED CARVER (Mr. E. Tattersall), aged, 12st. 13lb. ..... Mr. F. Sankey 1
SOUTH LODGE (Capt. de Trafford), aged, 12st. 3lb. ..... Owner 2
ST. FLAVIEN (Major M. C. C. Harrison), aged, 11st. 7lb. ..... Owner 3

(Winner trained by G. Poole, at Lewes.)

Betting.—Evens NED CARVER, 5 to 4 agst. South Lodge, and 100 to 8 agst St. Flavien.

Won by a neck; three lengths between second and third. No bid for winner.

THE GRAND MILITARY GOLD CUP of 650 sovs.; winner 400 sovs. and a piece of plate value 100 sovs.; 2nd, 100 sovs.; 3rd, 50 sovs. Three miles over steeplechase course.

LEE BRIDGE (Mr. R. Shaw), aged, 11st. 10lb. ..... Owner 1
CLASHING ARMS (Col. W. Anthony), aged, 13st. .....Mr. F. Sankey 2
CLONHUGH (Major C. Walwyn), aged, 12st. ..... Owner 3

Also ran—Capt. Norrie's Arduous, Mr. H. Lumsden's Ben Voirlich, Capt. de Trafford's Charlton III., Capt. R. Vivian's Silver Ring, Capt. Latham's Ballymendel, Lt.-Col. G. Brooke's Lady Belgian, Mr. C. Morris's Grevisk, Col. Tomkinson's Simon's Mount.

(Winner trained by Withington, at Bicester.)

Betting—2 to 1 agst Clashing Arms, 5 to 2 agst Silver Ring, 7 to 1 agst Charlton III. and Arduous, 100 to 8 agst LEE BRIDGE, and 100 to 7 agst any other.

Won by fifteen lengths; bad third. Ballymendel was fourth, and Lady Belgian last.

THE PAST AND PRESENT HANDICAP STEEPLECHASE of 260 sovs. 2½ miles.

RUDDY GLOW (Mr. W. F. Sankey), 6 yrs., 11st. 5lb. ..... Owner 1
PACIFIST (Capt. Grant), aged, 10st. 11lb. ..... Owner 2
WHITE RONALD (Mr. R. McAlpine), aged, 11st. 3lb. .....Mr. Ridley †
JACK HORNER (Mr. P. Nickalls), aged, 10st. 10lb. ..... Mr. Blair †

Also ran—Mr. E. Platt's Maxtoi, Major P. W. Stuart French's Waif II., Capt. R. Vivian's Loch Allen, Mr. G. Whitelaw's Perseverance.

(Winner trained by H. A. Brown, at Atherstone.)

Betting—6 to 4 agst Maxtoi, 7 to 4 agst RUDDY GLOW, and 10 to 1 agst any other.

Won by a length and a half; three lengths between second and third. Loch Allen was fifth, and Perseverance last. † Dead heat for third place.

Digitized by Google

THE MAIDEN HUNTERS' STEEPLECHASE of 250 sovs. 3 miles.

GARRYOWEN (Mr. J. Norris), aged, 11st. 4lb. ..... Owner 1
REDSTART (Capt. Bache Hay), 5 yrs., 12st. .....Major Cavenagh 2
CAPE PIGEON (Mr. J. Emmet), aged, 11st. 4lb. ..... Owner 3

Also ran—Lt.-Col. Bingham's Irish Idol, Lt.-Col. Brooke's St. Omer, Mr. C. Darby's The Snark, Lt.-Col. Graham's Rockberg, Lt.-Col. Gregory's Pneumatic, Major Grubb's Anzac III., Major Hayley's Best Girl, Mr. D. Heneage's Ticker, Mr. F. Jackson's Tyburn, Mr. H. Lumsden's B.B., Capt. McCreery's, Ballycaghan, Capt. Shaw Stewart's Lady Grey II., Capt. de Trafford's The Turk, Mr. G. Whitelaw's Scraper.

(Winner trained privately.)

Betting—4 to 1 agst Redstart and Ballycaghan, 6 to 1 agst Anzac III, 8 to 1 agst Cape Pigeon and Best Girl, 10 to 1 agst B.B., and 100 to 6 agst GARRYOWEN or any other.

Won by a length and a half; four lengths between second and third. Ballycaghan was fourth, and Lady Grey II. last.

Second day Results.

THE TALLY-HO HUNTERS' STEEPLECHASE of 250 sovs. 3 miles.

L'AIGLON II. (Mr. T. Cholmondeley), aged, 10st. 9lb. ..... Owner 1
PADDY RYAN (Lt.-Col. Main), aged, 11st. 7lb. ..... Major Cavenagh 2
GREVISK (Mr. C. Morris), 6 yrs., 10st. 9lb. ..... Capt. McCreery 3

Also ran—Mr. W. Carr's Padre II., Major Harrison's Crimson Rambler VI., Mr. H. Lumsden's Ben Voirlich, Mr. W. Shell's Red Empress, Major C. F. T. Swan's Friday II., Capt. de Trafford's Flintlock, Capt. Wiggin's Arbawn.

Winner trained by Coulthwaite, at Hednesford.)

Betting—2 to 1 agst Red Empress, 4 to 1 agst L'AIGLON II., 5 to 1 agst Paddy Ryan and 10 to 1 agst any other.

Won by two lengths; length between second and third. Ben Voirlich was fourth and Flintlock last.

THE GRAND MILITARY HANDICAP STEEPLECHASE of 400 sovs. 2½ miles.

LIGHTFOOT (Mr. C. Brownhill), aged, 10st. 10lb. ..... Major Cavenagh 1
BROKEN WAND (Col. Paynter), aged, 11st 4lb. ..... Owner 2
LOCH ALLEN (Capt. R. Vivian), aged, 11st. 3lb. ..... Capt. McCreery 3

Also ran—Mr. E. Tattersall's Providence, Capt. R. Vivian's Hugh O'Neill, Capt. Latham's Laddoux, Capt. Speed's Pam Nut, Capt. de Trafford's Charlton III., Mr. Powles's Zuider Zee, Col. Tomkinson's Simon's Mount, Mr. G. Whitelaw's Perseverance, Commander McCowen's Knight of the Orient.

(Winner trained by Brownhill.)

Betting—2 to 1 agst LIGHTFOOT, 5 to 1 agst Charlton III., 6 to 1 agst Laddoux, 7 to 1 agst Providence, and 10 to 1 agst any other.

Won by three lengths; two lengths between second and third. Hugh O'Neill was fourth and Knight of the Orient last.

THE UNITED SERVICES SELLING HANDICAP STEEPLECHASE of 200 sovs. 2 miles.

THE ANTELOPE II. (Major Methven), aged, 11st. 1lb. ..... Mr. Bisgood 1
COMMANDER SMITH (Mr. P. Thrale), aged, 12st. 7lb. ..... Major Doyle 2
SOUTH LODGE (Capt. H. de Trafford), aged, 12st. 4lb. ..... Owner 3

Also ran—Mr. T. Frankland's Ormskirk, Capt. Renton's Prince Clifton, Capt, Dunn's Ardruel, Capt. Wheeler's St. David II., Air Commodore Samson's Matruh. Capt. Huggett's Captain Scott.

(Winner trained by Powell at Bishopstone.)

Digitized by Google

Betting—7 to 4 agst Commander Smith, 4 to 1 agst South Lodge, 6 to 1 agst Ardruel and St. David II., 8 to 1 agst Ormskirk, and 100 to 8 agst THE ANTELOPE II., or any other.

Won by two lengths; three lengths between second and third. Ormskirk was fourth and Matruh last. No bid for winner.

THE HUNTERS' HANDICAP STEEPLECHASE of 300 sovs. 3½ miles.

CLIFFORD HALL (Mr. C. Brownhill), aged, 11st. 13lb. ..... Owner 1
ANNIE DARLING (Capt. R. L. McCreery), aged, 11st. 8lb. ..... Owner 2
ANZAC III. (Major Grubb), aged, 10st. 7lb. ..... Owner 3

Also ran—Capt. M. Beckwith-Smith's The Harp, Mr. G. Whitelaw's Scraper.

(Winner trained by Brownhill.)

Betting—2 to 1 agst CLIFFORD HALL and Annie Darling, 100 to 30 agst The Harp, 7 to 1 agst Anzac III., and 100 to 8 agst Scraper.

Won by two lengths; bad third. Only three finished.

The Grand National

At the start there was an unusual delay. A number of the jockeys anxious to be well placed at the first jump made repeated attempts to anticipate the fall of the flag, and consequently there were several breaks-away. Eventually Winter Voyage took the command, followed by Silvo and Eureka II. The initial leader did not survive very long, and Silvo headed the field over Becher's. Grief now became frequent, and Taffytus was knocked over. Yet an unusually large proportion of the field got round the first half of the journey, jumped the water in the order in which their names are written : Sergeant Murphy, Winnall, Drifter, Silvo, Fly Mask, Old Tay Bridge, A Double Escape, Chin Chin, Master Robert, Eureka II., Mainsail, Shaun Spadah, Clonsheever, Wavetown, Gerald L. Newlands, James Pigg and Ballinode.

THE GRAND NATIONAL STEEPLECHASE (Handicap) of 100 sovs. each, with 5,000 added, second rec. 700 sovs., third 400 sovs., fourth 150 sovs. Grand National Course (about 4 miles and 856 yards).

MASTER ROBERT (Lord Airlie), aged, 10st 5lb. ..... R. Trudgill 1
FLY MASK (Mr. T. K. Laidlaw), aged, 10st 12lb ..... J. Moylan 2
SILVO (Mr. W. H. Midwood), aged, 12st 2lb. .....G. Goswell 3
DRIFTER (Mr. S. Sandford), aged, 10st 5lb. .....G. Calder 4

Also ran—Mr. H. Kershaw's Music Hall, Major F. Scott Murray's Gerald L. Sir M. McAlpine's Shaun Spadah, Mrs. W. H. Dixon's Old Tay Bridge, Mr. S. Sandford's Sergeant Murphy, Sir F. Price's Chin Chin, Lord Woolavington's Eureka I., Mr. J. E. Tyrrell's Clonsheever, Mr. C. R. Baron's Arravale, Major C. Dewhurst's Conjuror II., Mr. A. Hood's Wavetown, Mr. H. Liddell's Winnall, Lord Wavertree's All White, Sir E. Edgar's Libretto, Lieut.-Colonel F. Lort-Phillips's Pencoed, Mr. J. C. Bulteel's Taffytus, Mr. J. C. Bentley's Ballinode, Mr. H. Adams's A Double Escape, Mr. J. W. Corrigan's James Pigg, Mr. K. Lennox's Auchinrossie, Mr. T. D. Oakshott's Winter Voyage, Mr. S. C. Wells's Mainsail, Mr. H. E. Steel's Palm Oil, Mr. G. E. Godson's Gay Lochinvar, Major H. A. Wernher's Fairy Hill II., Mr. C. Bower Ismay's Newlands.

(Winner trained by the Hon. A. Hastings, at Wroughton.)

Betting—5 to 2 agst Conjuror II., 100 to 12 agst Taffytus, 100 to 7 agst Shaun Spadah, Fly Mask, and Silvo, 100 to 6 agst Sergeant Murphy and Eureka II., 25 to 1 agst Chin Chin, Auchinrossie, Music Hall, MASTER ROBERT, and Ballinode, 33 to 1 agst Fairy Hill II. and Arravale, 40 to 1 agst Old Tay Bridge, Winnall,

Digitized by Google

Drifter, Pencoed, and All White, 50 to 1 agst Gerald L., 66 to 1 agst Palm Oil, Clonsheever, Newlands, Winter Voyage, and Mainsail, and 100 to 1 agst any other.

Place Betting—6 to 4 agst Conjuror II., and others in proportion.

The Race.—After two breaks away the thirty competitors were despatched to a good start. Winter Voyage made the running from Winnall, Silvo, Sergeant Murphy, Fairy Hill, Gerald L, A Double Escape, Fly Mask, Old Tay Bridge, Eureka II., Mainsail, Drifter, Arravale, Shaun Spadah, and Gay Lochinvar, with Master Robert heading the others to the third fence, where Winter Voyage and Fairy Hill fell. Fly Mask then went on third, attended by Silvo, Eureka II., Arravale, Clonsheever, Drifter, Conjuror II., Sergeant Murphy, Master Robert, Ballinode, Chin Chin, Old Tay Bridge, All White, Taffytus, Pencoed, A Double Escape, Auchinrossie, Gerald L, Shaun Spadah, Clonsheever, and Music Hall. Shortly afterwards Music Hall came to grief, and at Becher's Conjuror II. was brought down by a loose horse, Silvo going on just clear of Fly Mask, Eureka II, Sergeant Murphy, Old Tay Bridge, Winnall, Mainsail, A Double Escape, Shaun Spadah, Drifter, Wavetown, Master Robert, Gerald L, Auchinrossie, All White, Taffytus, and Pencoed. At the canal turn the riderless Winter Voyage interfered with Auchinrossie, All White, Pencoed, Eureka II., and Taffytus, all of whom had to be pulled up. Old Tay Bridge then took command, and landed over Valentine's in front of Silvo, the pair being pursued by Drifter, Gay Lochinvar, A Double Escape, Sergeant Murphy, Winnall, Fly Mask, Clonsheever, Gerald L., and Master Robert. Two fences further on Sergeant Murphy jumped into the lead, but blundered at the water and was passed by Winnall and Drifter, the three being followed by Silvo, Old Tay Bridge, Fly Mask, Chin Chin, Master Robert, Eureka II., Mainsail, Wavetown, Clonsheever, Gerald L, Shaun Spadah, Ballinode, and Newlands. At the second fence in the country Winnall drew out with a commanding lead of Silvo, Sergeant Murphy, Old Tay Bridge, Master Robert, and Wavetown, but was nearly brought down at the canal turn by a loose horse. Old Tay Bridge and Silvo in close company landed over Valentine's Brook well clear of Sergeant Murphy, Fly Mask, Master Robert, Drifter, Wavetown, Ballinode, and Shaun Spadah. Two fences from home Old Tay Bridge fell, whereupon Master Robert closed with Silvo, and quickly racing into the lead, Lord Airlie's horse easily resisted the attentions of Fly Mask on the flat and won by four lengths, with Silvo three lengths away third, Drifter fourth, Sergeant Murphy fifth, Wavetown sixth, Shaun Spadah seventh, Ballinode being the only other to complete the course. Time, 9 min. 40 sec. Chin Chin and Gay Lochinvar fell.

Polo

We are pleased to hear that the team selected to represent England at polo next summer are now playing at Cannes. This will give them good practice as a team before the Hurlingham season starts. The team is composed of Lord Cholmondeley, Major Hurndall, Major Phipps-Hornby and Major T. W. Kirkwood.

Polo in America

U.S.A. Association and Olympic Games

While the contest at Meadowbrook for the International Cup will be the chief item concerning American polo this year, it will not be the only one of importance. The U.S.A. Polo Association has declined to send a representative team to take part in the Olympic Games, but there will be an American side there, probably led by Mr. T. Hitchcock, jun., one of the two best players in the States. Then the American Army team, which won the international military championship last year from a British Army team, will probably go to England, and may also enter for the Olympic Games.

Digitized by Google

The United States Polo Association is taking steps against the spread of anything savouring of professionalism in the game by enlarging the power of the executive committee. It has been decided that no one may compete in a tournament of the Association who has not received a handicap rating, and the committee may decline to rate those who "make their livelihood by managing a polo club or by officiating at games."

We should like to remind polo players of the Show and Sale of polo ponies to be held at Ranelagh on April 24.

Mesopotamia

Racing

We have received the following from Mespot :—

I am glad to be in a position to state that, in spite of trade depressions and political difficulties, racing in the Middle East is going strong. It is within my knowledge that Mr. St. John Bell, who was well known as one of Messrs. Pratt and Co.'s officials, and son of the late Mr. Richard Bell (some time Clerk on the Course at Kempton), is now managing director of the Iraq Racing Company, combining all racing in the two centres at Baghdad and Basra, under the auspices of the Iraq Turf Club. The company is evidently flourishing, for it paid a dividend of 20 per cent. last year, and has prospects equally good, if not better, this year. The Iraq Turf Club, which was inaugurated two years ago, with Mr. Bell as secretary, is now recognised by the Royal Calcutta and the West India Turf Club, and, though quite a new comer, is qualifying to take its place in the racing world as one of the controlling bodies. The I.T.C. 'Racing Calendar' and 'Races Past' are now regarded as necessary racing literature in India, and the Middle East. Mr. Bell is very ably assisted at Baghdad by Mr. A. B. H. Day, son of the well-known trainer Alfred Day, and at Basra by his brother, Mr. B. C. Bell. Whatever may be the ultimate fate of Mesopotamia, there is the abiding fact that racing there is prosperous, and the Arabs, in particular, are keen about it. It is well on the cards that the Iraq Turf Club will be numbered among the other racing authorities of the world.

The Sudan

The polo season 1922–23 in the Sudan proved a successful one for the Cavalry and Mounted Infantry of the Egyptian Army stationed at Shendi. The tournaments, with the exception of the 'Medani' Open Cup, which is played at Wad Medani, take place in Khartoum on the grounds at Omdurman, and are played under the rules of the Egypt, Sudan and Palestine Association.

There are four tournaments, viz. :—

1. The Governor-General's Cup, presented in 1913 by Major-General Sir Reginald Wingate, the then Sirdar, a 6-chukker open tournament.
2. The 'Coldstream' Cup, presented by the Coldstream Guards in 1907, a 4-chukker tournament (handicap).
3. The 60th Rifles Cup, presented by the 60th Rifles in 1908, a 4-chukker handicap tournament.
4. The 'Medani' Cup, presented by the Wad Medani Polo Club in 1923, a 4-chukker open tournament, and played at Wad Medani.

Digitized by Google

The Cavalry and M.I. succeeded in winning the Open 6-chukker Cup, and as a Shendi team annexing the 60th Rifles and Medani Cups.

The Governor-General's Cup produced 4 teams, viz. :—The Cavalry and M.I., The Gunners, Wad Medani, and The Palace. The Cavalry and M.I. beat The Palace by 5 goals to 1, and in the final met The Gunners and defeated them by 4 goals to 3. This latter game was a very close one and some hard and fast play took place, each side scoring practically goal for goal. The sixth chukker opened with the score 3 goals each, and half-way through the period The Cavalry shot the winning goal and held their lead until the end of the chukker.

His Excellency the Sirdar and Lady Stack were present and the latter at the close of the match presented the cups to the winners.

The teams in the final were :—

The Gunners.	*The Cavalry and M.I.*
1. Capt. S. Cunningham.	1. Capt. H. R. Dibble (7th Hussars).
2. Major Hon. T. Butler.	2. Capt. J. W. Hornby (12th Lancers).
3. Capt. A. Gardner.	3. Capt. J. I. Chrystall (13/18th Hussars).
Back. Capt. S. Ferguson.	Back. Capt. A. A. Filose (Central India Horse).

Owing to unavoidable reasons The Cavalry were unable to send a team to Khartoum for the Coldstream Cup, but under the name of 'Shendi' entered for the 60th Rifles Cup. Six teams played in this tournament, viz. :—The Civil, The Gunners, The Palace, Shendi, Wad Medani, and a scratch side.

In the first round Shendi beat The Palace by 4 goals to 2, and in the semi-finals, giving The Civil 4, beat them by 10 goals to 4. The scratch side and Shendi met in the final, handicaps being level and the latter won by 4 goals to 1.

H.R.H. The Crown Prince of Belgium, who was on a visit to Khartoum, presented the cups to the winners.

The teams in the final were :—

Shendi.	Hcp.	*Scratch Side.*	Hcp.
1. Capt. M. Murphy (R.A.V.C.) ...	0	1. Capt. G. Leacroft	2
2. Capt. J. W. Hornby	6	2. Capt. G. Yeatman	3
3. Capt. J. I. Chrystall	3	3. Capt. T. Menzies	3
Back. Capt. A. A. Filose	3	Back. Col. L. K. Smith	3
	12		11

The last tournament of the season for the Open Medani Cup, 4 chukkers, was played at Wad Medani, about 150 miles south of Khartoum. Four teams entered, Medani 'A' and 'B,' Khartoum and Shendi.

In the first matches, Khartoum beat Medani 'A' after a fast and open game, and Shendi were successful in defeating Medani 'B.'

The final between Khartoum and Shendi was an exciting and strenuous match and the 4th chukker ended with the score 4 all. An extra chukker was played and Shendi was able to hit the deciding goal after 2 minutes' play. A feature of this tournament was the interest displayed by the local native population, who turned up in large numbers and applauded vigorously throughout the games.

Digitized by Google

The teams in the final were :—

Khartoum.	Hcp.	*Shendi.*	Hcp.
1. Capt. T. Menzies	3	1. Mr. A. Lowden (Sudan Govt.) ...	0
2. Capt. A. Gardner	5	2. Capt. J. Hornby (12th Lancers) ...	3
3. Capt. M. Huish	4	3. Capt. J. Chrystall (13/18th Hussars)	4
Back. Capt. S. Ferguson ...	3	Back. Capt. A. A. Filose (Central India Horse).	4
	15		14

The shooting season 1922–23 in and around the Cavalry and M.I. station at Shendi was fairly good, though birds were not so numerous as in previous years. In 1922 good bags of quail were secured, but in 1923 very few have been seen. An experiment was tried, with partial success, of placing call-birds in cages on the grass farm. These birds were obtained from Egypt and made the four-day journey South in crates, with very little loss.

Duck seemed to show a disinclination to stop in any great quantity on the various pools, khors and canals on their way south to the Bahr-El-Ghazal, and this, with the rather earlier drying-up of certain basins, accounted for the comparatively small bag.

Sand-grouse were as numerous as ever and several specimens of 'Imperial' were obtained, but the bulk were 'Painted' and 'Common.' Sudan sand-grouse, in contrast to those seen in Mesopotamia and India, only water once a day and also seem to fly much higher and in smaller packs.

The geese shot were the ordinary Nile variety, a not particularly good eating bird, unless very young. He differs considerably in plumage and characteristics from his relative, the 'Grey-lag,' seen in such large numbers in Mesopotamia and India. He is not migratory, but breeds and lives on the Nile. A curious habit noticed was that of nesting in trees, either on the edge of the river or in one standing in the middle of the water in akhor. The problem as to how the goslings were transferred to the water was solved by the observation of a goose standing at the bottom of a tree 'honking,' whilst the youngsters climbed out of the nest and dropped to the ground. Out of this brood of eight only one was found to have suffered injury, in the shape of a broken leg. The height of the nest from the ground was about twenty feet.

The bustard obtained were the Great Indian variety and the Lesser or Houbara. Several good specimens were shot, notably 26 lbs., 22, and 16. The birds appear to like watering in the Nile in the early morning just before dawn, after which they glide off to the desert and are usually found there on sandy ridges. The 'Greater' variety is not so large as those found in Mesopotamia and neither is he so good eating. The Lesser or Houbara, on the other hand, are practically similar.

Large flights of Culon or Demoiselle Crane passed high over Shendi flying South, also numerous varieties of stork, ibis, harriers and such like. Two maribou were seen, but as this bird is now protected the chance of extracting the much sought after feathers from his tail was denied to would-be collectors!

The total bag was :—Geese, 33; duck, 204; teal, 120; snipe, 31; quail, 930; bustard, 15; sand-grouse, 837; land-rail, 4.

Printed by EYRE and SPOTTISWOODE, LTD., His Majesty's Printers, East Harding Street, E.C.4.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE SCENE AT THE UNVEILING AND DEDICATION OF THE CAVALRY WAR MEMORIAL.

By courtesy of "The Times."

Digitized by Google

THE

CAVALRY JOURNAL

JULY 1924

THE UNVEILING AND DEDICATION OF THE CAVALRY WAR MEMORIAL

In the presence of the Prince of Wales, the Duke of Connaught and Prince Arthur of Connaught, and before an assembly which represented every unit of the Cavalry arm that fought in the Great War, Field-Marshal the Earl of Ypres, on Wednesday, May 21, unveiled the Cavalry Memorial at Stanhope Gate, Hyde Park. A guard of honour, 400 strong, representing all branches of the mounted services of the British Army at home and abroad, stretched from either side of Stanhope Gate to an enclosure beyond the roadway.

Shortly after half-past two, Bishop Taylor Smith, Chaplain-General of the Forces, who had with him the Rev. H. W. Blackburn and the Rev. A. H. Boyd, both of whom had been Chaplains of Cavalry Divisions in France, walked to the plinth of the Memorial and announced the hymn, 'O God, our help in ages past.' When two verses had been sung to the accompaniment of the Band of the Royal Horse Guards, Field-Marshal the Earl of Ypres, accompanied by Field-Marshals Earl Haig and Sir William Robertson, moved forward, and Lord Ypres, facing the assembled company, made the following address :—

We have met here to-day on what I cannot but regard as one of the most impressive and solemn occasions in the History of the Cavalry Service.

I say this because never before have the Cavalry Forces of the Empire—

Digitized by Google

Regulars, Yeomanry, Indian and Colonial—been so closely united in a Great War, nor have they fought side by side on European battlefields.

Never have their joint services been recorded and the memory of their dead perpetuated by the erection of a monument in the heart of the Empire.

We stand before that monument to-day, a monument by which we seek to honour our glorious comrades who have given up their lives for their King and Country, and for the honour of the great service to which we all belong.

They lost their lives in the greatest war the world has ever seen, a war in which the Cavalry played a part which has never been surpassed in its history.

From time immemorial the work of Cavalry in a campaign has been especially marked and important during its opening phases, and towards its close. This was very apparent in the late war.

They began it by their splendid work before and during the Battle of Mons, in the great retreat, at the Battle of the Marne, on the Aisne, and in the great turning movement towards the North which finally secured and covered Ypres and the Channel ports, and led them into the valley of the Lys in pursuit of the retreating enemy. Then, as you remember, enormous German reinforcements arrived and the Cavalry was obliged to fall back, but only to perform one of its greatest deeds of the war. For they held the Wytschaete–Messines ridge, almost unsupported, against tremendous odds for forty-eight hours until powerful French reinforcements arrived.

These were great episodes and had great results.

Towards the close of the war we saw immense armies entrenched and facing one another along lines of almost incalculable extent.

They reached, indeed, from the North Sea right across Europe into Asia. On the south-eastern flank of this line, in Syria, Cavalry and mounted troops were again concentrated. Handled by their great leader [Field-Marshal Lord Allenby] with consummate skill, nothing could resist their victorious onslaught. They crushed in that flank, rolled up the Turco-German armies, and without doubt it was the beginning of the end.

Thus, from the first to last, the Cavalry carried out their great *rôle*, but on a vastly extended scale.

This is only a very brief and incomplete summary of their work in the war, but it is all that time allows me to say.

Not only did they maintain their ancient prestige as regards the methods of their employment; not only did they vindicate and justify their great plan in war; but the same *élan* and dash which has ever characterised them, the same vigorous leading, the same daring attempts to attain the seemingly impossible, the same glorious spirit, was apparent in every part of the vast theatre of war.

France, the Dardanelles, Syria, and many other places, show vivid examples of this.

It was in the performance of these great deeds, and in the carrying out of the work which I have briefly tried to describe, that so many of our gallant comrades lost their lives. As I speak these words, the recollection of many great cavalrymen who have fallen, both of those who led and those

Digitized by Google

who followed, will come to all our minds. They come of all ranks and of all units, from private soldier to General, from troop and squadron to brigade and division.

Doubtless, in the midst of many successes there were some few failures to attain the object sought for; but, whether successes or failures, we must ever remember that they were the inevitable essence and outcome of that great Cavalry spirit without which Cavalry is not worthy of the name. A spirit which, whilst demanding a great toll in casualties, often achieves the greatest results, and has sometimes turned apparent defeat into victory. It was in such an atmosphere that these glorious men died. Their bodies lie where they fell with so many more of our comrades, but their spirits will ever live in our hearts and are enshrined in this monument which we have raised to them.

Even in this new mechanical age, there are many indispensable tasks in war that only mounted men can still perform. No General would undertake a command in the field without the assistance of mounted troops. It is a significant fact that, whilst we began the war with 17 Regiments of Cavalry, there were no less than 150 in the field at its close.

I suggest, therefore, that the best tribute we can pay to the memory of our fallen comrades is sometimes to turn our thoughts towards this sacred spot and remember the sacrifices which have been made and the spirit which they displayed, and renew our determination to keep that spirit ever alert, active and unimpaired, and ready to emulate the great example they showed us when we are again called upon to take the field.

In conclusion, let me, in the name of the Cavalry Service, express our deep gratitude to Captain Adrian Jones (himself an old Cavalry officer), the sculptor, and Sir John Burnet, A.R.A., the architect, for the beautiful monument they have designed and completed.

At the close of the address Lord Ypres released the Union Jacks which covered the memorial and revealed the fine figure of St. George. In the light of a spring afternoon the statue gave the impression of being cast in gold. The Field-Marshal also unveiled the commemoration plates on the walled background.

The Chaplain-General then spoke these words :—

'To the glory of God, and in grateful memory of those who gave their lives for King and country and a righteous cause, I dedicate this memorial. May all who look upon it realise the peace of sins forgiven; the joy of faithful service and the power of the endless life, to which may God vouchsafe to bring us all; through Jesus Christ our Lord, Amen.'

Trumpeters sounded the Réveille. Prayers were recited 'For faithful service' and 'For those who mourn,' and the service came to an end with the hymn 'For all the saints

Digitized by Google

who from their labours rest,' with its ringing Alleluias, and the Benediction. After the National Anthem had been played, a large wreath from all the Cavalry regiments of the British Empire was laid at the foot of the memorial by a trumpeter of the Royal Horse Guards.

The Prince of Wales left his place at the front of the enclosure and made a close inspection of the monument. Captain Adrian Jones, the sculptor, and Sir John Burnet, the architect, were presented to his Royal Highness. A few minutes later the Prince left the park, and the troops were then dismissed.

Particulars concerning 'The Cavalry War Memorial' at Stanhope Gate, Hyde Park, W.

The Committee decided that the Memorial should be symbolical of the Patron Saint of the Cavalry Arm, 'St. George.'

The original project agreed upon was that it should take the form of a bronze column some 50 feet high, to be erected inside Hyde Park near the Marble Arch, immediately facing the Edgware Road, the column being an enlarged replica of a Field-Marshal's baton (on the head of which is the figure of St. George and the Dragon). In addition to being a memorial to their fallen comrades, it recorded the fact that the Cavalry arm gained four such batons during the Great War, and would form an incentive for future recruits to join the Cavalry branch of the Army. The scheme, however, did not meet with the approval of H.M. Office of Works.

Captain Adrian Jones, M.V.O., who is the sculptor of the beautiful statue of St. George, adopted the principle that the mounted figure had to be, not only that of a Saint, but also of a Knight as well; he, consequently, abandoned the old idea of a swashbuckler in the act of slaying the dragon by substituting a figure in keeping with his conception.

St. George, having broken his lance in subduing the dragon and given the *coup de grâce* with his sword, reins in his

Digitized by Google

charger and, as was the custom of knights of old, uplifts his sword in a dignified attitude, as a signal to the populace that their enemy has been subdued.

The most important feature of the statue is, perhaps, the *cap-à-pied* armour of St. George; and this is the first time a complete statue in armour has been attempted in London.

The Committee were fortunate in securing the services of Major Victor Farquharson, F.S.A., the armour expert, who kindly advised the sculptor in this matter, and also lent to him numerous sketches and rare pieces of real armour.

Sir H. Farnham Burke, Garter King-at-Arms, also contributed his advice and criticism, and this enabled Captain Adrian Jones to present the Cavalry Patron Saint in what the Committee desired, viz., a graceful figure of a knight clad in complete armour of the best period. Much of the armour has been taken from the famous bronze effigy of the Earl of Warwick, date 1454. The pieces of armour which were used as copies were, some of them, of a little later date, so it may be safely said that the period of the armour is about 1460. The effigy of the Earl shows him reposing his head on a tilting helmet, but this would have been out of place in a statue of St. George when combating the dragon. He is, therefore, shown in a rare *salade* from Major Farquharson's own collection, which he had recently acquired from an old Manor House on the site of the Battle of Tewkesbury; it is of English make and of the period named, and has been admirably modelled by the sculptor.

The complete arms, breast and back plates, the sword, spurs and gauntlets, were all taken from rare pieces lent by Sir Henry Burke.

The design for the horse and its furniture was adopted from the well-known picture of St. George painted by Albert Dürer in the fifteenth century.

The panels surrounding the upper part of the plinth do not represent any particular drill book formation, nor are

Digitized by Google

they intended to, but that of the assembly previous to any formation, thus giving the opportunity of producing an artistic frieze, also commemorating soldiers in their fighting dress, of all the Cavalry of the Empire.

The architect who carried out the layout and setting for the Monument is Sir John Burnet, A.R.A., who took advantage of the general design of the double entrance and exit gates with the lodges on either side to form an island for the statue, and at the same time reduced the number of gates from four to two, as desired by the traffic authorities.

The walled background, which is in harmony and scale with the two lodges, prevents the buildings in Park Lane dominating the equestrian figure, and thus will not compete with any other statuary which may subsequently be erected in the Park.

On the background is a bronze plate (executed by Mr. Edward Payne under the supervision of the sculptor and architect) commemorating the various units which formed the Empire's Cavalry in the Great War. It also records the fact that four Cavalry Officers were promoted Field-Marshals during the war, by introducing four 'batons' between the columns of the names of the Regiments.

The Imperial Arms are to emphasise the fact that, although the Memorial is in London, it is representative of the whole Empire.

The Contractors have been Messrs. A. & F. Manuelle, and Mr. A. B. Burton executed the casting of the bronze work.

The Bronze Statue is cast from metal obtained from guns which were taken by the Cavalry in the Great War, which was kindly supplied by the Army Council.

The Committee desire to place on record that the burden of the Memorial was undertaken by the late Brigadier-General the Hon. Osbert Lumley, C.M.G., and but for the energy he gave to the work in raising the funds, etc., it might not have materialised for years to come.

Digitized by Google

THE DEFEAT OF RENNENKAMPF

THE failure of Rennenkampf to come to the assistance of Samsonoff at Tannenberg has been much discussed. By all the principles of war no effort should have been spared to prevent the Russian armies from being defeated in detail. Rennenkampf showed a lack of energy in delaying for sixty hours after his successful action at Gumbinnen before he set his army in motion again, but the chief blame must be with General Jilinsky. By his orders, Rennenkampf was directed to blockade Königsberg and there appears to have been no thought in Jilinsky's mind of the necessity for combining the action of his two armies.

It thus came about that, by the afternoon of August 27, seven days after Gumbinnen, the First Russian Army was disposed as follows :—

Königsberg Blockading Force.—XXth Corps, IIIrd Corps, 1½ Cavalry Divisions.

Left Wing.—IVth Corps, IInd Corps, Cavalry Corps (three Divisions), Gourko's Cavalry Division.

on a line Friedland—Rastenburg.

The orders for the Cavalry Corps for the 28th were to reconnoitre in front of the army between the R. Pregel and the line Darkehmen—Gerdauen—Bartenstein.

Gourko's Division was to reconnoitre south of the Cavalry Corps, but was given the further tasks of ascertaining what the enemy was doing on the western side of the lakes near Lötzen and of protecting the left flank of the army as it advanced.

Digitized by Google

Here for the first time was the Cavalry ordered to reconnoitre on the front of the army, but there are no specific Instructions. Gourko was given a multiplicity of tasks of a conflicting nature. Nothing was known of the Second Russian Army and no contact had been gained with the Germans. Such a state of affairs was nothing short of a disgrace to the Cavalry operating with the First Army.

Late on the 27th, Jilinsky wired to Rennenkampf: 'Units from your front are being transferred to the front of the Second Army by rail, and are attacking strongly at Bischofsburg, Gilgenburg and Soldau. Allenstein has been occupied by us. Co-operate with the Second Army by moving your left flank as far forward as possible towards Bartenstein and your Cavalry to Bischofsburg. The VIth Corps has been ordered from Sczepanken to Passenheim.'

Jilinsky still had a picture of the Second Army advancing northwards, but no longer considered that army capable of dealing with the situation alone, and was therefore moving forward the left flank of the First Army into the area in which he expected to find the Second Army within the next few days. As we know, the wings of the Second Russian Army had been driven back in hopeless disorder and its fate had already been sealed.

By the evening of the 29th, Rennenkampf had moved his army to the following positions:—

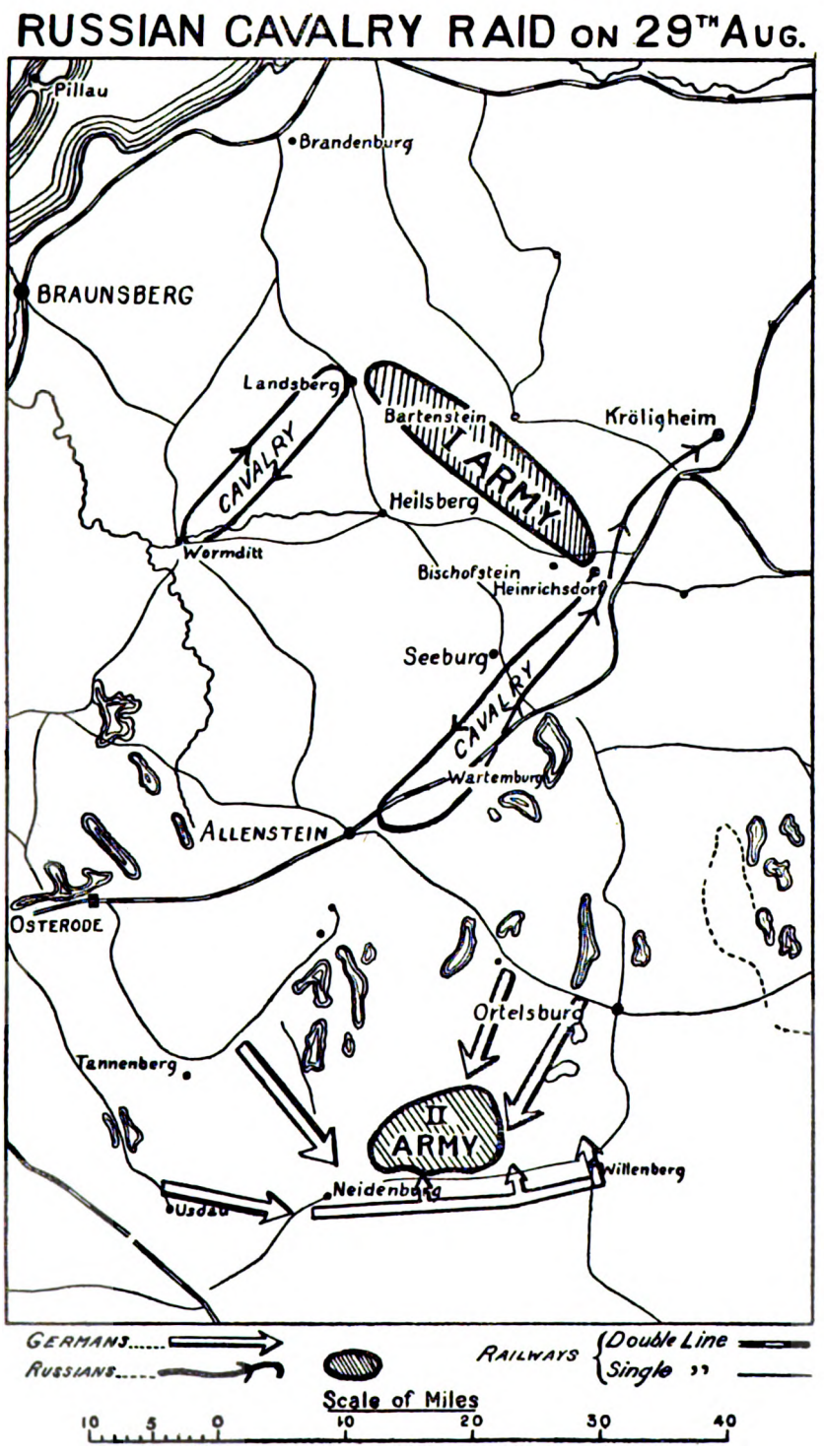
IVth Corps. P. Eylau—Bartenstein.
IInd Corps. Gallingen—Bischofstein.
Cavalry Corps. Landsberg.
Gourko's Division. Heinrichsdorf.

No contact had yet been obtained with the enemy. Only forty miles to the south of Gourko, the Second Russian Army was being destroyed in the Forest of Grünfliess.

On the 29th, Rennenkampf received two telegrams from Jilinsky.

At 7 p.m. 'In view of the heavy fighting in the Second

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Army, the C.-in-C. orders you to move two Corps to its support. The Cavalry should be sent forward in the general direction of Allenstein.'

At 11 p.m. 'The Second Army has withdrawn, therefore the C.-in-C. orders the forward movement of the two Corps to cease.'

Upon receipt of the order to send forward the Cavalry in the direction of Allenstein, Rennenkampf sent off two officers in motor-cars to Khan Nachivanski and Gourko with orders to move off at once. The counter-order, sent off after the receipt of the 11 p.m. telegram, failed to stop the Cavalry.

Gourko's sole instructions were verbal and were: 'To find out and get evidence of the condition and whereabouts of the Second Army, news of which has been absent for two days.' He was told that Khan Nachivanski would be operating north of him towards Allenstein. Comment is needless, and the state of mind of the Commanders and Staffs can be pictured to some degree in the light of such instructions.

Gourko's many duties as to the protection of the left flank and reconnaissances towards Lötzen had tied him considerably to the rear, so that he knew little of what was going on in front of him. He moved off at 12 midnight on the night of the 29th–30th. Seeburg was passed to the south after a brush with some German Railway Guards and Allenstein sighted by 11 a.m. next morning.

The railway line outside the town was blown up as a precaution, the noise of the explosion bringing strong German Infantry forces out against him. A patrol arrived telling him that Khan Nachivanski was coming down from the north, but as there were no signs of him by 3 p.m. and nothing could be seen of the Second Army, Gourko decided to break off the fight and start on the return journey. By 8 p.m. the Division had covered sixteen miles, and a halt was made till 11 p.m. Heinrichsdorf was reached once more at 6 a.m. on the 31st, after some fighting with German motor patrols. It was then

Digitized by Google

found that the Russian line had withdrawn, and the march was continued to Krölighеim, which was reached by 6 p.m. Thus about eighty miles, in forty-two hours, were covered in this useless enterprise. Both horses and men were thoroughly exhausted. Khan Nachivanski had drifted off to Wormditt, where he had skirmishes with German Infantry, suffering some casualties, but making no effort to co-operate with Gourko at Allenstein.

Rennenkampf now decided to withdraw his Infantry to a position which he had already reconnoitred during his advance. The line he chose extended from Labiau on the Baltic, along the River Deime to Wehlau and thence along the course of the Rivers Alle and Omet to Angerburg at the northern end of the Masurian Lakes. His object in occu pying this position was to afford time to the broken Second Army to reorganise and to the fresh reserves from the centre of Russia to come into action. Although extensive for the force he had at his disposal, the position might have served his purpose, had he occupied it in a proper manner. All his Divisions were extended along the main position, with no troops more than a couple of miles in advance of it. The Army Cavalry Divisions were concentrated at points behind the line of Infantry, from whence they proceeded to send forward squadrons on isolated missions. The Chief of Staff of the First Army described the Cavalry as being too exhausted to manœuvre in large bodies. It thus came about that no touch was maintained with the enemy, whose movements and strength at even one day's march in front of the main position were never ascertained. Rennenkampf had been convinced by the reports of agents that the Germans intended to attack by the north through Königsberg, and he had consequently made his line along the River Deime very strong. When the German main attack appeared in the south, he had not sufficient warning to allow him to rearrange his troops, already committed to a passive linear defence.

The early exhaustion of the Cavalry had been brought

Digitized by Google

about by no action of the enemy, but purely by bad leadership and bad administration on the part of the Russian Commanders. In less than three weeks they had succeeded in reducing their large force of cavalry to a state of total inefficiency, and that without any results to show for it.

The Russian Cavalry took no further part in the subsequent operations, up to the expulsion of the First Russian Army from East Prussia, thus giving a free field to the Germans, whose force of Cavalry had been increased to two Divisions. It is interesting to follow the operations of these two Divisions.

After Tannenberg, Ludendorff did not waste much time in deliberation. His plan was in principle as follows :—

(i) Von der Goltz with two and a half Divisions was to check any advance of the Second Russian Army from Poland.

(ii) Von François with three Divisions and a Cavalry Brigade was to move south of the Masurian Lakes, with the primary object of turning Rennenkampf's left, but at the same time dealing with any Russian Reserves coming up from the Augustow—Grajewo area.

(iii) Von Mackensen with two Divisions and two Cavalry Divisions less the Brigade with Von François, to move through the Lötzen Gap against Rennenkampf's left.

(iv) Hindenburg with eight Divisions to move direct against the Insterburg Gap, between Angerburg and Wehlau.

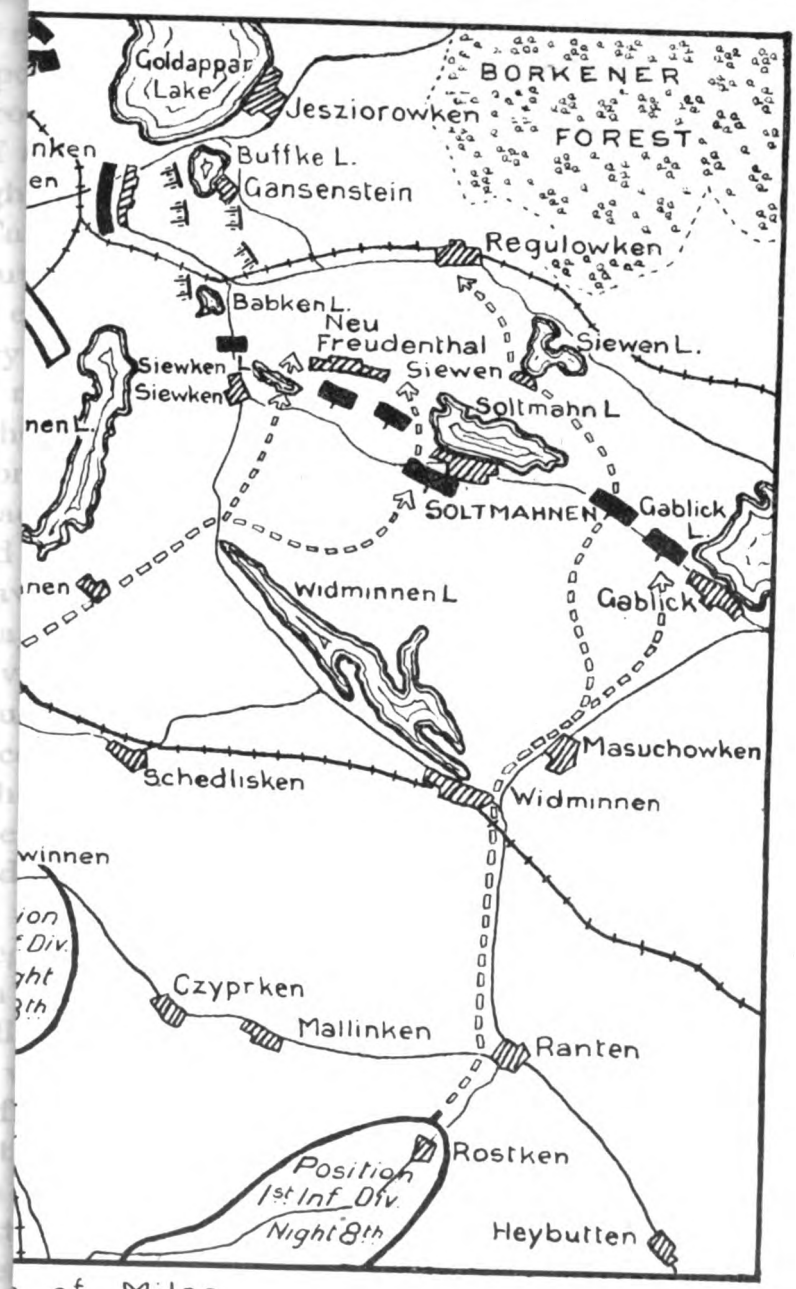
(v) Königsberg Garrison to occupy the attention of the enemy along the River Deime.

(vi) Lötzen Garrison to improve the bridge-head to the east of the Masurian Lakes.

Ludendorff was well aware of the dispositions of the First Russian Army, owing to their indiscreet use of wireless, but he had little knowledge of the state of the fresh Russian troops known to be assembling in the Augustow—Grajewo area.

Digitized by Google

MAHNEN 9TH SEPT 1914.



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Ludendorff's Cavalry dispositions are open to criticism. The natural place for the bulk of the Cavalry during the advance would appear to be the right flank, for here they would have an opportunity of turning one of the flanks, and immediately after rounding the southern end of the Lakes they would be free of any impassable obstacles. The passing of large forces through a narrow gap such as that of Lötzen is always difficult, and Cavalry alone could not force its way through to a manœuvring area to the east of the Lakes.

As events turned out, it was a mistake to send the Army Cavalry through the Lötzen Gap, but there are certain points which may have influenced Ludendorff's decision. He may have thought that it was sending the Cavalry too far from his own control to send them to the south of the Lakes, and he had had experience of Von François's stubborn will-power, and did not wish to allow him to control the Cavalry. He may also have thought that the arrival of fresh Russian troops in the Grajewo area would divert Von François from his primary objective, the turning of Rennenkampf's left, and wished in consequence to be certain of having a force under his own hand which could carry out the necessary turning movement.

Although the Commandant of Fort Boyen was ordered to increase the size of his bridge-head to the east of Lötzen, he received no orders to improve the communications across the narrow neck, in order to ensure the quick passage of troops. This neglect was to revenge itself later upon Ludendorff.

Von François' turning movement succeeded brilliantly. At Bialla, Arys and Lyck he totally defeated the fresh Russian troops which were thrown piece-meal into the fight. By the night of September 8 he found himself to the east of the Lötzen Gap with his two Divisions at Ranten and Ruhden respectively. He was apparently not opposed by strong enemy forces.

Matters had not gone so well with Von Mackensen. There had been delays in filing across the Lötzen Gap. The Infantry had attacked at 5 a.m., 12 noon and 8 p.m. on the 8th, but

Digitized by Google

had been unable to enlarge the bridge-head. The two Cavalry Divisions were still to the west of the Gap.

Von François' attack on the 9th came as a complete surprise, the whole of the Russian line opposing Von Mackensen breaking in hopeless rout. Over 5,000 prisoners and 60 guns were taken. The two Cavalry Divisions took no part in the action and only succeeded in crossing late in the afternoon. Thus a great opportunity for mounted action against a broken enemy was lost through lack of proper administrative preparations at a difficult defile.

Ludendorff had co-ordinated his advance well, and the main German force commenced attacking the Russian positions between Angerburg and Wehlau on September 9. Little progress was made anywhere and on the right, between Angerburg and Nordenburg, the Germans were heavily repulsed.

The results of Von François' success against his left during the 9th seems to have galvanised Rennenkampf into action. He ordered a general withdrawal to commence at nightfall on the 9th, putting in a strong counter-attack against the dispirited Germans between Angerburg and Nordenburg.

Despite Rennenkampf's early move and the check to the right of the German main advance, the chances of a second Tannenberg from September 10 onwards appeared very rosy, were Ludendorff only bold enough. But his boldness appears to have deserted him, or the position got out of control, for the Russians succeeded in extricating themselves. The reason for the comparative German failure—for great results were actually achieved—appears to lie in the fact that Ludendorff was attempting to control too much personally. He was issuing orders direct to six Corps and a Cavalry Corps of two Divisions, besides the Königsberg and Lötzen Garrisons and Von der Goltz's force, all extended over a wide front. Events were moving quickly and he would have done better to have placed his enveloping force of two Corps and the Cavalry Corps

Digitized by Google

under one Commander. It is just possible that neither Von Mackensen nor Von François would serve under the other, in which case it would have perhaps sufficed to give Von François the command of the Cavalry Corps. German Headquarters were too far off to control the Cavalry itself and consequently the golden opportunities were allowed to slip.

Twice Ludendorff ordered forward his two right Corps and twice he modified their orders the next day in order to bring them closer to his centre. It was not till the night of the 11th that he began to realise that the First Russian Army was beyond the stage of counter-attacking and that he could really act with boldness. Going to the other extreme, the two Cavalry Divisions were ordered upon a wide turning movement to the south of the Forest of Rominten, which took them too far from the scene of action.

The fighting of September 12 on the right of the German line is interesting.

The First Division had spent the night of the 11th–12th along the road from Tollmingkehmen to Gr. Rominten. It was ordered to skirt the northern edge of the Forest to Mehlkehmen and thence to Pillupönen.

The Second Division, which had been in contact with Russians at Gawaiten, was ordered to turn about and move down the road through the centre of the Forest to Wisztyniec.

Both Divisions were ordered to march with strong advanced and rear guards, and to be ready to deploy in any direction.

At 11 a.m., the Rear Guard of the 1st Division came into action against Russian columns trying to break southwards into the Forest of Oszeningken. The fight became so brisk that a portion of the Main Body had to turn back to the assistance of the Rear Guard. The Russians were finally driven off northwards, with the loss of 1,000 prisoners. The view from the northern edge of the Forest is extensive, and the German Artillery must have had magnificent targets against

Digitized by Google

the Russians advancing and retiring over the open fields. The Russians probably belonged to the IVth Corps making for the line Pillupönen—Göritten.

The Advanced Guard of the 1st Division reached the neighbourhood of Pillupönen without opposition. During the afternoon, strong Russian attacks developed from the north, attempting to break through. The remainder of the Main Body came up to the support of the Advanced Guard, and the attacks were driven off with heavy loss to the Russians.

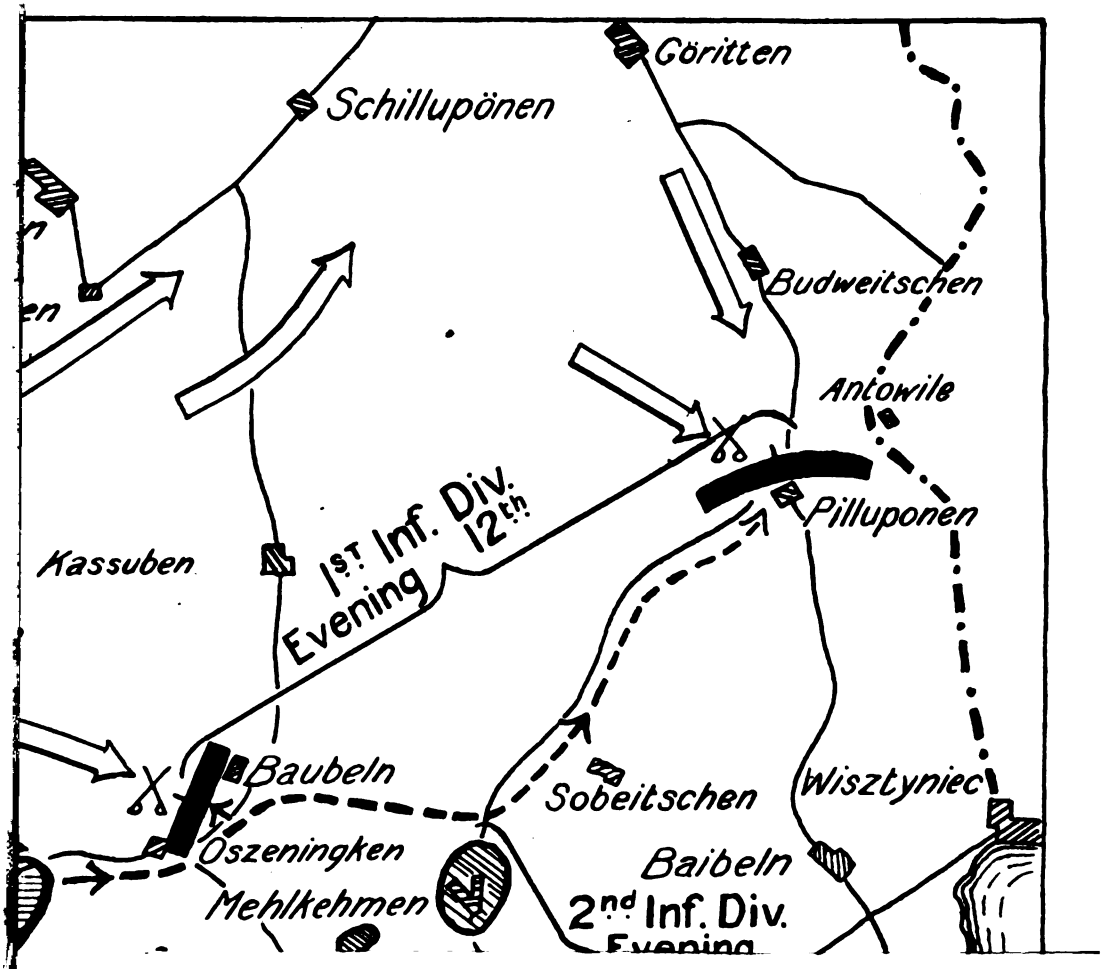
The 2nd Division succeeded in disengaging from Gawaiten without any hindrance from the Russians. They were part of the XXth Russian Corps, which had been ordered to protect the withdrawal by energetic action towards Goldap. After having allowed the Germans to turn their backs to them, they also moved off to the N.E. The 2nd Division then passed the Emperor's chalet to Nassawen and Mehlkehmen. The road through the Forest is good, but the Forest itself is almost impenetrable, except by the rides cut for the herding of the game. The Forest proved full of small bodies of Russian Infantry and Cavalry, and the effect of the German march down the centre was to drive these small parties out in all directions. Von François's Headquarters Column was cut up by Cossacks and all his baggage captured, but was rescued once more by a troop of Divisional Cavalry.

Von François himself seems to have spent a happy day moving about with a small Cavalry escort between his various detachments, encouraging them to hunt out the Russians.

The situation was one peculiarly suitable to Cavalry, and undoubtedly the German Cavalry Corps would have reaped a rich harvest had they been on the scene.

From the northern edge of the Forest of Rominten there is an extensive view towards the North, and towards Enzuhnen, long bodies of disorganised Russian troops and transport could be seen moving eastwards along every road and across country, the whole being covered in clouds of dust.

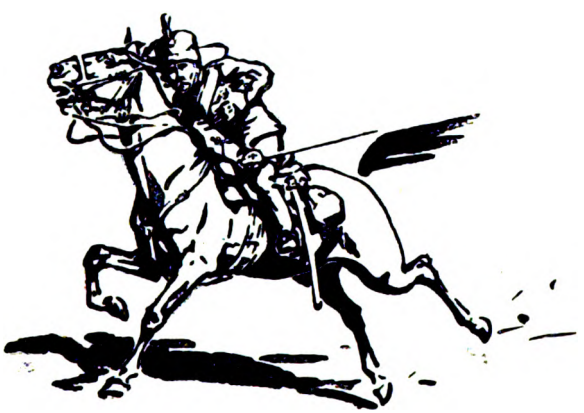
Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

During the whole of the 12th and the night of the 12th–13th the Russian procession steadily continued, and by the morning of the 13th only the tail of the columns could be seen in the distance. During the 13th and 14th, when the Cavalry emerged from their *détour* round the Forest of Rominten and came into touch with the retreating Russians they found that the rear-guards were beginning to get into some order and they were unable to get through to disorganised troops beyond. The precious opportunity on the 12th had been allowed to slip.



Digitized by Google

THE ARAB REBELLION

A Disaster and a Cavalry rear-guard Action

By Lieut.-Colonel E. B. Maunsell, *p.s.c.*

The incident described is generally known as 'The "Manchester Column" disaster,' which occurred in the first phases of the rebellion of 1920 and had serious consequences.

The general situation at the time the column was despatched was roughly as follows:

The course of the rebellion indicated that there were good brains behind it.

The Arab had shown a surprising capacity to occupy strong defensive positions, and we had lost heavily in attacking him.

He had, furthermore, displayed considerable skill in controlling the flow of water in the various canals so as to render the water supply of a column a ticklish matter. His known characteristics were an amazing ability to concentrate large numbers rapidly at unexpected places and disappear equally so.

His quickness to fall upon weak isolated parties was also remarkable.

He was very mobile and quite impervious to heat. He had, moreover, displayed the utmost contempt of danger when there was sufficient attraction in the shape of loot.

Before the outbreak of this rebellion he had not proved particularly formidable, but there had not been any serious affair beyond the battles of Shaiba and an action near

Digitized by Google

Nasiriyah early in the war. In these actions we had large forces engaged and he was defeated without difficulty. The result was that there was a tendency at the outbreak of the rebellion to belittle him as a fighter, forgetting that we ourselves were not so well placed as we had been.

The rapid demobilisation had resulted in a great falling off in the class of staff officer.

The British troops as a whole were little more than recruits and the junior officers knew little of the class of war they would have to fight.

The troops were, moreover, quite unacclimatised.

The Indian troops varied greatly and included a large number of young soldiers with rather inexperienced officers.

The political and civil officers generally appeared too young for their jobs, though they displayed the highest courage and devotion in their dangerous tasks.

Hillah, the point whence the column started, was an important town on the line of communication between Baghdad and Diwaniyah. The latter point had been the actual base of Coningham's column which had been engaged in the relief of Rumeitha—a relief which had been effected with the utmost difficulty.

The country for 20 miles round Hillah was quiet, but a hostile concentration was known to exist about Kifl, 22 miles to the South-West. A small force was invested at Kufa, 37 miles to the South-West.

It was largely with a view to counteracting the concentration about Kifl that the column was sent out. Its primary duty was merely to show the flag, not to advance on Kifl. This was to be done later, when more troops arrived.

The Political Officers had urgently represented the necessity for this move, and the officer in temporary command at Hillah had yielded to their pressure.

In view, however, of the somewhat general suspicion with which Political intelligence was generally regarded by the

Digitized by Google

Military, it is surprising that the officer did not send out a Cavalry reconnaissance to confirm the presence of water for the column to halt at before sending out the entire column.

It was to proceed to a point on the Kifl road seven miles from Hillah and form an intrenched camp.

The column consisted of two squadrons Scinde Horse, the 39th Battery R.F.A., a battalion of Manchesters less one company, and one company 32nd Pioneers—nearly the whole of the troops in Hillah. More troops were expected at Hillah in a couple of days, but it was a dangerous move so to empty the place in the meantime, as if it had fallen, Coningham's column to the south might have been left absolutely in the air.

Between Hillah and Kifl was the usual type of Mesopotamian country, dead flat, with a few mounds, the sites of ancient villages.

There were numerous dry irrigation channels, nearly all formidable obstacles, with sheer banks.

The date palm area did not extend more than half a mile from Hillah and away from these groves no tree existed whatever. There was a certain amount of low scrub, sufficient to hide a man lying down at night, but for the most part the country was quite bare.

The Kifl track was unmetalled and ill-defined, crossing the various irrigation channels by narrow bridges.

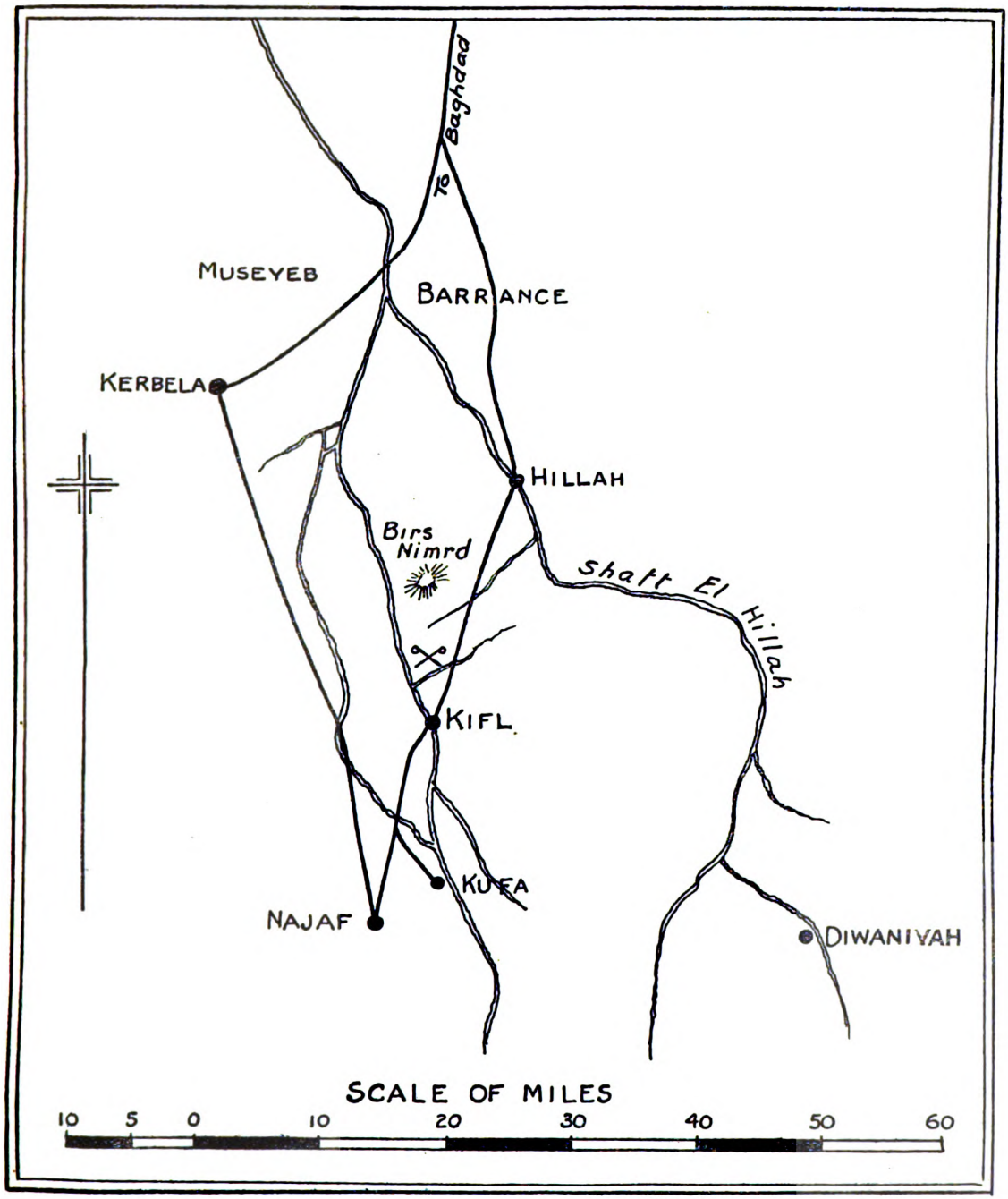
Information available from political sources at Hillah indicated water at a point seven miles down the Kifl road, and the column was given this point as its halting place.

No opposition was anticipated during this march.

The commander of the column was a brevet, and his own C.O. commanded the Manchesters. It will be realised, therefore, that both officers were awkwardly placed.

The column marched at 16.00 on July 23. This meant that the unfortunate young British Infantry were knocking about in the sun at 15.00, the mid-day temperature being

Digitized by Google



✕ Site of Bivouac at 1600 hours July 24th 1920

Digitized by Google

somewhere about 118 in the shade—and there was little or no shade. A large number of A.T. carts accompanied the column, carrying gear for intrenching the camp.

On arrival in bivouac it was found that only a limited amount of indifferent water existed in a railway tank, sufficient for the men, but quite inadequate for the animals. The latter, therefore, remained unwatered that night, as it was not considered prudent to send them far afield in search of water in the growing darkness.

Orders were received from Hillah during the night to push on next day to the Rustumiyah Canal, some eight miles further on towards Kifl, where water was known to be.

Water having been found some distance from bivouac, the animals were given a drink in the morning, but, owing to the sides of the canal being sheer, great delay occurred, and it was not until 9.30 that the column marched.

The heat was intense, but there was a high wind and almost a duststorm, which eased things slightly. The information this day was that opposition was likely, as Arab scouts had been seen on the various crossing places.

Arabs passed on the march seemed perfectly peaceful, and the force arrived on the canal without encounter of any sort about mid-day.

The unfortunate British Infantry were, however, greatly exhausted and a certain number of heat cases had occurred.

No perimeter camp was formed.

Two troops of the Scinde Horse were despatched as standing patrols on the Kifl road and on the light railway leading to that place respectively.

They were to take up positions about a mile from camp.

In the meantime the force settled down and made itself as comfortable as the great heat admitted. Tents were pitched, and everyone prepared for an afternoon sleep.

Lorries had arrived from Hillah with ice and rations. There were then two days' rations in hand with the column.

Digitized by Google

The question now arises as to whether the Cavalry should have been pushed on or not.

Reliable information indicated the presence of the enemy some seven miles further on about Kifl early that morning. The advanced scouts of the Scinde Horse had seen nothing, however, by noon within three miles of camp.

The force was in no condition to advance further as a whole should the enemy be encountered some distance off.

Should the enemy advance it was extremely unlikely that he would care to leave the force behind him and push on to Hillah, for, although he has no lines of communication in the proper sense of the word, the Arab is as sensitive as any other irregular of his line of retreat. There was no certainty, from his point of view, that the clans between the force and Hillah would join in when they knew there was an unbeaten British column still in the neighbourhood.

If it were the original intention of the British to engage the enemy, whatever his strength, should he advance, it would seem that all that was required was sufficient warning to enable troops to 'stand-to' in case of attack. At first sight, this would have appeared to have been the intention, and the dispositions of the Cavalry were adequate to this end.

If it were the intention to advance next day and engage the enemy, sufficient time would have been available for reconnaissance if the Cavalry were pushed ahead early in the morning. Despatching them on a reconnaissance in the evening would have meant their going out some six or seven miles, probably having at least a skirmish, and returning the same evening. Judging from previous Mesopotamian experience there was quite a reasonable chance of their finding some difficulty in getting back, and the exhausted infantry might have had to move out to help them in.

With regard to a withdrawal to Hillah, from the condition of the Infantry it was certain that they could not move till the evening, say, 18.00. It was essential, again, in view of

Digitized by Google

their condition, that the move be unmolested. In order to guarantee this a protective reconnaissance despatched about 16.00 would have been called for to ensure there being no large bodies of the enemy in the neighbourhood. This reconnaissance need not have been pushed farther out than, say, three miles from camp.

The original intention, however, would appear to have been to remain in position, and under these circumstances the Cavalry dispositions sufficed.

A Political Officer with the column had asked for a squadron to escort him to interview a Sheikh a mile or two from camp at 16.00.

This squadron was in the act of saddling up when an orderly from one of the advanced troops galloped in with the report that Arabs were tearing up and destroying the rails and culverts on the Kifl light railway.

This was followed up by another from the troop on the road reporting a mass of Arabs coming down it. Shortly after this a wounded man and then both troops came in, reporting some thousands of Arabs advancing.

Soon a force, estimated at 2,000, mounted and dismounted, with banners, came into view about 2,500 yards off. The gunner telephonists at this juncture were endeavouring to get into touch with Hillah by attaching their instruments to the telegraph line. Hence a considerable delay occurred in getting the guns into action.

Their shooting, when it did begin, was good, and the enemy began to work round the flanks.

The ground round the camp had irrigation canals at about 400 to 800 yards distance. In front was the Rustumiyah Canal, six feet deep, twenty feet wide, with banks six feet high, with some water in it. The branch canals were for the most part dry, but were formidable obstacles, being quite unjumpable.

For some six miles towards Hillah was the same type of

Digitized by Google

intersected country, the canals being all dry. It was, therefore, admirably suited to Arab tactics, giving covered lines of approach to the road in every direction.

The Arab advance was very slow directly in front, and it was not until about 18.30 that sniping into the flanks had begun.

In the meantime, however, the Political Officers had represented to the Column Commander that the country in his rear would be up, and reminded him of the weak garrison left in Hillah, where all the dumps were. It was impressed on him that there might be great difficulty in getting back should the enemy block the road. The fact that fresh troops were arriving in Hillah that day was apparently either forgotten or the numbers arriving were considered insufficient to hold it by the Force Commander.

Anyhow, the decision was come to to fall back at once, leaving the camp standing.

The Manchesters were to furnish the advance and flank guards, together with two guns.

The battery, the Scinde Horse less two squadrons, and the company of the 32nd Pioneers formed the rear guard.

The Manchesters moved off at about 19.45. There was then a certain amount of sniping into the flanks, the flanks of the rear guard being most seriously involved. These were 'B' squadron and 'D' squadron of the Scinde Horse on the right and left respectively.

The pressure on our right increased, and eventually it became necessary to reinforce 'B' squadron with two Vickers guns. This squadron had great difficulty in holding its ground while the transport got on the move.

The latter was in a state of hopeless confusion.

The commencement of sniping and the sudden appearance of the enemy had started a panic among the drabis and followers.

Mule carts and mules were stampeding in every direction.

Digitized by Google

Loose horses, led by a white pony, careered wildly up and down the track where the unfortunate Manchesters were endeavouring to march.

The dust and approaching darkness added to the terror, which was shortly afterwards intensified by large bodies of Arabs entering the camp.

About then, also, a burst of heavy and continuous firing ahead announced that the Manchesters were fighting their way out.

The column had with it some 150 A.T. carts, and it may well be imagined how difficult it was to get these on the move along the narrow ill-defined track by which the force had advanced.

The danger was intensified by carts upsetting at the narrow passages over the irrigation canals.

By the time all the transport which there was any hope of getting clear had moved off, it was high time for the rear guard to be moving, for it was obvious that the Force stood every chance of being cut in two.

Accordingly 'D' squadron, on the left, was ordered to withdraw. It had to draw swords to clear the camp, which was then full of Arabs. It was just at this juncture that the battery opened on the camp with fuze zero at a range of about 150 yards, and it was by the greatest good fortune that the squadron did not run on top of the guns.

Ressaldar Major Mahomed Azim, Scinde Horse, had, in the meantime, been endeavouring to rally the fugitives and collect men to clear the Arabs from the flanks of the guns. He had shown the greatest gallantry and coolness when he was hit in the stomach and died shortly after.

By now the Arabs had got within 80 yards of the guns and it became a question of getting them away.

In order to do so, Major Connop and a troop of 'D' squadron, Scinde Horse, charged and gained sufficient air space for them to limber up and move off.

The squadron on our right, 'B,' had the greatest difficulty

Digitized by Google

in hanging on while this withdrawal was in progress, but succeeded in getting clear, when a further body of Arabs was encountered advancing from the North, *i.e.*, from the Hillah direction. These were charged by 'B' squadron and cleared away. It is probable that these were from villages close to the route.

The troops actually present then were the two squadrons Scinde Horse, the 39th battery and the remains of the Pioneer company, which had been badly cut up.

The congestion and confusion on the track made movements of the guns a matter of great difficulty. It was necessary to manhandle A.T. cart after A.T. cart off it and to clear every bridge encountered.

It was, moreover, by now, dark, though there was a moon, occasionally obscured by clouds.

The retirement was conducted in this manner for some three miles, squadrons retiring as far as was possible alternately by bounds of some 400 yards each.

About this point, however, a gun apparently mistook the track, and upset in one of the irrigation canals.

This necessitated a halt of some duration and the Scinde Horse and battery were completely surrounded.

It was only found possible to remove the sights and breech block, the gunners displaying most extraordinary coolness and *sangfroid*.

Numerous stragglers had been picked up, some stripped naked, and many only wearing a pair of shorts, and minus boots, shirt or headdress.

The casualties at this point among horses were very heavy, but, extraordinary to relate, those among the men were comparatively light.

The fighting had become so close that the only hope was a bayonet charge, which was delivered by 'B' squadron with great dash. This gave air space for the remainder to mount, and cover 'B' squadron's withdrawal.

Digitized by Google

The guns were duly extricated and the ground, fortunately, became more open and mounted action more possible.

'B' squadron, led by Captain Knox, seized the opportunity to charge and a considerable air space was gained, but Knox was wounded. Shortly afterwards he again led a charge, but once more was hit, and Ressaldar Dur Khan then took over the squadron, Lieutenant Bott, the squadron officer, having been badly wounded shortly before while trying to steady the transport.

The Ressaldar led the squadron to two more charges a couple of miles or so further on.

By now it was evident that the villagers *en route* had begun to join in, for there was a steady increase of the hostile strength for the first four miles or so of the retirement. The pressure then began to relax somewhat, thanks both to the repeated charges made by the Scinde Horse and to the steadiness of the battery.

The tribesmen had, furthermore, commenced to devote their attentions to plundering the overturned carts which could not be moved.

The charges did not inflict many actual casualties, as the mounted element of the enemy invariably bolted, while the dismounted men lay down in depressions and ditches where they could not be seen in the dark.

They had, however, the effect of making him cautious and unwilling to face open ground where he could be sabred.

The staunchness of the sowars was beyond all praise, for it must be remembered that, with the demoralisation and darkness, there was every opportunity for frightened or faint-hearted men to sneak off and join the fugitives.

After the seventh mile the pursuit had petered out, which was most fortunate as ammunition was almost exhausted and more than half the horses had become casualties.

The troops themselves were dropping from heat, fatigue

Digitized by Google

and thirst. The stout-hearted conduct of men of the Manchesters who, though unable to walk, refused to let go of their rifles when helped on to the gun limbers or sowars' horses, excited great admiration.

The Scinde Horse and battery reached Hillah at 5.30 the next morning, after a retreat of some 16 miles under the most difficult conditions, some of the men having been in action since 16.00 the previous afternoon with only such water as they had with them in the height of the hot weather.

It was subsequently estimated that some 5,000 tribesmen were engaged in all.

The Scinde Horse casualties in men were, comparatively speaking, light, amounting to 40 in the two squadrons, but those in horses were very heavy. Every British officer had two horses shot under him and Major Connop had three.

Two-thirds of the men at the end were fighting on foot. Of the six British officers present, three had been with the regiment three months only. Two of the remaining three were wounded very early in the fight.

Thus ended the third great rear guard fight in the history of the Scinde Horse. In the first, Clibborn's disaster at the Nuffosk Pass in the abortive effort to relieve Kahun in 1838, the regiment had lost 70 per cent. in men and 85 per cent. in horses, but had enabled the remains of the force to reach the plains.

At Maiwand, in 1880, the Third Scinde Horse had, by its charge at the end of the day, saved the 1st Bombay Grenadiers from utter destruction.

The Kifl rear guard was in accordance with the regimental tradition.

From a cavalry point of view the following are the salient lessons :—

(1) Troops must be physically fit to be able to work in very hot weather.

Digitized by Google

(2) The supreme value of discipline and steadiness, particularly in a night retirement such as this, where the chances for faint hearted or badly trained men to fade away are unbounded.

(3) A night retirement across intersected country when in close contact with irregulars can only lead to heavy casualties, and may, more probably, lead to disaster.

(4) The value of the countercharge, either mounted or dismounted.

(5) The importance of prompt rallying.

(6) In close fighting of this description, Vickers guns and Hotchkiss rifles have great limitations, owing to the delay in loading them up when the time to retire arrives. Steady, carefully controlled rifle fire was found to be the most effective.

(7) The moral effect of arming cavalry with the bayonet, which rendered a countercharge on foot more than mere bluff. It was found, later on, that it added greatly to the men's *morale* when in close country or villages, when the sowars had several small bayonet encounters.

(8) The enormous value of cavalry in Arab warfare. Without cavalry the infantry would have been almost helpless.

It is of interest to speculate on what the Air Force could have done under the circumstances. It is reasonable to suppose that, if there had been a large Air force, the Arab would have had some knowledge of its limitations and acted accordingly. In the first place, the Arab force would have remained very scattered until nightfall, when it would have been immune. Warning of the Arab approach might certainly have been brought in sooner, but it seems probable that the force would have been attacked just the same, closer to Hillah, as the Arab was infinitely more mobile and would have been encouraged by the retirement. In the night fighting aeroplanes would have been more a menace than a help.

Similarly, armoured cars might have brought in news of the Arab approach, provided—and this proviso is an import-

Digitized by Google

ant one—no damage was done to the route by which they had to come back. At night the armoured cars could have done little or nothing, especially as so many bridges got blocked. A L.A.M. car falling into a canal by a bridge might have completely blocked the route for anything in its rear.

It is hard to understand what the Air Force alone could do should similar circumstances arise.

Digitized by Google

EXTRACTS FROM THE DIARY OF A BIG-GAME HUNTER IN EAST AFRICA

(Continued.)

In 1923, Major Anderson made a shooting trip in Tanganyika with a friend, ' M,' starting from Nairobi and using the railway to Voi and the new military line to Moshi and on by car to Arusha. Although mules were taken, the greater part of the trek was done on foot, as large areas of ' fly ' were encountered and the mules had to be sent round by a different route.

The area covered is shown on the sketch map. The country north and south of Manyara lake is part of the Great Rift Valley, the walls of which in many places form a steep escarpment. Looking east from the top of the escarpment the country is open and rolling, with large patches of bush; while west of the Rift the country is broken, with rocky hills, bits of forest and patches of open.

The Ngorogoro crater (marked on the sketch), referred to in the Diary, has been the subject of several articles in the illustrated papers. The crater is about 2,000 feet below the top of the escarpment, which forms its rim; the bottom is fairly level and measures about 10–11 miles. It is covered with short grass and contains many springs of good water. There is very little bush, but the springs are surrounded by patches of reed, 12–15 feet high in places. It has been estimated that there are 75,000 head of game collected in this crater. It is a grand country for lions.

Major Anderson denies the fable that the game cannot get out of the crater, as he found the escarpment was covered with game paths.

Digitized by Google

TANGANYIKA SAFARI.

Joubert's Farm, about 24 miles from Arusha. October 9.

As Joubert said there were some good rhino near here we left camp 5.15, returned 4 p.m. M. shot an eland. Saw fresh spoor of rhino but no rhino. Saw kongoni, zebra and giraffe.

October 11.

Left camp 6 a.m. Arrived 10 a.m. M. and self went out to try and shoot meat. Saw wildebeeste (Grant's and Thompson's), all very wild. I fired five shots, got nothing. M. shot some sand-grouse. Country surrounding hills and open plain. Chairs and table arrived from Bloom (hotel-keeper at Arusha). Hear the Boer has sent dogs (cross-breds used for lion-hunting) to Arusha.

October 12.

Left camp 6 a.m., arrived En-Tugai 3.45 p.m. Had to dig for water. Headman caught one porter drunk. Had taken a bottle of whisky from open case. Tied him up. M. shot two oryx, one quite a good head.

Main Camp. October 14.

Left camp 6 a.m., arrived north of Lake Manyara 11 a.m. Dogs arrived from Arusha. Saw zebra and wildebeeste, the latter in thousands. I have never seen more game together. Saw several fresh track of lion. Camped in open forest, about 2 miles from lake. In the evening went down with M., who shot two wildebeeste for lion kill. Porters on way to camp ran into four lion. Seem to be plenty of game around here—lion, buffalo and rhino. Arranged to send 40 porters to Umbulu for posho (food for native porters). A good camp, which I think we shall make a main camp for a few weeks.

Mtu Embo. October 19.

Left 5.45; about 7.15 put up a rhino in thick bush. M. fired and so did I, but did not get him. Whilst having breakfast large herd of buffalo came up close; but, thick bush,

Digitized by Google

could not get a shot. One of the guides, who wandered off whilst we were at breakfast, got put up a tree by a buffalo and had to remain there for about one-and-a-half hours. Halted about 10.30. I sent out boys to look for buffalo and rhino. M. walked to top of hill. A boy came in and said a rhino quite close to place I had halted, so went out and had a look; rhino cleared. As he was going through the bush I fired; ran right through the place where boys were making tea—all niggers up the trees. Rhino went for about 300 yards and fell dead; not a very good horn, only about 17½ ins. Returned camp 5.15. Posho all arrived here.

South of Ngorogoro Crater. November 2.

Left camp at 6.15. Very cold and cloudy. Got down to the crater about 12, then went to south side of crater, which is out of Ross's land*. Camped near papyrus swamp at 3.30. Several hippo in pool. Send 21 porters off to-morrow to Mbugwe for posho, with one askari and headman. Sent one askari and two porters to main camp to see if loads have arrived. Sent boys with note to H., who has a farm near here.

South of Ngorogoro. November 3.

Went out at 5.45; saw a lion near the edge of swamp, saw us and started to clear. I got on my mule and rode after it with dogs. Let dogs loose. M. cut across camp, fired about three shots and hit him once; I fired one shot. Lion ran into swamp of long grass. Followed him, and dogs rounded him up. We both fired and killed him. A fine black-maned lion. Took some photos and returned to camp. Received note from H.,† who is coming over. Given us permission to shoot all over here.

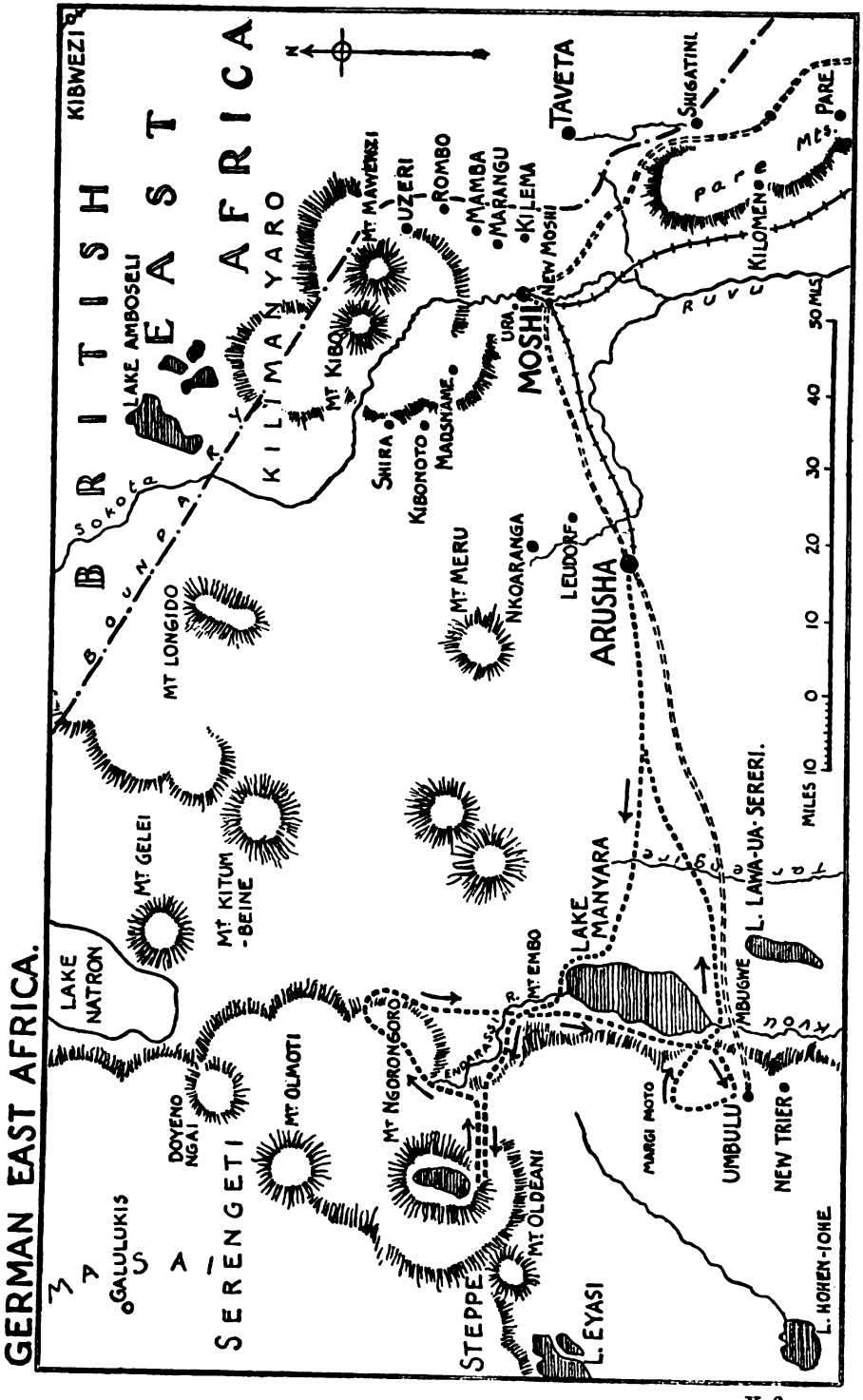
South of Ngorogoro Crater. November 4.

Did not go out early. About 7 a.m. boys came back and porters said hippo out feeding near pool, so M. went out

* Sir Charles Ross has bought part of the crater.

† H., an English hunter, who served with District Intelligence Scouts in the campaign in German E. Africa.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

and shot it. At 8.30, H. arrived for breakfast (he owns part of the crater). He said on the way he had shot at two lions and hit them. Had breakfast and then went out to see if we could get on to them. Found blood spoor of lions, followed it into reedy swamp; too thick, so decided to burn it. Fired grass and after about half an hour a lioness came out a long distance away. M. ran forward and made a very good shot at about 300 yards, dropping the lioness. Went over and then finished lioness off. Put boys on to skin it. Fire still burning; so went back to H. after half an hour. He went back to see if boys had skinned lioness, as afraid of fire coming on to it. Just as I was getting on my mule to join M. a lioness broke out in the open. H. and I fired, but did not hit. Lioness went into patch of long grass. Fired grass and dogs bayed her up. Lioness broke cover my end. I fired and hit her, and she doubled back into long grass. Waited with H. and both thought she was dead in long grass, as dogs had gone through it, and fire had practically finished the patch of grass, when suddenly the lioness charged. We both fired and she dropped within about 10 yards. M. came up afterwards. H. went on to see if he could see the other lion. M. and I returned to camp. About half an hour afterwards heard two shots. At 4.40 boys returned with dogs and said H. had been mauled by lion, so I went back on mule to his house about 6 miles away. Saw H., who said he had fired some grass; a lioness charged him. Fired both barrels, hitting both times. Lioness got him down but luckily died at once. H. got punctured wound in thigh, slight one in chest. I injected iodine with syringe into wounds. Returned camp 7.45.

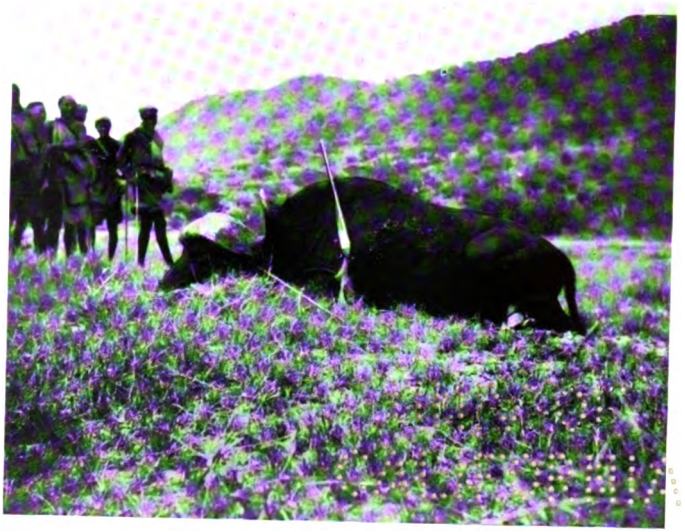
H. has since been killed by an elephant.

Camp Wa Faro. November 22.

I left camp with safari 6.5. M. left ahead to try for buffalo. About 10.0 a.m. I heard several shots. As I was ahead of the safari* on the edge of the forest, on the plain, saw a rhino,

* Shooting party.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

but poor horn, so did not shoot it. About half an hour afterwards a buffalo came full gallop out of the bush and passed me about 120 yards. I got it with my heavy rifle—fair head, 42-in. Five minutes afterwards another buffalo came out behind near the safari and was galloping towards them. All porters threw down their loads and scattered. Both these buffalo must have been disturbed by M. Just before getting into camp I saw a buffalo in some thick bush. Got up within 20 yards, but as I could not see his head I did not fire. Thought it was either rhino or buffalo. Cleared out the other side before I could see if it had a good head. M. returned. He had killed a rhino. Had to shoot it as it had charged the boys with him.

Endarassi. November 23.

M. left 5.45 and returned 12 o'clock. A rhino had come charging towards him. He got behind a tree as not wanting to shoot it. Rhino stood a few yards off, when his boy let off his other rifle and nearly shot him. Rhino cleared. Plenty of rhino here; in fact a nuisance as one is only allowed two. I moved camp about 40 mins. from last camp as too far from water. Stayed in camp all day. Twenty loads of posho arrived from Mbugwe.

Endarassi R. November 24

Left at 6 a.m. Got on to spoor of elephant. At 8 o'clock came up with them—about four, but all cows, so left them. Returned camp 10.25. M. returned about 12 o'clock. Had followed up buffalo but did not get a shot. Ran across a big rhino in thick bush. Moving to Margi Moto to-morrow.

Margi Moto. November 25.

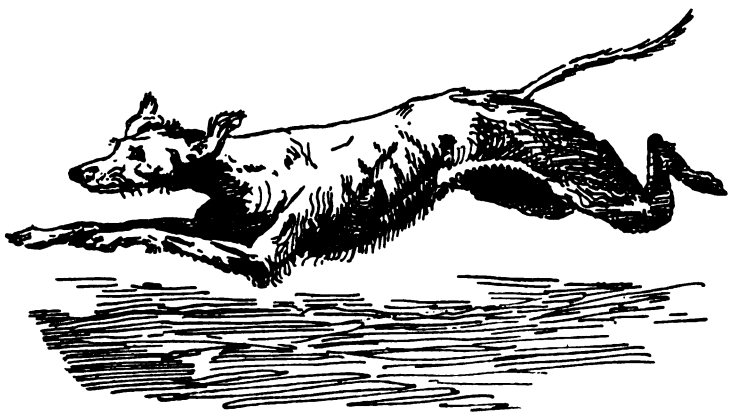
Moved here at 6 a.m., and arrived about 10 a.m. Just before getting to camp porters saw a buffalo. M. went after it, but it cleared. Posho arrived from Mbugwe at 3 o'clock. At 4.15 M. and I went out together and then separated. I went on and got into thick bush, saw something moving about 60

Digitized by Google

yards away; thought it was a rhino, waited and out came a buffalo. I fired, dropping it on to its knees and then cleared. Waited for about five minutes before following spoor and then heard it groaning. Just at that time another buffalo came round a bush, a small bull or cow, stopped and then came straight for me. I fired and turned it about 40 yards. I then came up to the dead buffalo. Very good head, about 48 in. M. returned and had only seen another rhino.

Mton Mjaingagi. November 27.

Left camp 6.5, arrived here about 10.30. On the way came across a rhino, so got within 20 yards of it and M. took a photo. As it had got a fairly good horn I shot it; horn 21 in. Dropped it in its tracks. At 4 o'clock M. and I went to look for buffalo on chance of elephant. On walking up river-bed near camp an elephant suddenly appeared out of the bush, about 120 yards away; so we kept perfectly still; as it did not appear to have big tusks, did not want to shoot it, so when within 35 yards I shouted. Elephant then came straight for us, so we fired and got it. Tusks 32 lbs. and 33 lbs.



Digitized by Google

THE AIR MAIL FROM CAIRO TO BAGHDAD

By Captain Rupert de la Bere,

Professor at the R.A.F. Cadet College, Cranwell, Lincs.

Since the war there has been regular air traffic between Cairo and Amman, or Rabbath Ammon, which lies on the verge of the Syrian desert, some twenty miles north-east of the Dead Sea.

But the opening of the desert route—between Amman and Baghdad—was not considered practically till March, 1921, when there was a conference at the Middle East headquarters of the R.A.F., at which were present the Secretary of State for the Colonies, the Chief of the Air Staff, and the local Army and Air Force Commanders. It was then stated that the new Air line was to be :—

> '1. A link in an aerial chain of Imperial communications between Europe and India, and possibly further afield.
>
> '2. A line of rapid reinforcement from Egypt or Palestine to Iraq, both for machines and *personnel.*
>
> '3. A means of rapid communication for service purposes by a regular service air mail.
>
> '4. A form of training in long distance flying.'*

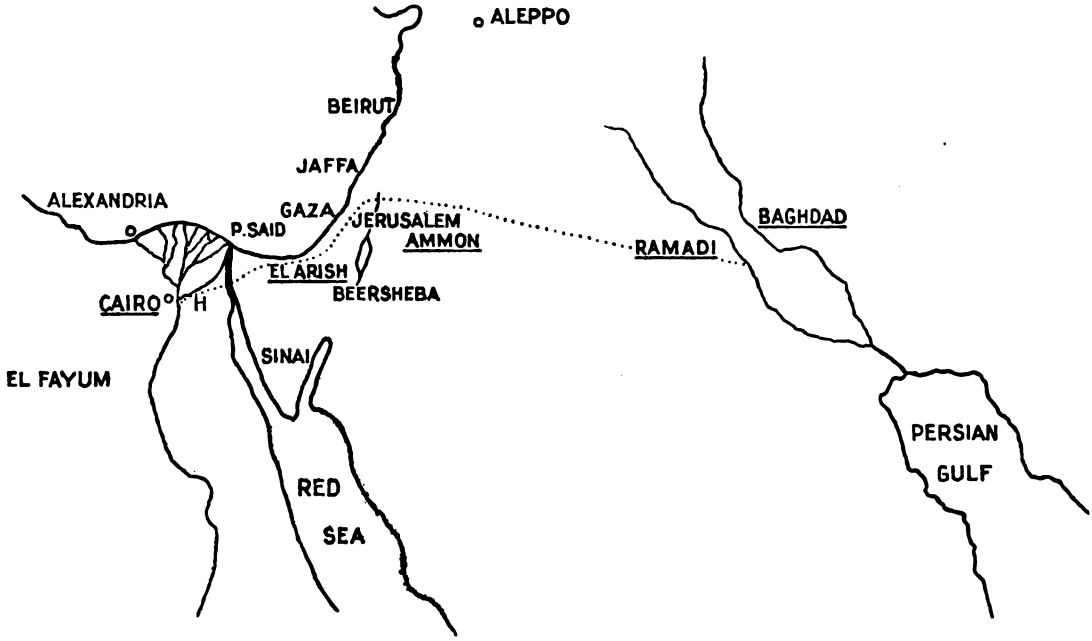
The Air Mail had been running regularly for some time before I went on it—January 4, 1924.

I was staying at the time with No. 216 Squadron, which is

* ('Pilot's Handbook of the Cairo-Baghdad Route.' Government Press. Cairo, 1923.)

Digitized by Google

stationed at Heliopolis. This squadron, which is a complete service unit in itself, acts also as a reception and departure centre for the air mail. The end of the aerodrome near the Mokkattam Hills is reserved for the mail machines; and here are the hangars where the mail machines are housed, and the offices to which the bags of civilian and service mail are delivered.



Sketch Map to Illustrate the Air Mail Route.

The mail trip is made fortnightly, on Fridays, in a variety of machines, according to the freightage and the number of passengers—in Vimys, D.H.9As, or Vickers Vernons. Generally, one machine carries the mail, and there is an attending machine to take it on in case the first machine is forced to land in the desert.

The flight to Baghdad recounted in this article was made in a Vickers Victoria, the biggest type of machine used in the R.A.F. This monster, of which a photograph is given, had just come over from England in parts. It was assembled in Egypt and went through its tests near Cairo.

I forget the exact details. But one can get some idea

Digitized by Google

of its size and load from a note which I took of the Vernon, which accompanied us. The bare weight of the Vernon with water is 7,850 lbs.; petrol and oil weigh 2,300 lbs., and a useful load of mail and passengers is 3,850 lbs. This gives a total weight of 14,000 lbs.

The useful load of the Victoria is a good deal bigger. Her total weight is 18,200 lbs. She is furnished with twin 450-h.p. Napier-Lion engines; can carry twenty-three passengers and has a cruising speed of between 75 and 80 miles an hour.

The Air Mail was due to leave at 8 a.m. All who were travelling on it had passed the night at No. 216 Squadron, and were called next day with the lark. After a hurried breakfast and the signing of many forms, we got together our blankets and the limited kit you are allowed to take on the mail, and stuffed our overcoat pockets with the little refinements of food that make Service rations more attractive in case, by ill-luck, you have to spend a night or two 'in the blue.'

Anyone who voyages on the desert mail is strongly advised to bring his mug, and knife and spoon and fork, and to beg or steal a Sidcot suit. One ought to bring cotton wool, too, to put in one's ears against the roar of the engines; also a muffler and some interesting books.

It is a good thing to sit forrard and near the wireless operator and follow the continuous messages, and to track out the route in the 'Pilot's Handbook' issued by the R.A.F. This makes a long journey far less tedious.

By 7.30 all the mail and the rest of the baggage, including crates of engine parts, etc., destined for Iraq, had been loaded into the machine by a little door in the rear, and the passengers got in and disposed themselves amidst the cargo. They were the pilot, the second pilot, the fitter, the wireless mechanic, who was continuously in touch with ground wireless stations, and seven or eight other officers.

The interior of a Victoria is not unlike that of a railway

Digitized by Google

carriage, and the door in the rear is locked with something like a guard's key.

Meantime the twin engines had been run up and for the moment we crowded forrard to ease the weight on the tail so that the machine could take off easily. But in spite of this we did not take off at once, as that end of the aerodrome at Heliopolis was soft, and the tail skid buried itself so deeply that the belly of the machine was in danger of being worn on the sand. So the passengers disembarked and the baggage was better disposed. Then the machines 'taxied' to a firmer bit of the aerodrome, where they both took off at once, a few minutes only behind the scheduled time. The Victoria climbed quickly to 3,000 feet and the passengers settled down for their long trip.

All had large wads of cotton wool in their ears, because the grand roar of the engines on either side of the machine is deafening, and, without this precaution, deafness may last for some hours. It is almost impossible to converse in the machine; but it is quite easy to get on with pencil and paper, and extravagant facial gestures.

We were soon passing over the strip of desert from Heliopolis to Tel-el-Kebir, which lies 47 miles north-north-east. Near Tel-el-Kebir one could pick out quite easily in the drab panorama the trenches dug by Arabi Pasha in his campaign against Wolseley in 1882; and it was about here that the pilot pointed out discolorations of the sand and slight humpings, where lies buried one of the Cities of Refuge.

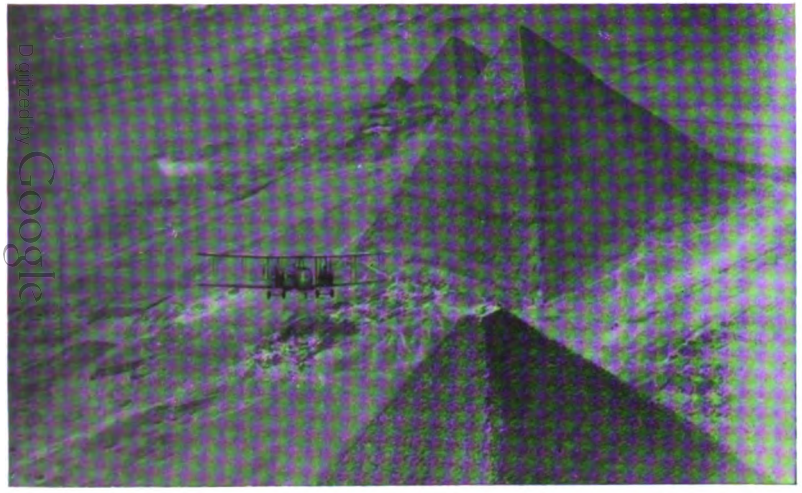
From Tel-el-Kebir we turned due east for 20 miles and followed the railway line to Abu Sueir, where we got a remarkable view of the intricate system of irrigation in Egypt. From Abu Sueir we went half left to Kantara for 25 miles, cutting the Suez at an angle of 50 degrees.

It was refreshing now to be flying parallel with the sea, on past Romani and Moseifig, to El Arish, where we turned gradually northwards up the coast of Palestine to Rafa,

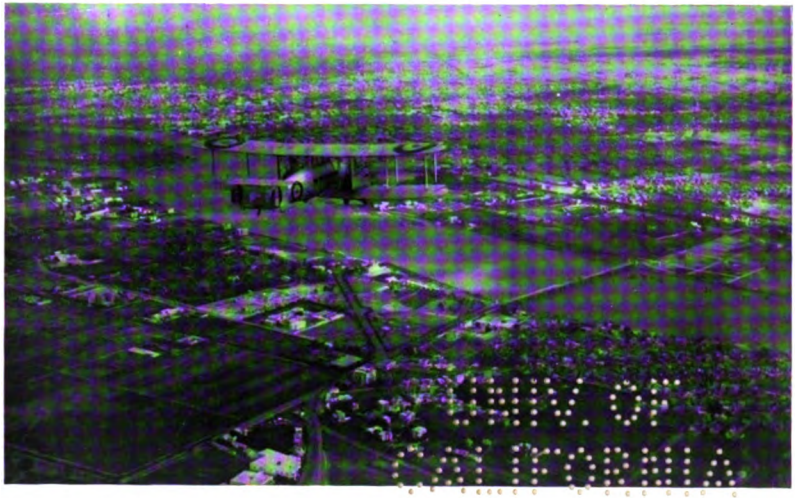
Digitized by Google

THE VICKERS VICTORIA IN WHICH THE TRIP HERE RECORDED WAS MADE.

INSPECTION OF MACHINES AT HELIOPOLIS.



OVER THE GIZEH PYRAMIDS.



THE MAIL MACHINE OVER BAGHDAD.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

having made, when we got there, 200 miles of the journey. We were still skirting the sea, which could be seen very blue and white, lapping the beach.

The next instalment, 60 miles, was to Ramleh, which is about 15 miles south-east of Jaffa and 15 miles from the coast. Here we turned right-handed towards Jerusalem, which we passed slightly on our left, with Bethlehem very much to the right. The pilots stuck rigidly to the official route, as they were taking over two big machines. But it is possible, in the event of bad weather or low clouds over the Judæan Hills, to take a short cut through Beersheba and cross the south end of the Dead Sea and so on to Ziza.

As the mountains of Judea are traversed, the amateur has many qualms and is anxious where, in that rugged spread of country, a big machine would land safely, if there were engine trouble; and the effect of sheer height and asperity of outline is emphasised by the depth below the sea-level of the Dead Sea.

The last part of the first stage runs between Jericho and the north end of the Dead Sea on to Amman. There is a good aerodrome at Amman; but we landed at Ziza, where there is a big natural landing ground. Ziza is on the Hedjaz railway, 20 miles south of Amman. We had made the first stage in just over 3½ hours, as we had a strong following wind and must have been making at some times about 90 miles an hour.

It was very attractive to refuel the machine and make straight away for Ramadi—that is, to complete the second stage of the trip in one day. But we received orders by wireless from Egypt not to proceed till next day. So the machines were picketed down fore and aft for the night and refueled. Presently two or three ragged Beduins straggled over and, with obsolete rifles, mounted guard over the machines, which presented a remarkable sight in such a setting.

The passengers made themselves at home in the remains

Digitized by Google

of the railway buildings at Ziza, which seem very lonely as the village of Ziza and its neighbour were depopulated and almost razed recently by an Arab raid from the south.

One officer, who prided himself on his jackiness-of-all-trades, purchased from a Beduin a consumptive turkey and two emaciated hens, plucked them, and broke them to pieces by hand and devilled them on a shovel over a sort of copper. A rare collation followed, which was enjoyed the more as pre-prandial access to the cuisine had been sternly denied to all except the protagonist.

We left Ziza as soon as the morning mist cleared and a favourable 'meteor' reached us by wireless. The machines ran up at once. They are started in the manner of a car with a handle, which is thrown out of gear as soon as the engine fires.

The country we had traversed so far has many prominent features—perhaps too many or too prominent in the last 50 miles for some of the passengers—and has been mapped accurately for some years. But the country east of the Dead Sea is for the most part uncharted.

Here begins the artificial track from Ziza to Ramadi. It was made by two survey parties working simultaneously from Amman and Ramadi and it was made more conspicuous by the use of heavy Crossley desert tenders and Rolls-Royce tenders. Auxiliary to their wheel marks, a single furrow was ploughed by a motor tractor. I met at Kirkuk one of the men who made the track. He told me it was a very hard task and that on some days, when only a mile or two had been covered, it seemed an endless and a hopeless task. The furrow is still very distinct from the air. I examined it closely when we landed once, and it seemed to me to be worn only when it passed over chert, where probably the plough had never made a deep cut.

A series of landing grounds along this track have been chosen and prepared at an average distance from each other

Digitized by Google

of 19 miles. All of them are conspicuously *lettered* in the centre of a big ploughed circle in the Cairo zone and *numbered* in the centre in the Baghdad zone. From Amman to El Jib, which is by the air route 600 miles from Cairo, and about 250 miles from Amman, the grounds are lettered from A to R, with the omission of I and Q. From El Jib to Ramadi, about 220 miles, the grounds are marked in Roman numerals from XI backwards to I, with the exception of landing ground 8, which is written in ordinary numerals, as I suppose the driver could not resist this seductive bit of figure ploughing.

The route is divided into zones so that Egypt and Baghdad can be responsible for salvage each in their own zone, and so that if a machine is forced to land there shall be no delay in picking up the mail, which always gets priority over the male. Every effort is made to make the machines which carry civilian and service mail regular and punctual, and to synchronise them with European sailings to and from Egypt.

The pilot notifies the correct zone by wireless as he passes over each landing ground and if, after a reasonable interval, there is no wireless message from the pilot, zone Headquarters know where to send out a relief machine.

The valley of the Jordan and of the Dead Sea is separated from the Mesopotamian Plain by a broad elevated tract which forms the northern portion of the great tableland of Arabia.* This tableland has an average height of 2,000 feet above the sea-level, but its western scarp rises to 3,350 feet. This soon gives way to the general Mesopotamian tableland.

This so-called Syrian 'desert' has by no means entirely a desert character. Much of it is steppe. In its heart are immense tracts of grazing for camels, goats and sheep, and, though there are volcanic patches, vegetation is rarely quite out of sight. Round Amman there are far-flung cornfields, and elsewhere grass and scrub are found. In a few

* 'Pilot's Handbook,' to which I am indebted also in the next sentences.

Digitized by Google

places the ground indeed is so soft and soil-covered as to present difficulties to car traffic.

The basalt country chiefly has difficulty for the pilot who wishes to land. It is not easy from the air to recognise the dark basalt boulders into which an original veneer of this hard rock has weathered by erosion. These boulders have been rolled in the passage of time and now lie spread like giant cobbles across many miles of flat country.

There are also big mud flats in shallow depressions,—smooth as a painted sea, and excellent fair weather landing grounds. In the handbook and map supplied by the R.A.F. to its pilots, from which I get much of my information, instructions are given to the pilot how to detect whether a mud flat is dry from its coloration.

As you go from East to West your best landmarks are the Dead Sea, which is easily picked up, the Hedjaz Railway, and Aszrak, conspicuous a long way by its marshy and green appearance.

From D to H there are no conspicuous features—only patches of scrub, boulder-capped hills, boulder cobble and mud flats, where the going for cars is often bad.

From H to R the going for cars is good. This is flown almost on one compass bearing. There are a few mud flats and some scrub.

Between P and R there is a big, crater-like depression not far from the track, which can be picked up easily from the air.

From XI to IV the ground is incised by heavy drainage lines. There are frequent wells, with Arab encampments about them. This is the region of Wadi Hauran and the Rutbah wells. It is not easy now to follow always the furrow across the wadis or round them; but the pilot is aided by many big arrows ploughed in the desert. The pilot learns, moreover, to pick out insignificant local features, *e.g.*, two flat topped hills south of the landing ground VII.

Digitized by Google

The second stage to Ramadi is long and tiring. The intervals between the landing grounds seem to grow longer and longer. And the panorama from the air is endlessly monotonous. Here and there one saw large herds of camels, but there was hardly a sign of human life.

The first four hours of the seven hours' journey were flown with long wallowing bumps, which induced a mild air sickness. But I was told—as one always is told when one is hard pressed—that this was comparatively nothing, and that the bumps over the Judæan Hills and over the western scarp of the Syrian Desert were much more severe in the summer time—too severe even for the old hand.

We reached Ramadi, passing over big wadis and black bituminous pools, just after six in the evening. The night was closing in, so that we had to land our machines by flares.

After our long trip Ramadi was indeed the haven where we fain would be. Here is an outpost of No. 70 Squadron, furnished with the pale rugs and simple brass of Persia and Iraq, with which the better class Arab knows so well how to make his home picturesque and homely.

Here the silent Arab boys, in their black and white headdresses, had ready a hot meal. After it, we retired to a marquees for the night.

Ramadi is a port of call for the two companies who traverse the desert from here to Beirut, in Buick and Cadillac cars, often at a rate of 50 miles an hour. When I came back on the mail and halted at Ramadi, there were there a Victoria, a Vernon, a Bristol, a D.H.9.A. and six cars of the desert companies, which seemed strangely out of place amid the motley of Arabs, who always run up, in numbers from nowhere, jabbering and giggling.

From Ramadi to Baghdad is a short stage of about one hour. There are now many conspicuous features for the pilot. The Euphrates at once comes into view and Lake Habbaniyah, destined to have great importance in the irri-

Digitized by Google

gation of Iraq, stretches widely on the right. This and the river with its tributaries are in sight almost till Baghdad comes into view, big, clean and white—at least from the air.

Our machine landed at Hinaidi on the outskirts of Baghdad opposite the hangars of No. 70 Squadron, which for the time has been detailed for Mail duties.

It was a great relief to reach Hinaidi. We all needed a wash, and most of the passengers could swear by their beards.

The coming and going of the mail are the big events at Hinaidi and a little crowd of officers and airmen is always there to welcome the passengers and their valuable load. The value of letters cannot be appreciated fully till after a few weeks in Hinaidi.

The mail was unloaded quickly to the distributing centre and carried off on smaller machines to Mosul, Kirkuk, Basra and elsewhere.

On my way back, a few weeks later, we landed at Landing Ground V to look at one of the petrol tanks, sunk in the desert and secured against thieving Arabs by an ingenious locking device, for which the pilot carries a special key.

Later in the day, owing to the sodden state of the aerodrome at Ziza, we had to land again, this time for the night, at Aszrak.

In accordance with Air Ministry orders for machines which are forced to land in the desert, before our machine landed a smoke candle was dropped by the mechanic, which burst into smoke on contact with the ground and so gave the pilot the strength and direction of the surface wind.

The machine was picketed down into the wind, the propeller covers were put on and lamps were put into the radiators as we were in for a freezing night.

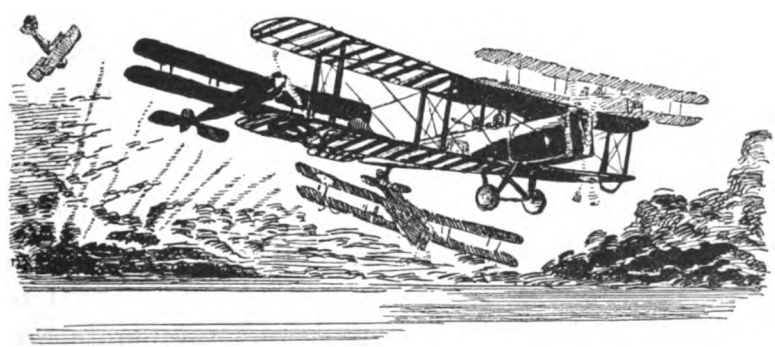
We collected camel thorn and soon had a fire ablaze, on which our officer cook again had a supper preparing, fearfully and wonderfully made.

Digitized by Google

No Arabs turned up. Both single Arabs and bodies of Arabs are generally friendly, especially to British. Pilots are advised to make every effort to converse with them and are given a booklet of useful sentences: 'It is best to offer Arabs cigarettes and food. No offer of food from Arabs should be refused, as the refusal is considered unmannerly. If arms are carried, or are in evidence, never flourish them. The Arab is never averse from appropriating quietly any small article which pleases or amuses him. If a large body of Arabs insists on relieving you of arms or ammunition, the only possibility is to give them up with a good grace.'

The last stage of the journey, despite a strong head wind, was made in one piece (except for a short halt at Ziza to refuel) from Aszrak to Heliopolis; so that, in spite of the hours lost in the desert, the pilot arrived in time for the mails to be taken by train to Port Said, and shipped on the P. & O. on the following day.

Three days are normally allowed for the flight from Baghdad to Cairo, but it has often been made in one day. The record for the flight was made by a D.H.9.A. It was approximately eight hours and 10 minutes.



Digitized by Google

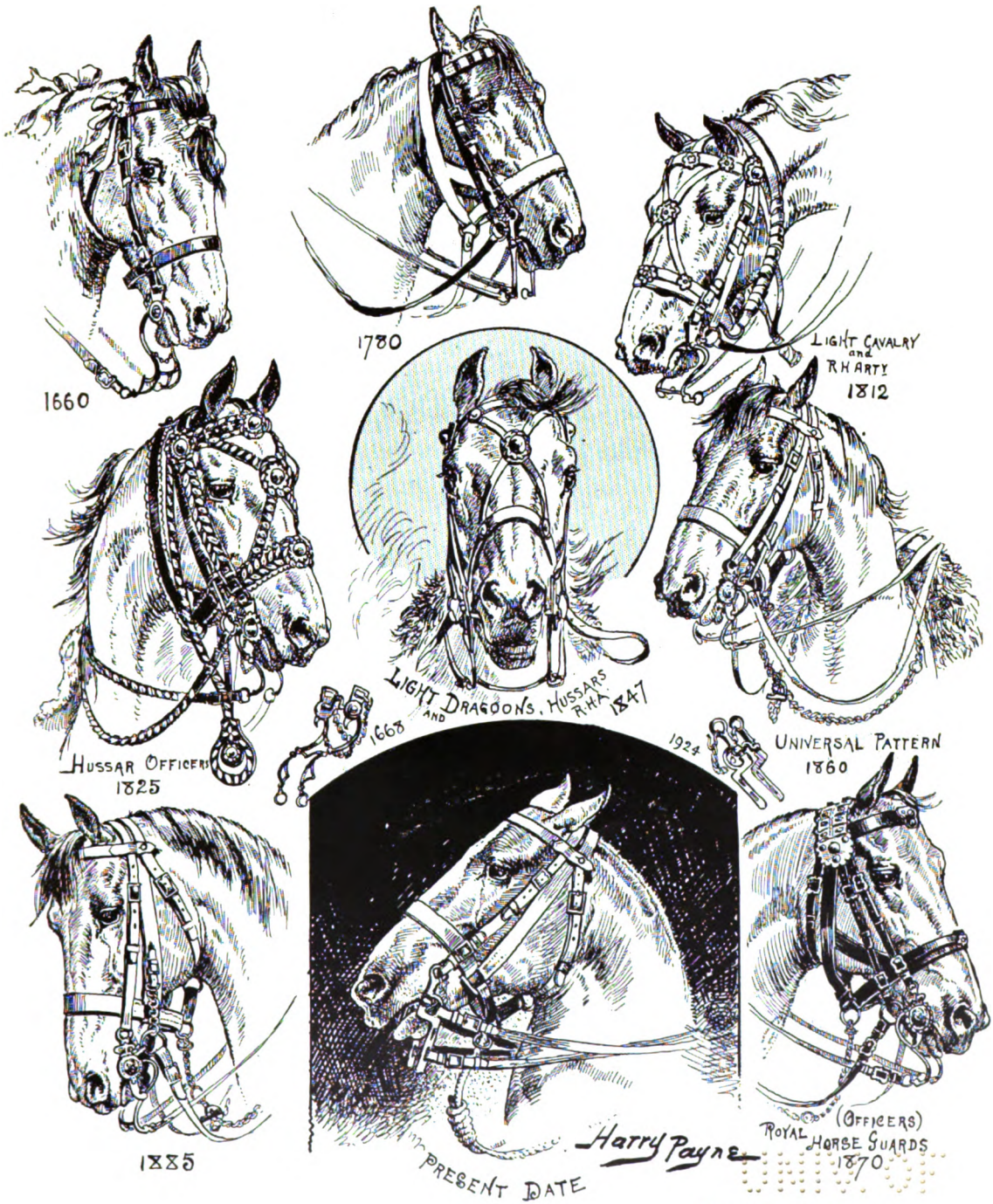
SOME BRIDLES AND HEADSTALLS USED BY THE BRITISH CAVALRY SINCE THE FORMATION OF THE PRESENT STANDING ARMY

By Harry Payne

Looking through the early historical records, as far as they can be procured from statues, old paintings, engravings, etc., the War horse has always been very heavily bitted and, according to the more humane ideas of the present day, severely, if not cruelly so.

Specimens of bits in the Tower and other Museums measure from 8 to 12 inches long, generally very heavy, and this description of bit was adopted by the Cavalry of the Army formed in 1660. It was very long, with a severe arch in the mouth. The bridle was perfectly plain, of black leather and brass buckles, but bows of ribbons of the colour of the Regimental facings were hung at the ends of the browband, and ornamented the mane and tail of the horse. This pattern, which had been in use for centuries, remained so until the middle of the 18th century, when a headstall with a halter rein, which was fastened to the saddle on the near side and generally of white leather, was introduced as part of the head equipment, and likewise about this time a bridoon rein came into use. This seems at first to have been fastened to the top of the curb under the boss, but later a separate bridoon, or snaffle bit, was brought in, the horse thus having the two bits in his mouth. No doubt the bridoon was originally intended to be used mainly for watering order, school, and

Digitized by Google



SOME OF THE VARIOUS PATTERNS OF CAVALRY BRIDLES AND HEADSTALLS USED BY THE BRITISH CAVALRY SINCE ITS FORMATION IN 1660.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

such occasions, but it soon came to form part of the equipment worn on all mounted parades. Although the two reins were carried, the dragoon always rode upon the curb only. In fact it may be said that the Cavalry were taught to ride on the curb practically till the end of the 19th century, when " reforms " were so much the order of the day, and the soldier was taught to ride on all four reins on all occasions.

The present pattern bit combines the curb and bridoon as one; it is extremely plain and inelegant, and weighs nearly as much as the two previous ones together.

Glancing at the page sketches, it will be seen how the patterns have changed from the very plain bridle of 1660 to the very ornate one of the early 19th century, with the officers' bridle and headstall ornamented with cowrie shells. Since the Crimea the tendency has been to dispense with ornamentation where possible, until the present pattern is nearly as plain as that of the days of the early Army of Charles II. The specimens show only a few of the various changes which took place, as many regiments had their own regimental pattern, but there is not space here to show them.

Digitized by Google

A CAVALRY FIGHT NEAR ALEPPO

October 26, 1918

By Lt.-Colonel W. J. Lambert, D.S.O., *Royal Deccan Horse*

This was an interesting affair, because it was the last fight fought against the Turks and Germans in Syria.

At 12 noon on October 31 the Armistice with Turkey came into force, and all posts were ordered to remain in the positions occupied at that hour.

The events leading up to the fight were as follows.

On September 19, two Divisions of Cavalry composed of Yeomanry and Indian Cavalry Regiments had concentrated by a night march near the sea coast north of Jaffa, having hidden all day in the orange groves on the 18th. After an intense bombardment the infantry attacked, and made a gap for the cavalry.

The Imperial Service Cavalry Brigade, consisting of the Jodhpur Lancers, Mysore Lancers and Hyderabad Lancers, followed the remainder of the 5th Cavalry Division. On September 23, the Brigade, which formed the advanced guard of the Division, took Haifa purely by mounted work, and captured 1,000 prisoners, 16 guns, and many machine guns. An account of this fight has already been published in the Cavalry Journal of October, 1920.

On October 1, Damascus was taken. On the 6th, Zahle was reached for a few days' much-needed rest. On the 17th, the Brigade reached Homs; on the 21st, Hama.

Khan Tuman was reached on the afternoon of the 25th,

Digitized by Google

the Brigade acting as advanced guard to the Division; a few armoured cars with the Divisional General, Major-General Sir Harry MacAndrew, being in front.

In the evening of the 25th, officers commanding did a reconnaissance while putting out outposts, and saw the Turks a few miles off behind entrenchments covering a direct advance on Aleppo.

Our Infantry had been left days before many miles behind, and the 5th Cavalry Division were entirely unsupported; the choice of an advance had been left to the Divisional General at Hama, and he had decided to go forward.

At 7 a.m. on October 26, the Brigade marched from Khan Tuman with orders to occupy a position astride the Aleppo-Alexandretta road, covering Aleppo from the north-west and on the way to clear the ridge west of Aleppo, where the enemy was reported to be entrenched. The ridge west of Aleppo, where we had seen the enemy the evening before, was found to be clear; they had also evacuated the town. This information had previously been received from Arab sources, but was not considered to be sufficiently reliable to be acted upon.

The Brigade reached the Alexandretta road at its exit from Aleppo at 9.45 a.m., after some very rough going over stony hills. The only definite information received up to this time regarding the enemy was that 300 cavalry were reported on the Alexandretta road 8 miles north-west of Aleppo. At 10.15 a.m. an aeroplane sailed overhead and dropped a message that about 1,000 scallywags of all descriptions, with two small guns, were proceeding along the Alexandretta road.

At about 11 a.m., when the advanced guard (two Squadrons of Jodhpur Lancers and one subsection Machine Gun Squadron) topped the ridge overlooking Haritan from the south-east, heavy rifle fire was opened on it, and shells began to fall all around. The advanced guard immediately

Digitized by Google

took up a position on the above ridge. Deeming instant action all important and in view of the information received, the Brigadier decided to attack at once. Orders were consequently issued to the Mysore Lancers to move round east of the ridge on which the advanced guard was established, and charge the enemy from the east, the Jodhpur Lancers to move in support as a mopping-up party.

I may add here that these two regiments were very weak, owing to casualties at Haifa and in other engagements, and owing to the fact that nearly 600 miles had been marched since September 19; they did not number more than 500. The rest of the Division was one day's march behind, about 30 miles.

The remainder of the Machine Gun Squadron (four guns) were sent to reinforce the advanced guard and get into action to cover the mounted attack. At 11.30 a.m., No. 12 L.A.M. Battery arrived, and was ordered at once to push along the main road in co-operation with the mounted attack.

At this hour the situation was as follows :—

Enemy holding Haritan village and ground south-east and east, with guns north-east of the village.

Our Troops.—Two Squadrons Jodhpur Lancers and Machine Gun Squadron holding fire position on ridge 1½ miles south-south-east of Haritan. Mysore and Jodhpur Lancers (less two squadrons) moving east to attack enemy mounted; No. 12 L.A.M. Battery moving up road north-west. The L.A.M. Battery pushed on and came into action, but something went wrong with the Battery leader's car, which forced it to return, and through some misunderstanding the other three cars also came back.

Meanwhile the Mysore and Jodhpur Lancers (less two squadrons) had advanced. The officer commanding Mysore Lancers galloped on and did a personal reconnaissance and, finding that the Turkish position extended further to the east, moved in that direction to gain the enemy's left flank.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

The enemy had spotted this movement and turned the fire of several guns on to the advancing Cavalry; but as the Cavalry kept moving at an appreciable pace, no casualties were suffered, though the shells followed our movements with great accuracy.

The formation of the advance was first of all line of squadron columns, and afterwards line of troop columns with squadrons at open column distance.

When a favourable opportunity offered, the Mysore Lancers were ordered to charge, pivotting on the Hotchkiss guns, which were ordered to support the charge with fire action. Unfortunately, a shell fell into the middle of the Hotchkiss guns, and somewhat disorganised them, blowing three ammunition mules to pieces.

12 noon.—The charge got well home, the horsemen galloping through lines of infantry, mostly Germans, lying down. Fifty of the enemy were killed and over twenty taken prisoners, and a great many more put up their hands, but, when they found how weak we were, started firing into the rear of the horsemen.

The Jodhpur Lancers were, unfortunately, too far in the right rear to act as an effective support, and as they came up ran into a line of German infantry. Colonel Hyla Holden was shot dead at the head of the regiment, and other casualties were suffered.

The enemy were in far greater strength than previous information indicated, and as the further movement east had taken the Mysore Lancers beyond supporting distance of the machine guns, and the want of weight prevented them going on and penetrating far into the enemy's position, the order was given to rally to the rear behind the Hotchkiss guns. They then took up a dismounted position and were joined by the Jodhpur Lancers.

1 p.m.—This action forced the enemy to reveal his whole strength, which was estimated at about 3,000 infantry, 400

Digitized by Google

cavalry, with 8 to 12 guns of various calibre, and from 30 to 40 machine guns and automatic rifles.

With this force they advanced as if to attack the position we were holding, but when within 800 yards halted and began to dig themselves in. It was then realised that they were taking up a defensive position, fearing a further attack, and it was consequently decided to remain in observation on the line then held.

Desultory fire was kept up till about 9 p.m. The whole night the enemy could be heard moving about. We remained with a thin line of outposts in touch with them.

By daylight the enemy had been withdrawn.

The 14th Cavalry Brigade arrived about midnight and took over the observation line at 6 a.m. on the 27th.

The enemy's casualties were estimated at 100.

Our casualties were 4 British officers, 1 Indian officer, 16 Indian other ranks killed; 6 British officers, 6 Indian officers, 44 other Indian ranks wounded, and 3 Indian other ranks missing. The total casualties were, therefore, 21 killed, 56 wounded, and 3 missing. On the 27th the Brigade was relieved by the 14th Brigade, and marched back to a bivouac area north of Aleppo, where it came into Divisional Reserve.

The lessons to be learnt from this small Cavalry fight were important and interesting—

1. The moral effect of Cavalry (to take on and hold up a force so very much numerically stronger, and to inflict appreciable casualties).

2. Cavalry while moving suffers few casualties from gun fire.

3. To bring off a really successful Cavalry action, one must have depth and therefore weight. (If another Brigade had been up, waves of horsemen would have swept through the enemy and captured the lot).

4. Mounted attacks should, whenever possible, be supported by gunfire and machine gun fire. (Our guns were not up in

Digitized by Google

this case, and the attack on the flank of the enemy was too far off to be supported by our machine guns.)

5. Colonel Hyla Holden, a very gallant gentleman, had no scouts out in front of him, as far as I remember. A leader runs grave risks without local protection.

6. Most of the casualties to the British officers were incurred in leading their squadrons. This will always be the case. It's the depth and weight which will count in the end, the line after line of galloping horsemen.

Digitized by Google

REGIMENTAL POLO

By Lieut.-General Sir Beauvoir de Lisle,
K.C.B., K.C.M.G., D.S.O.

In my first article, which appeared in the April number of the Cavalry Journal, I dealt with the first essential for a Tournament Polo Player, and stated that the second essential is horsemanship. Here we are met with a difficulty, because everyone possesses a different view of what is meant by the term. It is usual to describe a good man to hounds as a good horseman, and yet the same sportsman may make a very poor show in a second-class steeplechase, from want of horsemanship. Again, the winner of a Grand National would probably find himself at a great disadvantage if riding on the flat against even moderate flat-race jockeys because, contrary to the popular opinion, flat-race riding requires superior horsemanship.

The fact is, every kind of sport in the pigskin requires its own standard of horsemanship, and the polo standard for Tournaments lies between that of the steeplechase and the flat-race jockey. I recall even a Grand National winner who could never improve his polo handicap of 5 because he never reached the polo standard of horsemanship. I also recall a trainer-owner who was one of the best men between the flags I ever met, but who always engaged a professional jockey to ride his horses on the flat, and declared he was not a good enough horseman for flat-race riding.

There is another difficulty to be overcome with regard to

Digitized by Google

the requisite polo standard of horsemanship. There is an impression among players that a first-class player need not be a particularly fine horseman. It is this fundamental fallacy that has kept so many fine strikers from increasing their handicap beyond 7 or 8.

On the other hand, many players have been included in the best teams on account of superior horsemanship, and in spite of their weakness in other essentials.

The keen player who is determined to raise his handicap will want to know how he can reach the standard of horsemanship essential for first class and international polo.

Race-riding is not possible but for the few, and point-to-point racing, however good in its way, is not sufficient. Moreover, it is not the race that makes the horseman, but the riding gallops day after day until the thighs, arms and wrists become hardened and the heart and lungs capable of standing a very severe strain.

Though there is nothing so good as the training gallops, the same results can be obtained on the polo ground, not in the game itself so much as in the private practice with stick and ball. Just as the training track is absolutely necessary to make man and horse fit for the race, so stick practice, mounted, is equally necessary to make man and ponies fit for tournaments. I admit that young players are at a disadvantage in England, where a practice place is not always available. On the other hand in most military stations such places exist, but are too seldom made use of.

Anyone riding a fit horse in a half or three-quarter pace gallop in company for the first time will realise the strain on wind and muscles, and it will take some time before such exercise brings enjoyment. It is just as impossible to train the muscles for the essential standard of polo horsemanship without strain and fatigue, and certainly this will not be acquired by cantering about a polo ground knocking about a ball with easy strokes. To harden the thigh muscles, strain of some

Digitized by Google

kind is necessary, and the best and simplest way is work with stick and ball without stirrups. To attempt to do this straight away is madness, and would result in disgust at one's inability to carry it out. To knock about at a walk without stirrups for five minutes at first is a reasonable task. Then take up stirrups for a rest and later try again. Before attempting to do the same at a trot it is first necessary to learn to rise in the saddle without stirrups, by far the best thigh exercise I know, and one that takes the conceit out of any but the best horsemen. Begin with a quarter of a mile and hope to get a mile in a fortnight; and this is good going. When a player can rise in the saddle at a trot for a mile without undue strain and fatigue, he may congratulate himself on having acquired the horseman's thigh, and all further exercises will be easy. These consist in trotting with stick and ball, and cantering with stick and ball, hitting back as well as forward, all without stirrups for ten to fifteen minutes a day. Finally, the combined practice with two players, as recommended at the end of my April article, will put a finish to the training of man and pony in a few days that they would not get in games in as many years.

I do not disguise the fact that a month of this kind of training is very hard work, and without companionship is at times monotonous. Nothing worth having can be acquired without trouble, and it is amazing what results can be achieved by anyone determined to reach the high standard of horsemanship necessary for first class polo. Every day it will become easier, and though during the first fortnight it requires great determination to continue these exercises, it will be found that the time given to harden muscles also improves the stick work and so the two first essentials for first-class polo are being acquired at the same time.

Digitized by Google

YEOMANRY BADGES

By Major H. G. Parkyn, O.B.E.

The origin of the Yeomanry as a force is merged into that of the Militia. In 1330 Fortescue records that the Light Infantry of the Fyrd, which were originally established to patrol the coast, were called Hobelars, from the Hollies or ponies they rode. Their equipment consisted of an iron helmet, iron gloves, and sword, and a padded doublet; but for many years all the mounted soldiers were, with this exception, drawn from the higher ranks of society, and it does not appear to be until the time of Charles I. that the true value of the British Yeomanry was discovered. Both Charles and Cromwell had a number of Yeomen in their Cavalry. The Model Army of 1645 contained eleven regiments of Cavalry, each of six troops of 100 men. In 1654 Fortescue states that England was divided, first, into ten and, later, into twelve military districts, each under a Major-General, who had a force which varied from 100–1,500, composed almost entirely of Cavalry, with which he was responsible for the maintenance of peace in his district. These troops were almost entirely drawn from the Militia.

In 1661 the Militia was entirely reorganised and is spoken of as both Horse and Foot. In George III.'s reign appear the Hunter Volunteers, and about 1793 a large number of Yeomanry Corps were formed and called 'Gentlemen and Yeomanry,' while, three years later, 20,000 more were added under the title of Provisional Cavalry. A helmet of the

Digitized by Google

Lancashire Provisional Cavalry is in the collection of head-dresses of the R.U.S.I., but details of this force are very scarce. Most of these Corps had a short existence, but a few remained until 1813, when the force was once more called into being.

In 1827 the Government in many cases withdrew its grant to Corps, and a number were disbanded, but in most cases resuscitated four years later.

Previous to 1828 there were 124 Corps of Yeomanry in Great Britain, but in that year they were reduced to 38 Corps, which comprised 10,000 men, 5,000 of whom served gratuitously. Several Corps were added during the next few years, but in 1838 another reduction took place, and the force, which had increased to over 18,000, was reduced to 13,204.

In 1843 the Yeomanry were increased by 6 troops, being transferred from the unpaid to the paid establishment; but in 1870 they were once more reduced, all Corps of under four troops being disbanded and Corps of 10 and 12 troops being reduced to 8.

In 1798 Ireland had a large number of Yeomanry Corps, which took a prominent part in the suppression of the Rebellion of that year; but in 1834 the whole of the Irish Yeomanry were finally disbanded.

In 1880 there were 39 Regiments of Yeomanry Cavalry and five of Volunteer Light Horse, while in 1900 the number was 38, and in 1914 there were 54 Corps. The services of the Yeomanry during the late War, both as Cavalry and Infantry, were of the highest order, and it seems a pity that a force that can so ably fill both *rôles* should be almost annihilated.

In the following article the dates of formation of the various Corps have been taken as from when they were regimented, although in nearly every case, as independent or local troops of Yeomanry, they can trace back much further.

No. 1. The Ayrshire (Earl of Carrick's Own) Hussars Yeomanry. Trace back to 1803, although they claim descent

Digitized by Google

from the Ayrshire Fencible Cavalry, raised in 1797 by Lord Archibald Kennedy. They at first displayed as their badge the figure of St. Andrew and the Cross, but now wear the crest of a Winged Lion, the crest of the Prince of Wales as Earl of Carrick.

No. 2. The Bedfordshire Yeomanry date from 1901. As a badge they have adopted the insignia of the Town of Bedford, which was conferred in 1566. The Regiment under the new organisation became the 105th (Bedfordshire Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A.

No. 3. The Berkshire (Hungerford) Yeomanry, raised in 1831, wore as their cap badge the design of the White Horse cut in the chalk at Offington, but previously they had displayed a Crescent with a Blazing Star, which forms part of the Arms of the ancient borough of Hungerford. They now exist as the 99th (Buckinghamshire and Berkshire) Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A.

No. 4. The Buckinghamshire (Royal Bucks Hussars) Yeomanry trace back to the year 1800, and during the Chartist Riots were on duty at Windsor Castle. As a badge the Regiment displayed the insignia of the Town of Buckingham.

No. 5. The Cheshire (Earl of Chester's) Hussars Yeomanry trace back to 1794. Their badge is that of the Prince of Wales's Coronet, Motto and Plumes as Earl of Chester. In the Army List of 1849 the Regiment is described as the King's Cheshire Yeomanry Cavalry.

No. 6. The Denbighshire Hussars Yeomanry also had the Prince of Wales's Coronet, Motto and Feathers as their badge. The Regiment date from 1830. They are now the 61st (Carnarvon and Denbigh Yeomanry) Medium Brigade R.G.A.

No. 7. The Derbyshire (Dragoons) Yeomanry were formed in 1830, and had as their badge a Red Rose below a Crown. This design had for many years been the armorial bearings used by the county, although it was never officially recognised.

In the Army List it used to be described as the ' United

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Red and White Rose ensigned with the Imperial Crown.' They became the 24th (Derbyshire Yeomanry) Armoured Car Company, Royal Tank Corps under the new organisation.

No. 8. The Royal 1st Devon Hussars Yeomanry date from 1831, and, according to ' His Majesty's Army,' by W. Richards, at one time had the badge of Exeter Castle, but of late years wore the Royal crest, below which was added in 1916 a scroll with the title.

No. 9. The Royal North Devon (Hussars) Yeomanry had as their cap badge until recently the design of the letters ' R.N.D.' below a Crown, but on the conclusion of the late War assumed the crest of John, Lord Rolle, their first colonel. The Regiment dates from 1803, when they were raised as the Royal North Devon Mounted Rifles. In 1868 they were given the title ' Hussars.' The two Devon Yeomanry Corps are now united as the 96th (Devonshire Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A.

No. 10. The Dorset (Queen's Own Hussars) Yeomanry were formed in 1830. They had as their cap badge the letters ' Q.O.' above a scroll inscribed ' Dorset,' with the letter ' Y ' below, all inside a crowned Garter and wreath of laurel, the Garter inscribed with the motto ' Honi soit qui mal y pense.' Now they exist as the 94th (Dorset and Somerset Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A.

No. 11. The Essex (Dragoons) Yeomanry, formed in 1901, had as a badge the three Seaxes which figure in the county arms. The motto of the Regiment was ' Audacter et sincere.' The Regiment has now become the 104th (Essex Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A.

No. 12. The Fife and Forfar Dragoons Yeomanry were constituted Yeomanry in 1901, when the two Regiments of Fife Volunteer Light Horse and Forfar Volunteer Light Horse were amalgamated. The Fifeshire Corps, which was formed in 1860 as the Fife Volunteer Rifle Corps, display as their badge the figure of a knight on horseback, which is one of the crests

Digitized by Google

of the Duke of Fife and represents Macduff, the Thane of Fife, a mythical personage who assisted Malcolm Canmore to remove from the throne of Scotland the usurper Macbeth. As a reward for his services Macduff had three privileges given him: first, that he and his successors should have the right of placing the King on his throne on Coronation Day; second, that they should lead the van in the battle whenever the Royal banner was displayed; and, third, that if they or any of their kindred committed slaughter of a sudden or unpremeditated kind they should have a peculiar sanctuary or asylum to which they might flee, and should obtain a full remission on payment of a certain ransom.

The Regiment is now the 20th (Fife and Forfar Yeomanry) Armoured Car Company, Royal Tank Corps.

No. 13. The Glamorgan Dragoons Yeomanry had as their badge the Prince of Wales's Coronet, Motto and Feathers. The Regiment was first formed in 1830, and are now the 324th (Glamorgan Yeomanry) Battery 81st Welsh Brigade R.F.A.

No. 14. The Queen's Own Royal Glasgow (Dragoons) Yeomanry under the reorganisation became the 101st (Queen's Own Royal Glasgow Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A. The Regiment was raised in 1848 as the Lanark (the Glasgow) Yeomanry, and received the title 'Queen's Own' the following year and the title 'Royal' in 1916. The badge of the Regiment was that of the Royal Crest of Scotland.

No. 15. The Gloucestershire (Royal Gloucestershire Hussars) Yeomanry were formed in 1830 and displayed as their badge a Portcullis and Coronet, which is the crest of the Dukes of Beaufort. The present Duke is Hon. Colonel. The Regiment adopted Hussar dress in 1847.

The Regiment are now represented by the 21st (Gloucestershire Yeomanry) Armoured Car Company, Royal Tank Corps.

Digitized by Google

GARRISON HORSE SHOWS

(Some suggestions for judging polo ponies and officers' chargers)

By MAJOR R. W. W. GRIMSHAW

THE writer of the following lines has no wish to appear as a lawgiver, and merely submits them in the hope that they may stimulate an interest in the subject, and thus, by inducing others to come forward with their ideas, evolve something approaching a series of standard tests for the guidance of judges, so that awards may be made with greater facility and based on some regulated procedure.

On more than one occasion the writer has seen a pony placed first in a class labelled '*made polo ponies*' which could only be kept on the polo ground with the utmost difficulty. Again, not long ago a horse was awarded first place in a class designated *officers' chargers* which could neither jump nor stand the sound of a blank round fired near him. Readers of the CAVALRY JOURNAL can surely recollect similar incidents.

If an exhibit wins in the show ring, surely it is desirable that such a win should be some kind of guarantee that the animal is what the award makes it out to be, and not some *flat-catching dud* decorated with a rosette.

If it is beyond one's powers to eliminate awards of this nature, then away with classes of this sort. It is suggested, however, that a system can be evolved which will, anyhow, eliminate some of the vagaries so noticeable in the two classes under discussion.

Let the question of designation of class (as used in horse-show prospectuses) be considered.

Digitized by Google

Polo ponies can, roughly, be divided into two main divisions, namely, made or trained ponies, and ponies likely to be polo ponies.

The former speaks for itself. No doubt exists as to what sort of exhibit should gain first place. The latter, however, requires certain subsidiary conditions to enable the judges to decide what they are looking for. This division must therefore be carefully *fenced round* by clearly stating in the prospectus what the committee of the show intend their judges to base their awards on. In some prospectuses this class is designated *novice*—also vague. It should be clearly laid down whether exhibits are to be ridden or merely shown in hand stripped. A clause limiting the age to say seven, and a stipulation that they have never been played in station or members' games should be added.

To ask judges to make an award on a pony which cannot be mounted, much less ridden, may appear an absurd proposition; yet many of us have had, virtually, to make such an award when purchasing newly-imported Australian stock, and the results have not been by any means unfavourable; further, as someone has to make these initial selections, especially in countries like India, it would appear desirable to encourage such selections by providing a class for this type of exhibit, provided sufficient entries are forthcoming and a suitable judge can be obtained (often very difficult)—such a class enables other would-be buyers to see what's what, so to speak.

Thus the class likely to make, or novices, may be divided into exhibits which are to be ridden, but under seven, and never to have been played in station or members' games; and exhibits to be shown in hand stripped, also under seven.

The other item for consideration is chargers. Whether the class is to deal with chargers of officers or other ranks it should be designated *trained chargers*. If an exhibitor wishes to show his mount merely as a saddle horse, there are generally other classes which cater for his wants.

Digitized by Google

Now for judges. There should be two only, and, like a jury, they must remain at their job until they *do agree.* In the case of made polo ponies, one judge should be an active first-class player or, anyhow, a player who can, with the facilities—or lack of them—offered at a show, determine whether the exhibit possesses fleetness, and can grade it for the same with other competitors. This is a most important point. If both judges are competent in this respect so much the better, but one *must* be. The other may be of more advanced years, but should be *au courant* with up-to-date conditions. For ponies *likely to make* experience is of more importance than active horsemanship. The difficulty of obtaining competent judges for a class shown in hand is pronounced, but there *are* a certain number of men whose judgment is, if not infallible, anyhow known to be sound by results. If someone of this nature is not forthcoming, better not have the class; but only one judge should be appointed, as it is difficult to get two to agree. Needless to say judges should have no interest in the exhibits.

Suggested tests.

Before applying any tests it is essential that the following, let them be designated, axioms, be put forward. An exhibit must—

(1) be in proper condition;
(2) go sound at all paces;
(3) be tractable in the ring;
(4) Not exceed 16 years of age, except where otherwise specified.

Tests for trained ponies.

1. All exhibits should be trotted and cantered round the ring or arena on each rein once or twice to see if they conform to 1 and 2 above. Those that do not should be turned out at once. A veterinary expert may be present to advise judges.

2. Exhibits should be halted, and the judges, accompanied

Digitized by Google

by the veterinary expert, must quickly look over them, eliminating any which are obviously unsound.

An exhibit which has suffered from a severely sprained suspensory, or has a ringbone, or defective vision, cannot, in the opinion of the writer, be held superior to one which, although not quite such a finished pony, is, nevertheless, sound.

Nothing is more exasperating and productive of delay than to be left with, say, six exhibits from which to make a final selection, and to find one or more unfitted for a prize owing to an unsoundness. It is better and fairer for all to make a clean sweep at once.

Whilst going over the exhibits like this, it is well to glance at the mouths for age, as here, again, a seventeen-year old cannot hope to compete with one between ten and fourteen. By examining the dentition at once the judges are able to form some idea of the general age of the class, and make rejections accordingly. They can also, at the same time, make themselves acquainted with such injuries to the mouth as are often seen in the case of untractable mounts. All these should be jotted down in a notebook, also any minor infirmities or imperfections.

3. Each rider of an exhibit should now be called upon to show off his mount as he thinks will do it most justice, but he must conclude with a short sprint at full pace and pull up in front of the judges, who should again jot down the results.

An exhibit which displays lack of pace and quality, or cannot be controlled by the rider with one hand to the satisfaction of the judges, or is touched in the wind, cannot hope for an award, and should be rejected. Riders should be made to carry a polo stick. One minute amply suffices for showing off each exhibit. Such things as chairs or poles placed apart for guiding marks in turning should never be employed, as it is quite easy to educate a pony to display a high degree of nimbleness at negotiating such tests. True, such a display will not mislead competent judges, but better

Digitized by Google

not have any *apparatus*. If the rider cannot do justice to his mount, turn it out.

4. Each remaining exhibit should now be ridden by both judges and the results jotted down. This riding of exhibits by the judges is essential, and the pace must be raised to the highest possible in order that the mount's speed, flexibility, and tractability can be accurately estimated.

On conclusion of test 4 it is quite probable that the judges can make their awards at once, but it may be necessary for them to strip the exhibits and compare their conformation, minor infirmities and imperfections. This also gives a few minutes for any obscure unsoundness which has escaped the vigilance of the judges—to make itself apparent, as sometimes an exhibit will go short after a strenuous showing off; therefore, before the final award, have all those left in for test 4 trotted out by their riders mounted. On one occasion the writer, along with his two other co-judges, had the mortification to see their first award go obviously short—the rider hadn't the decency to canter it past the spectators. An old weakness had shown itself after the tests 3 and 4, but not for some fifteen minutes—worse luck.

Experienced judges ought to be able to get through a class of twenty exhibits in the hour.

Ponies likely to make (ridden).

The same tests can be applied, eliminating those details obviously not applicable to the class, such as stopping from topmost speed and quick turns about.

Exceptional experience on the part of the judges is necessary and the final test of riding the exhibit is of even greater importance than in the case of trained ponies; for, in the case of the latter, the judges often are aware of a pony's actual performances on the polo ground, whereas in this class they are not.

Ponies likely to make (shown in hand stripped).

Tests 1 and 2 modified to suit the class should be applied,

Digitized by Google

after which the awards must be based on make, shape, and quality, and what can be seen of the paces at the walk and trot when led.

Trained chargers (exhibits and riders parade in drill order, latter with revolvers and six rounds of blank).

1 and 2. Same as for trained polo ponies.

3. As for polo ponies, but rider will show off the mount with a drawn sword, and in addition be required to rein back, passage to both hands, go over a fence 3½ feet high, open and close a map in the saddle, and fire a few rounds of blank with his revolver.

Two minutes ought to suffice for each exhibit.

4. Judges should try each exhibit in order to get an idea of its paces, tractability, and general balance. A properly-trained charger should stand still when being mounted.

5. Strip exhibits and compare conformation and other points brought to notice in 1 to 4.

The exhibit which appears the best all-round one for peace and service conditions should get the winning rosette.

It sometimes occurs, especially in India, that this class is held to include chargers for ceremonial purposes. The two cannot be judged together, and, if there is a demand for the latter, a special class, designated *ceremonial chargers*, should be included in the prospectus, and the tests might exclude jumping and revolver firing.

Lastly, committees of horse shows must allow sufficient time to enable the judges to make awards. The time allotted to a particular class is determined by the number of exhibits in the class, not by the number of events that have to be crammed into a two- or three-day show—a mere platitude, but one often forgotten.

Digitized by Google

THE MAN WHO DID

By Major Ardern Beaman, D.S.O.

This is a dark and terrible story. When young de Vitre sailed in the 'Assaye' to join the 12th Royal Hussars, he was as cheery a lad as ever came out of Sandhurst—which is saying a good deal. When, therefore, eleven months later, I ran into a haggard-looking spectre in Piccadilly, it was not surprising that I did not at first recognise it as de Vitre; the more so as he, deliberately turning in his tracks, pretended not to see me.

'How now, Denis?' I said, firmly attaching myself to his buttonhole; 'that is not the way to greet an old friend! Who is she?'

He shook his head in gloomy despond. Apparently, then, it was not the ravages of Cupid—the most malignant symptom of that little god's poisoned dart being a devastating loquacity, an uncontrollable impulse to lay bare the throbbing wound. I was, I admit, intrigued to know what this thing could be that had played such havoc with my once blithe and buoyant young sportsman.

He jibbed badly on the steps of the club; but by a dexterous application of the proper aids I got him in. Even so, I was perturbed by the furtive, hunted way he glanced about him; and imagine my horror when, entering the smoking-room, a pregnant hush fell, and the group of leave-men around the fire with one accord stared through Denis in most marked fashion. The temperature dropped fifty degrees. It was the cut direct. And Denis, poor lad, faded rapidly out on to the streets again.

Digitized by Google

'Look here!,' I said hotly; 'what the devil does this mean?'

They looked at me with unfeigned surprise.

'Good lord! haven't you heard?' said Tony Jourdan—which is just the sort of feeble, fatuous, futile, idiotic thing fellows do say on such occasions. And when I told him—impolitely—that, if I had, I shouldn't have asked a bone-headed ass like him, he coolly remarked—

'de Vitre is a pal of yours, isn't he?'

'Yes, he is,' I said—whereat Tony shrugged his shoulders and engrossed himself again in the Cavalry Journal—he always had a taste for sensational literature—leaving me as baffled as Sherlock Holmes in the first five pages.

Little by little, however, in conversation with this man and that home from India, from a chance remark overheard at Aintree, from dark whisperings in the changing room at Hurlingham, I was able to piece together the whole pitiable, tragic story.

The thing befell something in this wise. The 12th were stationed at Muttra—which is a place that some say has its points, though *that*, like most other things, is a matter of opinion. The Rajah of a neighbouring State, which, for the sake of propriety, euphony and charity we shall call Mahdipur, was about to be honoured by a certain Visit: so that the Political Officer responsible for the vagaries of His Highness, scenting letters after his name and tie-pins, and being, moreover, a very human and enterprising officer of considerable vision, determined that this Visit should be a success like to which no Visit had ever been before or would be again. Thus it was that there arrived in the 12th mess a colossal card, embossed and emblazoned with fearful heraldry, requesting the pleasure of the officers' presence as the Rajah's guests during the said Visit. Simultaneously with these hundred-headed elephants rampant came a letter to the Colonel from the Political Officer himself.

'Send us some bright lads,' he wrote, 'who can be relied

Digitized by Google

on to keep things moving. We'll mount them *ad lib.*—and we've collected all the prettiest girls in India for them to dance with.'

It happened, however, to be the time of intensive training; and the Colonel, being an intensive Colonel, with one sheep's eye firmly fixed on the next Brigade vacancy, decided that he could only spare Denis de Vitre, whose military value—he having only just joined—was still considerably below par, and whose somewhat infantile gestures in the Art of War, confined at present to the sphere of serrefile, were in no way calculated to further the Colonel's praiseworthy ambition.

Therefore Denis departed rejoicing, with a tin box of gorgeous raiment, many polo sticks, and his dear and mellow gun-cases. But he went alone, with no elder head to put him in the right way—else would the dark tragedy set forth here never have occurred.

Denis was received on Mahdipur station by a rainbow vision in ultramarine satin tunic and green silk trousers, with a little jewelled satin cap, that recalled to his mind Aladdin of last year's pantomime.

'Mr. de Vitre, noah, yess? Your room will be number 13 in the Guest Palace. His Highness the Rajah desires to know whether you prefer your champagne dry or extra dry?' He led the way to the exit still talking of things that fell sweetly on Denis's ear. 'Leave your buggage to me for honour of transportation, Mr. de Vitre. Here is car that His Highness has placed at your disposal.'

Denis sank back among the cushions of the Rolls with a happy little sigh. A continued course of this treatment, he reflected piously, and he could be a better man.

But it was thoughts of the next day that thrilled Denis to the core. Long before daybreak, busy *bearers* roused their Sahibs for the day's pig-sticking. First up and eagerest of them all was Denis. He was actually going to take part in it at last—this sport he had heard so much about.

Digitized by Google

Motors glided off in the twilight of pre-dawn; and where they halted were vaguely visible the shadowy, squealing forms of elephants, from which the ladies should watch the sport, and—great sight!—a group of the Rajah's picked and most super horse-flesh. First on the spot, Denis drew a beautiful Waler, bought for fabulous sums after the last year's Kadir Cup, its tattered saddlery patched up with frayed string—that being the way of the East.

In the first beat, Denis was told off, together with the spectator-elephant-line, to go with the beaters through a patch of jungle.

As the dawn, the wonderful Indian dawn, turned the gray sea of mist to purple, gold and opal, dotted over with vivid splashes of green, and Denis rode down a ride in the jungle in line with the raucously shouting army of beaters, he felt that Life was indeed good.

'Aie aie aie aieyaaaah!!' they shouted, whacking the scrub; and Denis beheld with interest gorgeously-plumaged birds flashing among the *siras* and Flame of the Forest; and chinkhara, and black-buck, and many sorts of graceful deer whose names he did not yet know, as well as lesser fry such as the weak-hocked jackal and the striped hyæna, stealing out of the undergrowth and silently running up the ride ahead.

'*Whoof, whoof!*' Just in front of him a big, bristle-haired body crashed out of the wood, lumbered across the ride, and hesitated for a moment on the wood's edge.

Denis was not impressed. 'H'm,' he thought, regarding it dispassionately, 'a pretty low sort of brute!'

Indeed, it struck him as much like one of his father's Large Blacks, only not nearly so handsome.

With another guttural grunt the pig broke into the open. Pulling up the Waler, Denis watched it. And then a strange thing happened; for, as he followed the long, low, lolloping, pitching-and-tossing motion of it, a powerful emotion began

Digitized by Google

to stir within him. He gripped his spear. His breath came fast. His eyes started like Bateman's recruit who took to it kindly.

'Go on, Mr. de Vitre!' the damsel he had taken in to both suppers the night before shrilled excitedly from her howdah. 'Go on, or you'll lose it!'

Like many a better man before him, Denis was hypnotised by the spell of that clumsily galumphing blob out in the open. He clapped on his spurs, the big Waler shot out in hot pursuit, and Denis glowed with that all-absorbing ecstacy which, it is said, there is nothing on this earth to equal.

For many rapturous moments Denis had the chase all to himself, galloping at sixteen annas after that cumbersome-looking brute that so tantalisingly turned and twisted and jinked with the agility of a jacksnipe under the very point of his spear. Then, as it laboured, and the supreme moment seemed at hand, Denis heard loud shouting. Out of the corner of his eye he saw four furiously galloping figures emerge from a distant mango clump.

'Here comes Number 2 heat!' he cursed under his breath.

Striving prodigiously, lest the laurel be plucked from under his nose, he managed to draw level and despatch the pig with a lucky thrust between the shoulders—a thrust that would not have disgraced an old hand—just as the Four Horsemen of the Apocalypse arrived. At whom Denis, dismounting, looked up with a broad grin, as who should say with all modesty—

'A pretty piece of work, I mean to say—what?'

It was some little while before Denis fully grasped the trend of the white-hot invective that flowed like blistering lava from their lips. He'd seen angry men in his time, but the wrath of this Four was in the nature of a revelation.

Slowly the full horror of the situation penetrated his tortured brain. The triumphant grin faded. The world that a moment before had seemed so bright, turned black as

Digitized by Google

thunder cloud. Denis knew now that, wherever Englishmen foregather, he was an outcast—a pariah.

'Clear off home!' shouted the most fervent-tongued of the Four. 'And, for God's sake, don't let the Rajah know you've killed one of his *sows!*'

To those who know India there is little more to tell. Denis, of course, sent in his papers. It was all a gentleman could do.

Last week I met him again outside the British Museum. The cheekbones stood out gauntly in his skeleton of a face.

'I'm going abroad,' he said hollowly.

'Oh, orange-growing or pig-farming?' I asked.

Poor Denis winced. I could have bitten out my tongue for that unconsciously cruel stab—but then everybody *is* either orange-growing or pig-farming these days, and it just slipped out.

'No'; he shook his head. 'I'm going to Lapland.'

My face must have expressed my astonishment, for he went on in a toneless voice, jerking his head towards the Museum.

'I've been in there—looking up *sus rusticus*.'

'The rural pig?'

'Yes. And Lapland is the only place on the earth where it doesn't grow. Good-bye.'

Digitized by Google

DISBANDED CAVALRY REGIMENTS

The 28th to 33rd Light Dragoons

By Major H. G. Parkyn, O.B.E.

28th Light Dragoons.

Raised April 1, 1795, as the 28th (or the Duke of York's Own) Regiment of Light Dragoons, commanded by Colonel Sir R. Laurie, Bart., who was succeeded in 1799 by Colonel Miles Stavely.

The Regiment was formed of drafts from other regiments.

In 1795 the facings of the Regiment had been ordered to be yellow.

In an Order dated January 13, 1796, the Regiment was ordered to have a grey jacket, made of cloth, with yellow collar and cuffs. This was altered to blue, but the original Order was re-affirmed soon after.

In 1800 the Regiment had yellow turbans on their Light Dragoon helmets.

The Regiment formed part of the forces employed in Cape Colony, 1796, and took part in the march to Saldanha Bay, and was disbanded in 1802.

29th Light Dragoons.

Raised April 1, 1795, as the 29th Regiment (Light) Dragoons, and formed by drafts from other regiments, both Cavalry and Infantry. Their first Colonel was Francis Lord Heathfield.

There is no information regarding their early uniform, except that according to an official letter dated April 23, 1795, in the Public Record Office, their facings were ordered to be buff.

Digitized by Google

HEAVY AND LIGHT CAVALRY CLOAKED, 1815.

Cloaks were coloured respectively with white lining and blue collar, and blue with collar of the colour of the facings.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

In 1797 Colonel Richard Vyse succeeded to the Command, and in 1803 Colonel R. R. Welford.

The Regiment was on service in the West Indies, 1797–7, and returned home for a short time before it proceeded to India.

In 1804 the Regiment was re-numbered and became the 25th.

According to sketches by Hamilton Smith in the South Kensington Museum, the uniform of the Regiment in 1800 was of the usual Light Dragoon type. The helmet had a red and white plume and a yellow turban. The jacket was blue with yellow cuffs and collar; the breeches and belt were white.

The Regiment saw considerable service in India, including the actions of Ally-Ghur, Laswarree and Delhi, and took part in Lake's famous night march which preceded the battle of Laswarree.

In his despatches after the Battle of Laswarree, in speaking of the Cavalry charge, he says :—

> 'This service fell to the share of His Majesty's 29th Regiment, commanded by Captain Wade (Major Griffith having at that instant been, unfortunately, killed by a cannon shot), and was performed with the greatest gallantry and in a manner which entitles Captain Wade and every officer and soldier in the Regiment to my warmest acknowledgment.'

The casualties of the Regiment were reported as :— *Killed :* One Major, 1 Cornet, 2 Quartermasters, 3 Serjeants, 12 rank and file; 78 horses. *Wounded :* One Captain, 2 Lieutenants, 1 Quartermaster, 6 Serjeants, 33 rank and file; 24 horses. *Missing :* 10 horses.

In Fortescue's History of the British Army this charge is described as follows :—

> 'The trumpet of the 29th Dragoons sounded the charge and was answered forthwith by the roar of every

Digitized by Google

Mahratta gun: but the troops galloped through a tempest of grape shot and a general volley of musketry, rode straight into the line of guns, scattering the gunners; they crashed into the first line of Infantry and broke it up; then pressed on against the second line of Infantry and swept away its right and finally wheeling to the left fell again upon the Mahratta Horse and routed them completely.'

The Regiment continued to serve in India, and formed part of the Expedition to Mauritius in 1810.

In 1812, according to Hamilton Smith's book of uniforms, the uniform was said to be light grey facings and lapelles, white metal buttons, white lace for the men, and silver lace and buttons for officers. Breeches white, jacket blue, girdle grey with two blue stripes.

As a reward for their services in India, the Regiment were given the Badge of the Elephant and the Battle Honour Laswarree.

The inspection reports of 1818 state that 'overalls of a blue grey mixture were to be provided for the period ending December, 1819, instead of the usual regulation pattern.'

In 1816 the Regiment returned home and was disbanded at Chatham in 1819, the Colonel at that time being C. W. Lord Stewart, who had succeeded Colonel Welford in 1813.

31st Light Dragoons

Raised in 1795 by Colonel W. St. Leger, and were on the Irish Establishment until August 27, 1795, when they were transferred to the British. On January 1, 1796, the Regiment was at Coventry, and in February it was broken up.

32nd Regiment of Light Dragoons.

Raised in 1795 and commanded by Colonel H. J. Blake. They were, like the preceding Regiment, on the Irish Establishment until August 27, 1795. On January 1, 1796, the

Digitized by Google

Regiment was at Canterbury, but apparently moved the next month to Chester. The Regiment does not appear to have been of a very high standard, as the Inspecting Officer remarks of their clothing :—

> 'No clothing but a slop white flannel jacket and cap perfectly unfit for a peace establishment.'

While of the men, he is no less scathing :—

> 'The great demand for men alone renders them passable, the rejected and discharged must deservedly fall on any officers who could think of enlisting such children and miserable beings.
>
> 'The trumpeter was an infant of nine years old.'

They were broken up in February, 1796.

33rd or Ulster Regiment of Light Dragoons.

Raised in 1795 and commanded by Colonel J. S. Blackwood. They were on the Irish Establishment until August 27, 1795. Their stations were as follows :—Dumfries : June, 1795. Newcastle-on-Tyne : September, 1795. York : 1795. Sheffield : 1796.

They were broken up in February, 1796.

Digitized by Google

PROBLEM No. XVI

The Reduction of Weight on the Horse

In conjunction with the article which appeared in our April issue entitled 'The Mobile Division of the Future,' the above problem was set in hopes of bringing out some fresh ideas on the all-important question of reducing the weight on the horse.

A great number of answers have been sent in, which is very satisfactory, as it not only shows the interest taken by readers, but also has been the means of securing some valuable ideas.

In every attempt to solve the problem, sound reductions have been made. Space, however, does not permit of our giving more than a *précis* of the various alterations suggested. These are taken from selected solutions sent by the following officers:—Major C. Van der Byl (late 16th Lancers); Colonel C. H. Rowcroft, D.S.O. (late commanding Hodgson's Horse); Major Timmis, D.S.O., Royal Canadian Dragoons; Major C. J. Aris, Equitation School, Weedon.

In addition to the above, we publish in full the best all-round solution sent in, which is the work of Major E. F. Lawson, Royal Bucks Hussars, who commanded the Middlesex Yeomanry during the last year of the war.

Précis of Reductions Suggested

Abolish wallets, great coat (replacing by jerkin), picketing gear, breastplate, surcingle pad, change of clothing (except socks), spurs, bayonet and scabbard (sword to be on the man for dismounted work), steel helmet, sword (for Lancer regiments).

Digitized by Google

Reduce ammunition to 100 rounds per man.

Revert to short rifle (accuracy up to 800 yards being sufficient).

Many of the articles now carried could be made of aluminium alloy, *e.g.*, sword scabbard, water bottle, mess tin, field glasses and currycomb.

Reduce the lance to 3½ lb., similar to a hogspear.

Introduction of a lighter pattern of saddle similar to that carried in the South African War.

Major Lawson's Solution

Reduction of Weight on the Horse

The problem in connection with 'the mobile division of the future' as to how the weight on the horse can be reduced, is one of absorbing interest to the Cavalry soldier.

The weight which must inevitably be put on to the back of the horse is so enormous that it is absolutely essential that it should be reduced by every possible means and to as great an extent as is practicable. It is for this reason that the distinction as to whether the division hope to live upon the enemy's country or not is not really of the first importance.

Without a single pound of forage or rations, the weight is undesirably high; and, if there is no expectation of living on the country, so much more dead weight must be heaped upon the horse, with a consequent loss of mobility.

It is, perhaps, fair to suggest that no Cavalry commander should place much reliance on what rations or forage he may be able to obtain in an enemy country.

The enemy will almost certainly have destroyed all bulk supplies, and the ordinary provisions of the countryside fall lamentably short of the requirements of large bodies of men or horses. Apart from that, grain is probably the only useful form of forage, as the ordinary conditions of either marching or of marching and fighting with large bodies of troops will probably render grazing of little practical value.

Digitized by Google

A commander may also have to consider the propaganda value of non-interference with the ordinary supplies of the countryside.

Without wishing to go into these large questions of supply, it is fair to assume that, however great be the expectation of living on the enemy's country, the Cavalry of the mobile division could not carry less provisions for man and horse than :—

(1) *For the Man.*—The iron ration, and the unconsumed portion of the day's ration.

(2) *For the Horse.*—8 lb. of grain (the unconsumed portion of the day's forage and the early morning feed for the morrow).

If little or no food is obtainable, they cannot carry more than an additional day's rations for the man and an additional 8 lb. of grain for the horse. This latter quantity was the amount carried by Desert Mounted Corps in the autumn operations of 1917 and 1918. This addition of some 10 lb. between the first 'marching order' and the second does not cause any variation of the main problem. If it has to be carried, it can only be regarded as so much more to the bad.

In the consideration of the main question of the reduction of the weight of the 'marching order,' as distinct from the quantity of rations and forage to be carried, it is not possible to deal with it light-heartedly and ruthlessly and indulge in a wholesale policy of scrapping. There are two things which have to be remembered. First of all, this 'marching order' has not really been conceived in the spirit of the generous parent decorating the Christmas tree. It has been evolved by Cavalry soldiers of deep knowledge and great experience, with a full realisation of the importance of keeping down weight to a minimum. Secondly, that though we must always keep before us the pre-eminent desirability of taking as much weight as possible off the horses' backs, it is possible to make a fetish of lightness—or, perhaps, it would be truer to say

Digitized by Google

a bogey of weight. Every step that we take to lighten the horse's burden must be consistent with efficiency and conducive to maintaining the fighting power of the man, or of the man and horse regarded as a fighting unit. It was effectively proved in the Great War that large formations of Cavalry could cover very great distances under the most trying climatic conditions, and maintain their fighting efficiency without undue wastage of horse power. What wastage there was could have been materially reduced had the training of reinforcements been better. In British units, certainly, junior officers were sent out who had little knowledge of horse management, and men were sent to Cavalry units who had hardly seen a horse in their lives, whilst trained cavalrymen and men accustomed to horses in civilian life were sent to Infantry units.

There is no object in the reopening of dead controversies, but the mention of them serves to emphasise the point that more important than the reduction of weight are good horse-management and effective horse-mastership amongst all ranks of the mounted forces.

It is, however, indisputable that, even if large weight can be carried, the mobility of the force and its consequent fighting efficiency, depends upon these weights being kept down to a minimum. It is, perhaps, desirable to analyse the burdens carried by cavalryman and horse, in excess of rations and forage, and the stripped saddle and bridle. It may be divided into—

(1) the machinery of offence and defence;
(2) the equipment for comfort of the horse;
(3) equipment for the comfort of the man.

Everything that comes into one of these three headings should be divided into what is essential and what is desirable. Anything which is neither essential nor desirable can be scrapped without further consideration. It may be as well to say that all questions of what can or cannot be omitted from the

Digitized by Google

marching order must be to a great extent a question of opinion. In the following suggestions, the writer is only stating his opinions. If those opinions are put forward somewhat didactically, it is only because it is no good stating an opinion if you do not believe it.

The suggestions are the result of personal experience, and are put forward in all humility, with the desire to contribute something to the solution of an engrossing problem.

Only one item in the list published in the CAVALRY JOURNAL of April, 1924, falls in the category of those things which are neither essential nor desirable—the picketing gear.

The picketing peg can well be eliminated, and one or two sandbags per man carried. A picketing line can be put down and taken up with sandbags buried at intervals in any country where pegs can be driven in, and in very little more time than it takes to put down or take up a line with pegs. In sandy or soft soil, bags hold very much better, considerable numbers can be carried, and the difficulty of broken or lost pegs is avoided.

Certain other items are not carried by every horse. One pair of field glasses per section is sufficient, and one pair of wire-cutters. Glasses should be carried by the No. 2 and, wire-cutters by the No. 1 or 4—not on the horse, as laid down, but on the man.

All other items of the three groups can be described as either essential or desirable, and can only be omitted as the result of special considerations, either climatic or tactical.

It is obvious that in a hot country it is not necessary to carry great coat, sleeping blanket and ground sheet. There are various schools of thought as to what from the point of view of the comfort of the man can be most conveniently eliminated. As the question must largely depend upon the nature of the climate, changes of temperature between mid-day and midnight, and similar considerations, it is impossible to lay down hard and fast rules. The man can make himself quite com-

Digitized by Google

fortable with great coat, ground sheet and saddle blanket; and, if there are sharp changes of temperature, great coats are very valuable for outpost work.

If it be decided to take ground sheets, one sleeping blanket and cardigans, the sleeping blanket should be carried behind the saddle. This will have the double advantage that it will save excessive sweating, and that, if saddles are fitted for saddle blanket only, the sleeping blanket can be brought under the saddle as soon as horses begin to lose flesh.

Considerable reductions can be made if tactical considerations permit.

The question of the steel helmet is one largely, but not entirely, dependent on tactical considerations. In the 1918 advance of the Desert Mounted Corps, the G.O.C. 4th Cavalry Division raised the question, but would give no decision, and left it to the discretion of regimental commanders of British regiments. All three commanders decided to leave them behind, and there are probably some 1,200 in an orange grove near Ramleh to this day. There is no doubt that the steel helmet prevents a certain number of casualties; but it is, perhaps, particularly designed to guard against casualties from shrapnel in trench warfare. It is heavy to carry and fatiguing to wear, particularly in hot climates. Unless the enemy are particularly well-provided with artillery, it would perhaps be advisable to discard the steel helmet.

Then there is the bayonet. Against an enemy provided with the bayonet and trained in its use, the bayonet is indispensable for Cavalry. Against irregular forces, who have not the bayonet and where there is greater probability that shock action will be with the sword, it might be possible to dispense with the bayonet, but it is doubtful if the resultant saving of 1½ lb. would be justified.

The gas mask can, of course, be dropped if the enemy are not likely to use gas.

The ammunition supply must depend upon the prospective

Digitized by Google

expenditure and the methods of replenishment, but to get rid of the bandolier carried on the horse's neck would be of inestimable advantage to the horse. The neck bandolier weighs some 8 lb., but it is to the horse a source of annoyance far greater than is commensurate with its weight.

A Cavalry regiment without any assistance from the machine-gun squadron has now an enormously increased fire-power, as a result of its equipment with the Hotchkiss gun. For the rifleman, in most circumstances, 100 rounds per man, with the additional 100 rounds per section from No. 3, should be sufficient for most operations of war in which there is some possibility of replenishing the ammunition from horse or mechanical transport.

It is always possible to urge something against every reduction of equipment, and there is no royal road to steeple-chase weights. The only course is for the commander to make what small reductions tactical and climatic considerations permit. The aim should be that all reductions possible should be made off the horse with the object of minimising the weight when the horse is saddled up and the man dismounted.

It is highly desirable, if possible, to take the 100 rounds carried in the neck bandolier off the horse, and also the man's sleeping blanket, particularly if great coats have to be carried.

It should generally be practicable to maintain a first-line of transport consisting of one limbered waggon per squadron, carrying the camp kettles, one blanket per man and 10,000 or more rounds of ammunition. This first line would be valueless if it is separated far from regiment or squadron, and should be sufficiently mobile to accompany units over any kind of country which they could cover. This is the only way of taking any considerable weight off the back of the horse. But this practice of transferring from horse to transport must be kept down to a minimum, or it must interfere with the mobility and fighting efficiency of the troops.

It must always be remembered that the comfort of man

Digitized by Google

and horse are the first considerations, and that nothing can compensate for faulty horse-mastership. It is remarkable what weights horses can carry if they are treated properly. The loss of fighting power in the man if he is not reasonably comfortable is equally remarkable. And, as a not particularly inspiriting conclusion, you cannot eat your cake and have it.

Provided horses start upon an operation of war in good condition, they are capable of a sustained effort over a very considerable period, and the evil results of their hard work may not show until they begin to experience the reaction.

Everybody has different theories as to how condition may best be maintained, and possibly all theories are equally well-grounded.

It is, of course, possible to experiment with the armament. A lighter rifle may be equally efficient, and it may be possible to substitute for the sword something lighter and more effective.

That must be a matter for experiment. Whatever is done, something must be provided to do the work of rifle, bayonet and sword, for all have been proved by experience to play an essential part in the armament of the Cavalry soldier.

We want to get off the horse's back, not pounds but stones; and though we must not underestimate the importance of every little saving, it is perhaps impossible to save more than from 7 to 14 lb. of the gross weight. And what is that after all? The CAVALRY JOURNAL gives 10 stone as the weight of the average man. There are many men of 12 stone who, from the point of view of the horse, ride considerably lighter in full marching order than the average man of 10 stone. Weight can only be reduced to a limited extent, and in the mobile division of the future the efficiency of the Cavalry must primarily depend upon riding and horse-mastership.

Digitized by Google

NOTES

We have received the following account of the

Action of 'B' Squadron, Royal Canadian Dragoons, at Bois de Moreuille, March 30, 1918

The R.C.D. had orders to move before dark, and got ready. This was cancelled, and we got some hot breakfast of bacon and tea. Moved about 7 o'clock through Castel across the river. 'A' Squadron acted as an advanced guard. We soon got information that the Bois de Moreuille was strongly held, especially on northern edge. 'A' Squadron worked round west end. We had orders to clear the north side and work round the east end and endeavour to take the wood. 'C' Squadron was to follow us (this they never did). We advanced in line of troop columns about 500 yards from the wood. The Squadron Commander and Captain Nordheimer (the only two officers left) and a couple of ground scouts rode ahead; there were only eighty, all ranks, left in the squadron, after ten days' severe fighting. We ran into heavy machine-gun fire from twenty or more guns; some of these were light guns, evidently perched up in the forks of trees. The squadron changed direction to the right and charged in about three lines, fairly close together. The enemy fire became erratic, only two men being hit as we entered the wood. The edge of the wood was thin and easily penetrated. Several horses were shot after we got into the wood, and a lot of hand-to-hand fighting took place, both by our mounted and dismounted men. Many of the enemy were killed and some captured, whilst a great number escaped before we could get

Digitized by Google

far enough into the wood. Further in, the wood was too thick to allow mounted work to be successful; but the men who had been dismounted pushed right on through until they were relieved later on. Captain Nordheimer had his horse shot, and was himself killed after having advanced a few yards on foot. Those left mounted were then collected, and a message was sent back to the Brigade asking for the promised squadron to be hurried up. We then pushed along the outside of the wood on the north and reached the N.E. corner, when a squadron of Lord Strathcona's Horse overtook us and worked round the east end. They had met with no opposition when they passed us. We were then ordered to use the small party left (about twenty, all ranks) to collect our wounded and to remain in reserve to await further orders, which we did until relieved by the 8th Imperial Division at sundown.

Battle Honours

Cavalry and Yeomanry Awards

A further list of Battle Honours awarded for the Great War has been issued.

Those which have been selected to be borne on Colours or Appointments are printed in capitals :—

Royal Horse Guards (The Blues).

2 Regiments and Household Battalion.

'Mons,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'Marne, 1914,' 'Aisne, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15, '17,' 'LANGEMARCK, 1914,' 'GHELUVELT,' 'Nonne Bosschen,' 'St. Julien,' 'FREZENBERG,' 'LOOS,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'Broodseinde,' 'Poelcappelle,' 'Passchendaele,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'Cambrai, 1918,' 'SAMBRE,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

3rd Dragoon Guards (Prince of Wales's).

'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'LOOS,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'SCARPE, 1917,' 'Somme, 1918,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'AVRE,' 'AMIENS,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

4th Royal Irish Dragoon Guards.

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE,

Digitized by Google

1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Frezenberg,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'Flers-Courcelette,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Rosières,' 'Amiens,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

3rd The King's Own Hussars.

'Mons,' 'Le Cateau,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Gheluvelt,' 'St. Julien,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Lys,' 'Hazebrouck,' 'AMIENS,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'Canal du Nord,' 'Selle,' 'Sambre,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

18th Royal Hussars (Queen Mary's Own).

'MONS,' 'Le Cateau,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'La Bassée, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Gravenstafel,' 'Frezenberg,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'Arras, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Rosières,' 'AMIENS,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Pursuit to Mons,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

21st Lancers (Empress of India's).

'N.W. FRONTIER INDIA, 1915, '16.'

The Ayrshire Yeomanry (Earl of Carrick's Own) (Hussars).

'YPRES, 1918,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'RUMANI,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Royal 1st Devon Yeomanry (Hussars .

'SOMME, 1918,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'ÉPÉHY,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'Tell 'Asur,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Royal North Devon Yeomanry (Hussars).

'SOMME, 1918,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'ÉPÉHY,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'Tell 'Asur,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

1st County of London Yeomanry (Middlesex Duke of Cambridge's Hussars).

'MACEDONIA, 1916–17,' 'SUVLA,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'Egypt, 1915–16,' 'GAZA,' 'El Mughar,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'MEGIDDO,' 'SHARON,' 'DAMASCUS,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

The Northumberland Hussars (Yeomanry).

'YPRES, 1914,' 'LANGEMARCK, 1914,' 'GHELUVELT,' 'NEUVE

Digitized by Google

CHAPELLE,' 'LOOS,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'ALBERT, 1918,' 'Selle,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

The Staffordshire Yeomanry (*Queen's Own Royal Regiment*) (*Hussars*).

'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'EL MUGHAR,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'MEGIDDO,' 'SHARON,' 'DAMASCUS,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

War Photographs

It may interest those of our readers who are not already aware of the fact, that the Imperial War Museum, which has now transferred its quarters from the Crystal Palace to South Kensington, contains a very complete pictorial record of the War, comprising upwards of 100,000 official and unofficial photographs depicting scenes and incidents of interest to the three Services in all theatres of operations during the period 1914–1919.

In addition, the Museum possesses very extensive records in the form of Maps, Charts, Aerial 'Oblique' and 'Vertical' views, and other matters of topographical interest.

There is also an extremely valuable collection of photographs of Naval interest dating back to 1860, in which war craft of all types and nationalities, from battleships to coastal motor-boats, are shown, as well as views of mercantile vessels, portraits of Naval notabilities, etc.

Copies of the above-mentioned photographs may be secured on application to the Museum.

History of the Guards Division

We are informed that the 'History of the Guards Division in the Great War,' by Lieut.-Colonel C. M. Headlam, one of the Editors of the *Army Quarterly*, has now been written, and is to be published by Mr. John Murray towards the end of the summer.

The History, in addition to giving a full account of the work of the Guards Division from August, 1915, to its return

Digitized by Google

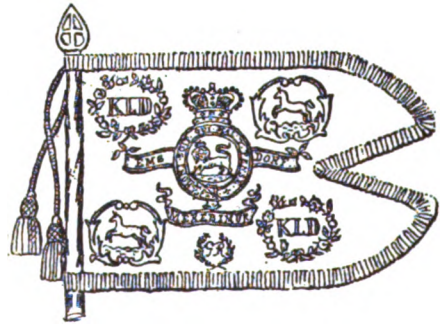
to England in March, 1919, gives a summary of the doings of the Regiments of the Brigade of Guards during the first year of the war, and also of the 4th (Guards) Brigade while forming part of the 31st Division in the spring of 1918.

The History will be in two volumes, and its price to subscribers who apply for it before publication will be 30*s*. Its published price will be 36*s*. Any profits which there may be will be handed over to the Guards' Memorial Fund.

Those who wish to become subscribers should apply for subscription forms to Major H. C. Loyd, D.S.O., M.C., Headquarters, Brigade of Guards, Horse Guards, Whitehall, S.W.1.

Regimental Notes

It is proposed that in future numbers of the Cavalry Journal a space will be reserved for Regimental items of interest. A large percentage of our readers are officers who have left the Service, and it is felt that they would be interested to know what is going on in their old regiments.



Digitized by Google

RECENT PUBLICATIONS

'With the 9th Light Horse in the Great War.' By Major T. H. Darley, O.B.E. Adelaide: The Hassell Press, 1924. 6*s*.

An accurate and modest illustrated regimental history. Lieut.-General Sir Harry Chauvel, Commander of the Desert Mounted Corps, writes an introduction. The regiment has the distinction of possessing the only captured Turkish regimental colour. The periods of preparation for battle receive notice. At the driest lecture on record, the Colonel himself dropped off into a sound sleep, from which he was rudely awakened by hearing an officer ask the lecturer to sound the Réveille.

Examples show that H.E. shells are of little effect in sand. The two frontispieces are portraits of two commanding officers who fell at the head of the regiment.

There are many moving records of individual bravery. Not the least is that of the wounded and captured Sergeant Sullivan, who refused under interrogation to disclose information to a German who caused a machine gun to be pointed at him.

Great admiration is expressed for Lord Allenby, whose Cavalry personality appealed to Australian horsemen, and his eulogy of the Divisions is printed in the appendix, together with other interesting matter, including captured documents and an account of the exploits of the regimental football team which won the championship in Cairo and was detailed for special service in the rebellion.

At page 165 some facts are disclosed as to the unreliability and corruption of Oriental irregulars. *Ab uno disce omnes.*

Digitized by Google

SPORTING NOTES

LIEUT.-COL. T. B. PHILLIPS, O.B.E. (late 13th Hussars), having resigned the post of Sporting Editor after our last issue, the Committee take this opportunity of thanking him for the manner in which he has worked for the success of the JOURNAL.

It is only those behind the scenes who are able to realise the amount of work entailed, and Colonel Phillips, who took up the duties nearly five years ago when the JOURNAL was restarted after the war, has left no stone unturned in his search for sporting information. His successor is Colonel R. J. P. Anderson, C.M.G., D.S.O. (late 11th Hussars).

RACING

The Classics

The first of the classic races was run on May 7, and resulted in a victory for Diophon, a chestnut colt by Grand Parade out of Donnetta, owned by the Aga Khan.

The colt was not such a good favourite as Tom Pinch, but the result again bore out the saying that the two-year-old form is the best guide to the Two Thousand Guineas.

Last year the winner ran five times, and only met with defeat once, when he failed to concede 14 lb. to Woodend at Newmarket.

The second—Bright Knight—only ran twice last year, but won both times, and may be regarded as a high-class colt. It is probable that Taylor has not yet got him quite to his liking.

Knight of the Garter ran fast in the earlier stages, but apparently failed to stay.

The judge's decision gave rise to considerable discussion, many people maintaining that Bright Knight had won.

The difficulty of judging at Newmarket, where the horses often finish so close under the box as to blurr the vision, is well known.

It has several times been suggested that this could be remedied by moving the judge's box back from the rails. This has been tried both in India and Egypt, and has been completely successful. It is hard to see what objection there can be to adopting this course. At Epsom and other places, where the horses generally finish on the far side of the course, it is seldom that the judge's decision is questioned.

It is interesting to note that since this was written the experiment has been carried out at York—a meeting well known for its up-to-date methods. The result was entirely successful.

Digitized by Google

THE TWO THOUSAND GUINEAS STAKES of 100 sovs. each, with 2,000 guineas added; owner of second to receive 600 sovs., and owner of third 300 sovs. out of the stakes. R.M.

DIOPHON, ch c, by Grand Parade—Donnetta (the Aga Khan), 9s....G. Hulme 1
BRIGHT KNIGHT, b c, by Gay Crusader—Sunny Jane (Lord Astor), 9st.
F. Bullock 2
GREEN FIRE, ch c, by Sunstar—Green Cloth (Mr. J. B. Joel), 9 st.
S. Donoghue 3

Also ran—His Majesty's Knight of the Garter, M. E. Ambatielos's Statheros, Sir A. Bailey's Bucks Yeoman, Mr. A. R. Cox's Caravel, Sir E. Hulton's Spalpeen, Mr. S. B. Joel's Polyphontes, Mrs. C. Mayor's Bob Flin, Sir H. Meux's Donzelon, Lord Rosebery's Parmenio, Mr. A. de Rothschild's Arcade, Mrs. S. Whitburn's Arausio, Lord Woolavington's Tom Pinch, Mr. J. P. Hornung's Shambles, Major G. Loder's Zodiac, Lady Cunliffe-Owen's Corolet, Mr. J. B. Joel's Defiance, Lord Glanely's Cape Horn.

(Winner trained by R. Dawson, at Whatcombe.)

Betting—4 to 1 agst Tom Pinch, 11 to 2 DIOPHON, 6 to 1 Parmenio, 8 to 1 Caravel, 100 to 9 Bright Knight, 100 to 8 Green Fire, 100 to 7 Spalpeen, 20 to 1 each Donzelon and Polyphontes, 25 to 1 each Arcade and Arausio. 33 to 1 each Knight of the Garter and Statheros, 50 to 1 each agst the others.

Place betting in proportion.

Won by a head; a neck separated second and third. Tom Pinch was fourth, and Shambles last.

The Thousand Guineas

Lord Roseberry's Plack, a chestnut filly by Hurry On out of Groat, won the One Thousand from Mumtaz Mahal, Straitlace and thirteen others. The race was of special interest as providing a test of the stamina of the Aga Khan's flying filly. As a two-year-old she had won five times in succession, including such races as the Spring Stakes at Newmarket, the Queen Mary Stakes at Ascot, the National Breeders' Produce Stakes at Sandown, and the Champagne Stakes at Doncaster. In the Imperial Produce Plate at Kempton, however, she failed, in very heavy going, to concede 7 lb. to Arcade.

In the race in question, after showing her usual brilliant speed, and leading at the Bushes by a distance estimated at from three to six lengths, she began to fade away on meeting the rising ground, and was fairly and squarely beaten by the bearer of the primrose and rose hoops.

The winner ran five times last year and won thrice, her last performance being in the Middle Park Plate, when Diophon (the winner of the Two Thousand Guineas) gave her 7 lb. and beat her comfortably. The form, however, was distinctly good, as the field included Knight of the Garter, Bucks Yeoman, Hurstwood and Woodend.

It should be noted that Straitlace had all the worst of the draw, and had to race by herself on the high ground. She is a very charming filly by Son-in-Law out of Stolen Kiss, and should win good races for her owner, Sir E. Hulton.

THE ONE THOUSAND GUINEAS STAKES of 100 sovs. each, with 1,000 guineas added; for three-year-old fillies; owner of second to receive 600 sovs., and owner of third 300 sovs. out of stakes. R.M.

PLACK, ch f by Hurry On—Groat (Lord Rosebery), 9st.....C. Elliott 1
MUMTAZ MAHAL, gr f, by The Tetrarch—Lady Josephine (the Aga Khan), 9st.
G. Hulme 2

Digitized by Google

STRAITLACE, br f, by Son-in-Law—Stolen Kiss (Sir E. Hulton), 9st
F. O'Neill 3

Also ran—Lord Derby's Halcyon, Lady J. Douglas's Maid of Bath, Mr. Z. G. Michalinos's Zoza, Lady Nunburnholme's Golden Emblem, Lord Rosebery's Kilmeny, Mr. S. Tattersall's Eton Wick, Mr. C. Wadia's Treize, Duke of Westminster's Chronometer, Mrs. S. Whitburn's Mink, Lord Woolavington's Tuscar Rock, Lord Woolavington's Cleone, His Majesty's Carmel, Sir E. Hulton's Gagool.

(Winner trained by J. Jarvis, at Newmarket.)

Betting—6 to 5 agst Mumtaz Mahal, 7 to 2 Straitlace, 8 to 1 PLACK, 10 to 1 Maid of Bath, 100 to 8 Chronometer, 20 to 1 each agst the others.

Place Betting—6 to 4 on Straitlace, 7 to 4 agst PLACK, others in proportion.

Won by a length and a half; half a length separated second and third. Mink was fourth, and Halcyon last.

The Derby

The race was run in heavy rain, and resulted in a victory for Lord Derby's Sansovino.

The result was interesting as illustrating the ups and downs of fortune connected with racing.

The winner belongs to the head of a family that has been owning high-class thoroughbreds for many generations, but this is the first occasion for 137 years that the race has been won by the holder of the title.

Lord Astor, the owner of the second, has been second on five occasions in the last seven years, Blink, Buchan, Craig an Eran, Tamar, and now again St. Germans, having all filled this tantalising position.

On the other hand, Mr. Somerville Tattersall, the owner of Hurstwood, only commenced his career as an owner two years ago, when he leased a few mares from the executors of the late Lord Manton, and at once met with astonishing success.

The winner is a bay colt by Swynford out of Gondolette. As a two-year-old he needed time, and only ran twice, winning the Ham Stakes at Goodwood and the 'Gimcrack' at York.

His last outing previous to the Derby was at Newmarket in the race won by Hurstwood, on which occasion many good judges considered he would have won had he not been a good deal interfered with.

The start was a fair one, the first away being Dawson City, Arausio, Defiance and Polyphontes. St. Germans got badly away, and Sansovino also began slowly. Climbing the hill, however, the colt made up a lot of ground, and before the descent commenced the black-and-white cap was seen to be second, the order being Dawson City, Sansovino, Polyphontes and St. Germans. Hurstwood and Parmenio were also prominent.

Approaching Tattenham Corner, Sansovino worked his way to the front and, gradually drawing away, won easily by six lengths.

The win was an extremely popular one, and Lord Derby had great difficulty in making his way through the cheering crowd in order to lead the winner back to scale.

THE DERBY STAKES of 50 sovs. each, with 3,000 sovs. added; breeder of winner 500 sovs.; owner of second 400 sovs.; owner of third 200 sovs. About 1½ miles.

SANSOVINO, b c, by Swynford—Gondolette (Lord Derby), 9 st.....T. Weston 1

Digitized by Google

ST. GERMANS, b c, by Swynford—Hamoaze (Lord Astor), 9st.....F. Bullock 2
HURSTWOOD, b c, by Gay Crusader—Bleasdale (Mr. S. Tattersall), 9 st V. Smyth 3

Also ran—Lord Astor's Bright Knight, Sir A. Bailey's Bucks Yeoman, Sir G. Bullough's Great Barrier, Mr. J. L. Replogie's Optimist II., Mr. B. Irish's Dawson City, Lord Glanely's Grand Joy, Sir E. Hulton's Spalpeen, Sir R. W. Jardine's Obliterate, Mr. J. B. Joel's Defiance, Mr. S. B. Joel's Polyphontes, the Aga Khan's Salmon Trout, the Aga Khan's Diophon, Sir H. Meux's Donzelon, Mr. M. L. Meyer's Canusa, Mr. A. C. Saunders's Skyflight, Lord Rosebery's Parmenio, Mr. A. de Rothschild's Tippler, Mr. A. B. Walker's Woodend, Mrs. S. Whitburn's Arausio, Lady Cunliffe-Owen's Corolet, Mrs. A. Blain's Browside, Lord Woolavington's Tom Pinch, Mr. A. K. Macomber's Thundercloud II., His Majesty's Resinato.

(Winner trained by Lambton, at Newmarket.)

Betting—9 to 2 agst SANSOVINO, 8 to 1 Diophon, 10 to 1 Tom Pinch, 100 to 7 each Bright Knight and St. Germans, 18 to 1 Defiance, 20 to 1 each Salmon Trout, Dawson City, Parmenio, Woodend and Hurstwood, 33 to 1 Tippler, 50 to 1 each Spalpeen, Optimist II., Grand Joy, Obliterate and Donzelon, 66 to 1 each Thundercloud and Polyphontes, 100 to 1 each agst the others.

Place betting in proportion.

Won by six lengths; a neck separated second and third. Parmenio was fourth, and Arausio last.

The Oaks

The weather on the Friday was fortunately fine, though the going was still very holding. On the previous day the course had been so much cut up by motor vehicles leaving the hill that racing on the straight course was found to be impossible, and the races set to be decided on that track had to be either abandoned or postponed.

The race for the Oaks needs little description. Plack and Straitlace were always first and second favourites, and in the race always filled the leading positions, the latter winning comfortably by a length and a half.

The result confirmed the judgment of those who considered that the latest winner was extremely unlucky in the race for the 1,000 Guineas.

The 142nd RENEWAL of the OAKS STAKES of 50 sovs. each, with 2,000 sovs. added, for three-year-old fillies; 9 st. each. Breeder of the winner 400 sovs.; owner of second 300 sovs.; owner of third 100 sovs. About a mile and a half.

STRAITLACE, br f, by Son-in-Law—Stolen Kiss (Sir E. Hulton), 9 st. F. O'Neill 1
PLACK, ch f, by Hurry On—Groat (Lord Rosebery), 9 st.....E. C. Elliott 2
MINK, b f, by Marten—Cuptosser (Mrs. S. Whitburn), 9 st.....R. A. Jones 3

Also ran—The Aga Khan's Charley's Mount, Mr. C. Whitburn's Finger Print, Major J. B. Paget's Mademoiselle, Lady James Douglas's Maid of Bath, M. M. Goudchaux's Neigeuse, Lady Nunburnholme's Admired, Lady Nunburnholme's Amethystine, Lord Woolavington's Tuscar Rock, Mr. M. Goculdas's Mansouriyah.

(Winner trained by D. Waugh, at Newmarket).

Betting—11 to 10 agst Plack, 100 to 30 Straitlace, 100 to 9 Neigeuse, 100 to 8 Maid of Bath, 100 to 7 Mink, 20 to 1 Admired, 25 to 1 each Tuscar Rock and Charley's Mount, 33 to 1 each agst the others.

Place Betting—5 to 2 on Plack, 6 to 4 on Straitlace, 2 to 1 agst Neigeuse, 5 to 2 Maid of Bath, 3 to 1 Mink, others in proportion.

Won by a length and a half; a head separated second and third. Charley's Mount was fourth, and Mansouriyah last.

Digitized by Google

Polo

The Inter-Regimental

Twelve teams have entered for the Inter-Regimental: the Life Guards, Royal Horse Guards, Royal Dragoons, 7th, 8th and 10th Hussars, 12th Lancers, 13/18th Hussars, 14/20th Hussars, 17/21st Lancers, R.A. Woolwich, and the 15th Battn. Essex Regiment.

Owing to persistent bad weather opportunities for practice have been so limited that it has been impossible to form an estimate of the chances of the various teams.

The Life Guards and the Blues are always well mounted and may be relied on to produce good teams, though as yet there appears to be some doubt as to their constitution.

The 12th Lancers have a very useful side with the brothers McCreery, Charrington and de Pret.

The 14/20th have been handicapped by the absence of Major Hurndall, who has been playing in the trial matches and has had to be represented by a substitute in practice games. This is bound to militate against their chances of success.

There will probably be not much in it in the match between the Royals and the 13/18th. Both are fair average teams, with the balance, if anything, in favour of the former.

At the time of writing, the details of the draw are not available, but it is understood that the 10th Hussars will meet the Essex Regt.

The appearance of the latter will be warmly welcomed by all, but we have no knowledge to lead us to believe that they will be able to defeat a really good team.

The 9th and 8th Hussars are unknown quantities, both regiments having recently returned from abroad. Each are reported to believe that they can beat the other, but it is doubtful if they will have had time to settle down sufficiently to have great hopes of going very far.

If the 12th and 17/21st Lancers should meet, it will probably provide the best game of the tournament. Both teams are good and composed of experienced players. Polo is an uncertain game and previous form cannot always be taken as a guide, but, if a forecast may be ventured on, it is that the 17/21st, a side including several of the old 17th Lancers team, which has already won four successive victories, will again carry off the chief honours.

Polo in India

The Inter-Regimental Tournament was played at Meerut in March, and resulted in a victory for the 11th P.A.V.O. Cavalry over the Central India Horse by 6 goals to 1. This was a reversal of the form in the Indian Cavalry tournament in which the same two teams met in the final, the C.I.H. winning by 5 goals to 2.

Digitized by Google

1st Round.—C.I.H. beat Queen's Bays 11—0.

This was a very easy victory for the C.I.H. The Bays were unfortunate in having a number of casualties amongst their best ponies previous to the match which made it doubtful until the last moment whether they would be able to play.

2nd Round.—C.I.H. beat 13th Lancers 15—2.

This was a case of a scratch team playing against an accomplished side. The 13th Lancers had only just been amalgamated, and half their players and ponies had only just arrived from Egypt. Captains Corner and Bucher played well for the losers, and had there been more time for practice the result would have been much closer.

15th Lancers beat 4th Hussars 13—1.

The 15th Lancers overwhelmed their opponents. The losers put up a stout fight, but were unable to compete with such experienced players as Major Atkinson and Capt. Anderson. Mr. Dollar gave a very promising show at back.

11th P.A.V.O. beat 10th Lancers 7—2.

A good galloping game. For the losers Major Gwatkin stood out.

11th Hussars w.o. Hodson's Horse scratched.

It was unfortunate that Hodson's Horse, a fine sporting regiment that always puts a good team in the field, were prevented from playing by military exigencies.

Semi-Finals.

C.I.H. beat 15th Lancers 3—2.

This was a game full of excitement from start to finish. It was anybody's game up to the sounding of the trumpet. Early in the game the 15th Lancers pressed, but were unable to score. Subsequently they had to meet a series of dangerous attacks, and only their powerful backhanders saved them from the dashing tactics of their opponents. Captain George played a magnificent game for the losers.

P.A.V.O. beat 11th Hussars 8—0.

This match needs little comment, the 11th, besides being without several of their best ponies, being quite off ther game.

Final.

P.A.V.O. beat C.I.H. 6—1.

This match was a much better one than would appear from the score. For the winners, Capt. Dening was brilliant, and the whole side showed wonderful combination. The C.I.H. appeared to be too well marked to develop the remarkable stick play which had carried them to victory against the same

Digitized by Google

opponents in the final of the Native Cavalry Tournament. Capt. George was again the outstanding player of the match.

The following is the list of teams :—

4th Hussars.

Colours—Blue, Primrose.

Mr. R. Knight	... 1
Mr. J. P. Robinson ...	... 2
Mr. W. F. Brown ...	... 3
Mr. P. W. Dollar ...	... BACK

11th Hussars.

Colours—Crimson, Gold Crossbelt.

Capt. G. E. Younghusband	... 1
Major J. C. Humfrey ...	... 2
Capt. C. H. Tremayne ...	... 3
Mr. R. W. Verelst ...	... BACK

Queen's Bays.

Colours—White, Red Cummerbund.

Capt. R. T. Barnard ...	... 1
Mr. A. H. Barcley ...	... 2
Mr. G. H. Fanshawe ...	... 3
Capt. V. G. Toler-Aylward	... BACK

Central India Horse.

Colours—Maroon.

Capt. M. Cox	... 1
Capt. A. H. Williams ...	... 2
Capt. B. G. Dalrymple-Hay	... 3
Capt. G. George... ...	... BACK

Hodson's Horse.

Colours—Blue, White sleeves and collar.

Capt. R. H. R. Cumming	... 1
Major M. D. Vigors ...	... 2
Capt. R. T. Lawrence ...	... 3
Major G. de la P. Beresford	... BACK

15th Lancers.

Colours—Blue, Old Gold, Green.

Capt. S. H. Persse ...	... 1
Capt. C. E. Pert ...	... 2
Capt. A. L. B. Anderson	... 3
Major E. G. Atkinson ...	... BACK

P.A.V.O. Cavalry.

Colours—Blue Maroon and Old Gold.

Capt. H. R. Tatham ...	... 1
Capt. G. Carr-White ...	... 2
Capt. J. P. Dening ...	... 3
Major J. C. R. Gannon ...	... BACK

19th Lancers.

Colours—French Grey, Scarlet Sleeves

Capt. W. G. M. Thompson	... 1
Major A. H. Brooke ...	... 2
Capt. A. F. G. Forbes ...	... 3
Major F. Gwatkin ...	... BACK

13th D.C.O. Lancers.

Colours—

Mr. H. D. Caldecott ...	... 1
Capt. R. J. Corner	... 2
Major V. Sherwood-Smith	... 3
Capt. F. R. R. Bucher ...	... BACK

Subalterns' Tournament

The 11th Hussars produced a very strong team, consisting of Messrs. Finch, Jaffray, Younghusband and Verelst, and won all their matches without being seriously pressed.

Indian Cavalry Tournament

This was played at Lahore in the first week of February. In all, nine teams entered, but, unfortunately, the 7th Light Cavalry scratched after the draw, which left one team in the semi-finals without a previous game.

Polo was on the whole of a poor class, though a good deal of this could be put down to the nature of the ground on which the first two rounds had to be played.

Digitized by Google

Heavy rain continued through most of the week prior to the tournament, which prevented practice games and necessitated the first two rounds being played on the Aerodrome, the surface of which was bad, and in parts very slippery. The result was a win for the Central India Horse. As a team, they were well mounted, well drilled, and almost stick perfect, and form a well-balanced combination. For a team of such uniform excellence, they evidently suffer from nerves, a fact which accounts for their occasional unconvincing displays.

In the end, however, superior team work told, and in the final they cleverly defeated the 11th P.A.V.O. by 5 goals to 2.

TEAMS.

1st Round.

15th Lancers.		*19th Lancers.*	
Capt. S. H. Persse	3	Capt. W. G. M. Thomson	2
Capt. C. E. Pert	4	Major A. H. Brooke	4
Capt. A. L. B. Anderson	7	Capt. A. F. G. Forbes	2
Major E. G. Atkinson	8	Major F. Gwatkin	5
	22		13

15th Won, 8 goals to 3.

11th P.A.V.O. Cavalry.		*Hodson's Horse.*	
Capt. H. R. Tatham	2	Capt. R. H. R. Cumming	2
Capt. G. Carr-White	4	Major M. D. Vigors	6
Capt. J. R. Denning	7	Capt. R. T. Lawrence	4
Major J. C. R. Gannon	5	Mr. H. W. Humphrey	2
	18		14

P.A.V.O. Won, 4 goals to 3.

12th Cavalry.		*6th (D.C.O.) Lancers.*	
Capt. E. J. Inglis	1	Major J. N. Dick-Lauder	1
Capt. D. C. Branfoot	2	Major D. Pott	4
Capt. L. L. Thwaites	1	Capt. C. Landale	—
Major H. V. Yule	2	Capt. R. H. Wordsworth	4
	6		

6th Cavalry Won, 7 goals to 2.

Byes.

Guides Cavalry.		*8th K.G.O. Cavalry.*	
Mr. R. T. Burn	0	Capt. W. N. Powell	3
Mr. E. K. Wood	2	Major H. A. B. Johnson	0
Capt. C. P. Prioleau	2	Major E. D. Raymond	4
Capt. A. V. Hammond	0	Capt. M. W. Reed	0
	4		7

7th Light Cavalry.	*Central India Horse.*	
Scratched.	Capt. M. Cox	3
	Capt. A. A. Williams	8
	Capt. B. Dalrymple-Hay	5
	Capt. R. George	5
		21

Digitized by Google

Probyn's Horse.

Capt. J. W. Davidson	3
Capt. J. H. Taylor	4
Capt. J. A. May-Sommerville ...	4
Lt.-Col. R. H. Anderson	4
	15

2nd Round.

P.A.V.O. beat 15th Lancers	7 goals to 5
6th Lancers beat Guides Cavalry	8 goals to 5
C.I.H. beat Probyn's Horse	6 goals to 2
8th Cavalry a bye.	

Semi-Finals.

P.A.V.O. beat 6th Lancers	6 goals to 4
C.I.H. beat 8th K.G.O. Cavalry	10 goals to 1

Finals.

C.I.H. beat P.A.V.O.	5 goals to 2

The Saugor Polo Tournament

The Saugor Polo Tournament for the Central India Horse Cup was played this year on March 17, 19 and 21, 1924.

It was unfortunate that owing to the Saugor Week clashing with the Jubbulpore Week no outside teams could come. There were, however, five teams from the Equitation School, and the four games were all very even and hard fought.

The following teams entered :—

'The Old and Bold.'

1. Capt. D. S. E. McNeill ...	- Scr.
2. Capt. E. L. P. P. Gilpin	... 2
3. Col.-Comdt. P. B. Sangster	Scr.
Back, Capt. R. H. Wordsworth	... 4

'The Duds.'

1. Capt. J. E. Walker ...	... 1
2. Mr. A. C. Todd	- Scr.
3. Mr. R. A. H. Massy ...	... 1
Back, Mr. C. Goulder ...	... 1

'The Pirates.'

1. Mr. H. G. Lambert ...	- Scr.
2. Capt. T. C. Crichton ...	... 2
3. Mr. K. Alexander ...	... 1
Back, Capt. S. M. de H. Whatton	Scr.

'The Puritans.'

1. Mr. A. E. C. Poole ...	- Scr
2. Capt. P. R. Tatham ...	... 2
3. Capt. J. Wilson	... 3
Back, Capt. I. F. Mossack	... 1

'The B.B.B.'

1. Mr. T. I. Bishell	- Scr.
2. Mr. G. R. Richards ...	... 1
3. Capt. W. Morrice ...	... 1
Back, Mr. S. O. Berry ...	Scr.

Results.

1st Round.—'Old and Bold' beat 'Duds' (plus 1 goal) by 3 goals to 2.

2nd Round.—'Old and Bold' beat 'Puritans' by 3 goals to 0.
'The Pirates' beat 'B.B.B.s' by 6 goals to 2.

Final.—'The Pirates' (plus 1 goal) beat 'Old and Bold' by 2 goals to 1.

Digitized by Google

International Polo

The first International Trial Match, arranged by the Selection Committee, was played at Ranelagh on May 28.

Lord Wodehouse being unable to play, owing to an injured wrist, was replaced by Major G. H. Phipps-Hornby.

The match was limited to six periods, and resulted in a victory for the trial side by 7 goals to 4. Considering the few opportunities there have been for practice, the form was distinctly good.

It is too early yet to form an opinion as to future prospects, but the selection of the team is in capable hands, and there is every hope that in the next International Match we shall be represented by a side at least as good as any that has lined up on previous occasions.

The teams were :—

Trial Side.—Major T. W. Kirkwood, No. 1; Major G. H. Phipps-Hornby, No. 2; Major F. B. Hurndall, No. 3; and Mr. L. Lacey, back.

The Rest.—Wing-Commander P. K. Wise, No. 1; Major E. J. Atkinson, No. 2; Major F. W. Barrett, No. 3; and Lord Cholmondeley, back.

Other matches have since been played, but the state of the ground has been too bad to afford a fair test.

Polo at Saugor

The Baldock Handicap Polo Tournament was played off at the Equitation School, Saugor, on February 25, 27 and 29. Five teams entered, and some good fast polo resulted in a win for 'D' Ride in the final against 'A' Ride. 'C' Ride were particularly unfortunate in having to alter their team completely on the morning of their game, owing to an accident to Capt. Wilson.

Teams.

1. *Staff—Colours Red.*

1. Major T. S. Paterson, M.C.	2
2. Lt.-Col. A.G.O.M. Mayne, D.S.O.	3
3. Capt. T. C. Crichton, M.C.	2
Back, Capt. R. H. Wordsworth	4
Total	11

2. *'A' Ride—Colours Dark Blue.*

1. Capt. H. M. Birch-Reynardson	Scr.
2. Mr. H. R. C. Frink	1
3. Mr. C. Goulder	1
Back, Capt. A. E. Sansom	0
Total	2

3. *'B' Ride : Colours Blue.*

1. Capt. D. S. E. McNeill, M.C.	Scr.
2. Capt. P. J. Hilliard	Scr.
3. Capt. H. Pigot	Scr.
Back, Mr. Pritam Singh	Scr.
	0

4. *'C' Ride : Colours White.*

1. Capt. I. F. Hossack	1
2. Capt. G. E. Portal	Scr.
3. Mr. J. A. L. Powell	Scr.
Back, Mr. A. C. Todd	Scr.
Total	1

5. *'D' Ride : Colours Black.*

1. Capt. J. E. Walker	1
2. Mr. R. A. H. Massy	1
3. Mr. K. Alexander	1
Back, Capt. G. M. Dyer	1
Total	4

Digitized by Google

DRAW.

Monday, Feb. 25.	*Wednesday, Feb. 27.*	*Friday, Feb. 29*
'D' Ride. v. 'C' Ride.	'D' Ride. v. Staff.	'D' Ride. v. 'A' Ride.
	'A' Ride. v. 'B' Ride.	

Results.

1st Round.—'D' Ride beat 'C' Ride (plus 1 goal) by 8 goals to 1.

2nd Round.—'D' Ride (plus 3 goals) beat Staff by 6 goals to 5.
'A' Ride beat 'B' Ride (plus 1 goal) by 6 goals to 3.

Final.—'D' Ride beat 'A' Ride (plus 1 goal) by 4 goals to 3.

POINT TO POINT RACES

We must congratulate H.R.H. Prince Henry on his two wins on Ocean III. At the South Berks meeting he had to resist a determined challenge by Billet Doux, but, picking up his whip quickly without using it, he got his horse nicely balanced, and Billet Doux falling at the last fence, won easily. It was a good performance.

Major Gen. J. Vaughan has an exceptionally nice horse in Merrie England. This horse won from a good field at the Army Point to Point, and again at the Garth meeting. On each occasion he was ridden by his owner. The 'old 'uns' still take some beating.

Lieut. Col. Malise Graham looked like having a successful season, but this exceptionally fine horseman had a nasty fall which necessitated his 'standing down' for some time.

One of the most successful horses of the season is Pippen. This horse was issued to Mr. W. J. R. Bedford, R.F.A., as a Government charger in 1922. In 1923 he ran four times without being beaten, his wins including the Army Light-weight race. This year he has run five times, and won four races, including the Army Light-weight, the R.A. chargers, the Greenjackets nomination (carrying a 14 lb. penalty), and the Smith Bosanquet Hunt Nomination race. On the last occasion he defeated that exceptionally good horse Kingmaker. It has not been possible to ascertain the horse's breeding. He was bought during the war as a trooper, and was sent to a cavalry regiment, from which he is reported to have been cast for debility. He is a wonderfully temperate horse, with perfect manners on parade.

Many expressions of dissatisfaction were heard at the Army Point to Point regarding the charge of £1 made to officers for a motor-car. It is not contested that the expense of running a meeting has largely increased since the war, but, bearing in mind that all the races are for presentation cups, the charge certainly appears excessive. Would it not be possible to print a special card of admission at reduced prices to be issued to past and present officers on the production of a visiting card? We know of one small hunt which was practically saved from extinction by the sale of tickets for motor-cars, the receipts for which, for a

Digitized by Google

single days' racing, amounted to £1,000. Such a situation cannot arise in the the case of the Army meeting.

The following list of Point to Point races won this year by Government chargers will, no doubt, be of interest to many readers. Both Pippen and Pilot are exceptionally nice horses, and the number of races won show the care and judgment with which the horses have been bought.

Purchasing horses for the Army demands exceptional powers of judging young horses in the rough, and the performances of these horses, many of whom have competed against some of the best privately owned horses for which large prices have been paid, is a wonderful tribute to the skill of the officer responsible for their purchase.

Name of Horse.	Owner and Regt.	Race Won.	Meeting.
Pippen	Mr. W. J. R. Bedford, R.F.A.	(1) Prince of Wales's Cup (1) R.A.L.W. Race. (2) Nomination (Open).	Army. Royal Arty. Bar, Point-to-Point.
Tommy Fifth ...	Capt. F. F. Spicer, 12th Lancers.	(1) Earl Beatty's Cup.	Army.
Johnnie Go Lightly	Mr. J. C. Friedberger.	(1) Earl Haig's Cup.	Army.
Pilot	Mr. P. V. Williams, R.H.A.	(1) Nomination. (1) Chargers' Race. (1) Nomination. (3) ,,	Army. Royal Arty. R.A.S.C. Cavalry.
Kayenne	Mr. G.W. E. Heath	(1) Nomination.	Royal Arty.
Llangattock ...	Major G. W. E. Harrison, R.A.	(1) Welter Weight.	Royal Arty.
Delight	Capt. Fooks, 14th Hussars.	(1) Light Weight.	Staff College.
Safety First ...	Capt. Stopford, R.B.	(1) Heavy Weight.	Staff College.
Loppy	Mr. P. Wilson. Royal Dragoons	(2) Light Weight. (1) Royal Dgns. L.W. (1) Adjutants' Hunt Cup	Garth. Cavalry. Berks and Bucks.
First Hundred ...	Mr. C. B. Church, 10th Hussars.	(1) 10th Hussars Ch'grs. (3) ,, (Reg'mtl. Cup).	Cavalry. South Berks.
Roebuck	Lt.-Col. O'Harras, R.A.S.C.	(1) Light Weight.	R.A.S.C.
Baccarat	Lt.-Col. Buxton, Rifle Brigade.	(1) Infy. Team Race.	R.A.S.C.

Digitized by Google

1st Cavalry Brigade Races

Prince Henry Reappears to Win

The outstanding feature at this meeting at Arborfield Cross, near Reading, on April 4 was the success which attended H.R.H. Prince Henry in the 10th Royal Hussars Past and Present Race, in which he held two nominations—Ocean III. and Rathgarogue. The former, it may be remembered, was brought down at the Army Point-to-Point Meeting when going well, the fault resting with a dismounted cyclist, who, getting too near to one of the jumps, was cannoned into, and Ocean III., getting his legs entangled in the spokes of the machine, was brought down and slightly cut about, the Prince getting off with a slight shaking. Ocean III. was the chosen of the Prince yesterday and, with rider and horse having a perfect understanding, a Royal victory was celebrated amidst a great outburst of cheering, which was renewed when Prince Henry returned to the paddock, and again after he had weighed in. Ocean III. had two lengths' advantage at the finish of Lieut.-Col. M. Graham's Ballynoura, the remaining two which made up the field failing to finish. The remaining racing produced very good sport, but the bitterly cold weather greatly affected the attendance, which was on the small side. The management was very good indeed. Details :—

ROYAL DRAGOONS' LIGHT-WEIGHT RACE. Challenge cup and sweepstake; 12st 7lb or over.

LOPPY (Mr. P. Wilson).....Owner 1
EVERGREEN EVE (Capt. D'A. Harris).....Owner 2

Also ran—Capt. J. B. Fitzgerald's Freeman, Mr. R. C. Kidd's Peg, Mr. R. Peake's Gloaming II., Mr. W. Scott's The Unknown Quantity, and Capt. D. P. Lithgow's Everdon.

Only two finished. Won by a length.

10TH ROYAL HUSSARS CHARGERS' RACE. Sweepstake of £1; 13st and over.

FIRST HUNDRED (Mr. C. B. Church).....Owner 1
HOLLOWAY (Capt. S. M. Wardell).....Owner 2
PETER (Mr. J. D. Hignett .....Owner 3

Also ran—Mr. P. Donner's Helidon and Mr. D. Cross's Bairnsfather.

Won in a canter; poor third.

13TH-18TH HUSSARS REGIMENTAL RACE. A sweepstake of £1; 13 st or over.

NIGHTLIGHT (Mr. J. Hirsch).....M. Stirling 1
ROUGE ET NOIR (Mr. E. S. Sword).....Owner 2
MINTLEAF (Mr. C. H. Turner).....Owner 3

Also ran—Lieut.-Col. R. Osborne's Pax Vobis, Mr. D. J. Norton's Le Rat Mort, Paddy, Mr. D. Cooke's Killjoy, Mr. J. Norris's Garryowen, Mr. J. H. Hirsch's Rio, Capt. C. H. Miller's Bayleaf, Mr. ffrench Blake's Missfire, Maj. W. Holdworth's Mr. V. A. Dunkerley's Felix, Mr. T. Williams-Taylor's Arbuckle, Capt. L. S. Lloyd's Begum Pet, and Major J. N. Lumley's Hill Morton.

Nightlight won easily by six lengths; bad third.

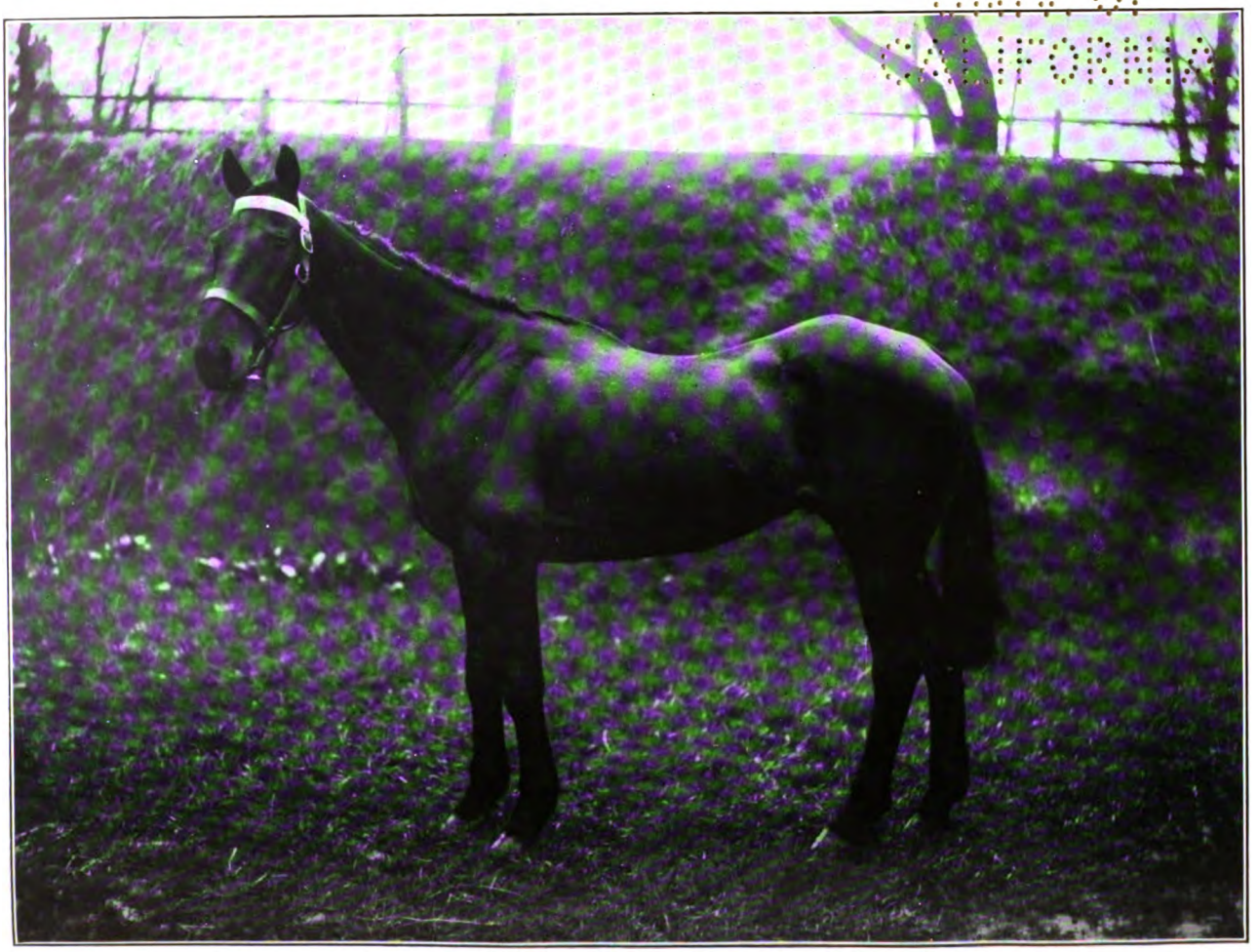
10TH ROYAL HUSSARS' PAST AND PRESENT RACE. A sweepstake of £1 each; 13st and over.

OCEAN III. (H.R.H. Prince Henry).....Owner 1
BALLYHOURA (Lieut.-Col. M. Graham).....Owner 2

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA



THE PILOT.

Digitized by Google

Four ran. Only two finished. Ballyhoura and Ocean III. kept close company throughout. Entering the straight, Prince Henry sent his mount ahead, and at the last fence held a lead of three lengths, which was reduced to two as the horses went past the judge. The remaining two runners were Capt. Wardell's Baby Doll and Capt. Guthrie's Sammy.

NOMINATION RACE, for a Cup presented by the 1st Cavalry Brigade.

ROCKBERG (Lieut.-Col. M. Graham).....Capt. Stanyforth 1
LUNATIC (Mr. C. F. Forestier-Walker).....Owner 2
THE PILOT (Mr. P. V. Williams).....Owner 3

Also ran—Mr. D. ffrench Blake's Waterford, Capt. M. Wardell's Lanstem, and Mr. A. Bostock's Caliban.

Won by three lengths. Pilot, who got entangled in a fence, finished a good third.

ROYAL DRAGOONS' HEAVY-WEIGHT RACE. Challenge Cup and sweepstake; 14st or over.

FOX TROT (Mr. A. S. Casey).....Owner 1
BUBBLES IV. (Mr. W. Scott).....Owner 2
BILLIE (Capt. S. Dumbreck).....Owner 3

Also ran—Lieut.-Col. W. T. Hodgson's Palmer.

Won by three lengths; bad third.

We publish herewith a photograph of The Pilot. This wonderful old horse was issued to Mr. P. V. Williams, R.H.A., in 1920. He is by The Pilot; dam's pedigree unknown.

He has been placed 20 times out of 28 attempts, having actually won on 10 occasions. During last winter he was ridden twice a week as a whip's horse to the Aldershot drag.

He is a perfect hack, and is equally at home on parade, in the hunting-field, or on the racecourse.

Saugor Point-to-Point Races

The annual Point-to-Point meeting was held at Macronia on April 1 and 3, 1924. An excellent course had been arranged by the Honorary Secretary, Captain R. N. Nunn, M.C., and some interesting racing was seen. There was a large attendance at the meeting.

First day

1*st Race.*—The OPEN RACE. Catch weight 11 st. 7 lb. Distance 3½ miles.

SAUGOR, b cb g (Capt. W. Morrice) .....Owner 1
WHIPPET, b cb g (Mr. J. A. L. Powell) .....Owner 2
BUSTER, br aus g (Capt. R. N. Nunn) .....Capt. Gilpin 3

Also ran—Billy, Satass, Miss Carty, Jingle.

Won by five lengths, a furlong separating second and third. Saugor got away at the start and made the running from Whippet the whole way. Whippet came up strongly at the finish but was unable to head Saugor.

2*nd Race.*—The HAMBRO CUP, for horses regularly ridden by British Warrant and Non-commissioned officers of the Equitation School during this course. Catch weights 11 st. 7 lb. Distance 2½ miles.

Digitized by Google

DOUBTFUL, b aus g (S S M. Watts) .....Owner 1
SAND FLY, b cb g (Sergt. Bently) .....Owner 2
STIFFY, b aus g (Sergt. Sutherland) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Patsy, Query, Miss Pegs.

Won by three lengths, four lengths between second and third. Doubtful led most of the way, but was passed by Stiffy short a furlong from home. Stiffy, however, could not maintain the effort and Doubtful won easily.

3rd Race.—The NETHERAVON CUP. A challenge cup presented by the Officers of the Cavalry School, Netheravon, for horses the unconditional and *bona fide* property of officers belonging to the Equitation School, Saugor. Catch weight 11 st. 7 lb. Distance 3½ miles.

JOCK, b cb g (Capt. W. Morrice) .....Owner 1
SOULT, ch cb g (Capt. P. J. Hilliard) .....Owner 2
RADIUM, br aus g (Mr. R. A. H. Massy) .....Owner 3

Also ran—Jasper, Noah's Ark, Big Girl.

Won by five lengths, four lengths between second and third. From the start Soult took the lead, followed by Noah's Ark, Jock and Radium. Jasper fell at the first fence. This order was maintained for about a mile and a half, Jock and Radium then passing the leaders. About a mile from home Soult crept up and took the lead. At the last jump Soult, full of running, was leading comfortably when he fell; Radium who was running second also fell, and Jock, who was third, got over. Both Radium and Soult were quickly remounted and chased Jock home, but the distance was too short for Soult to head Jock, who just got home.

Time—10 min. 21½ sec.

4th Race.—The 2nd LANCERS CUP. For horses regularly ridden by Indian Officers of the Equitation School during this course. Catch weights 10 st. 7 lb. Distance 2½ miles.

GAINDA, b aus g (Jem. Aziz Ahmed Khan) 1
ZABARDAST, b aus g (Jem. Sant Singh) 2
BADU, b aus g (Jem. Mohd. Zaman Khan) 3

Also ran—Tiger, Jamna, Peacock.

Peacock, who was leading, fell at the last jump. Won by a length; two lengths between second and third.

5th Race.—24th PUNJABI CUP. For ponies 14·3 and under, the property of officers of the Equitation School, Saugor. Catch weights 11 st. Distance 2½ miles.

SPORTY BOY II, ch arab h (Capt. J. Wilson).....Owner 1
QUEENIE, br aus m (Mr. S. O. Berry) .....Mr. Frink 2
PADDY, b aus g (Capt. J. Wilson) .....Capt. Hilliard 3

Also ran—Quick Silver.

Won by half a furlong. Sporty Boy got right away at the start and made the running throughout, never looking like being headed, followed by Queenie, Paddy, and Quick Silver. The last named refused at the open ditch, and Paddy fell at the last jump. Sporty Boy put up an extremely fine performance for a very small pony. Time—8 min. 57⅘ sec.

Second Day

1st Race.—INTER-RIDE RELAY RACE. Teams of five from each ride. Catch weights, owners up. Each horse to run about 2 miles across an unknown country.

Nine teams started. Winners—'D' Ride.

Digitized by Google

Team—Lieut. D. MacD. Killingley, Capt. J. O. Hanwell, Lieut. T. I. Bishell, Lieut. K. Alexander, Capt. W. Morrice.

2nd Race.—The POONA HORSE CUP. For horses regularly ridden by Indian other ranks of the Equitation School, Saugor, during this course catch weights 10st. 7lb. Distance 2½ miles.

KABUTAR, b aus g (Dfr. Bir Singh) 1
RAILOO, ch aus g (Dfr. Milka Singh) 2
JIMMY, b aus g (L.-Nk. Qudrat Ullah) 3

Won by two lengths; one length between second and third. A close race, the winner coming to the front over the last fence. Time 8 min. 14 sec.

3rd Race.—The NORMAN CUP. Teams of four from British Officer Rides of first and second chargers ridden regularly on parade during this course. To carry 45 st. between the team. Distance 3½ miles.

'D' Ride. *Team*—Capt. Morrice, Lieuts. Alexander Massy and Bishell) 1
'B' Ride. (*Team*—Capts. Pigot, McNeill, Tatham, and Lieut. Lambert) 2

This proved to be a most excellent race, the issue remaining in doubt until the last minute. Sixteen horses faced the starter. Capt. Hilliard's Soult, which was ridden by Lt. Lambert, the owner being unable to ride owing to his fall on the previous day, led to about half way, when he gradually lost ground. Capt. Morrice's Saugor (Alexander) coming to the front, came in first by three lengths. Lieut. Powell's Whippet and Capt. Morrice's Jock (Owner) dead-heated for second place. Soult was fourth. Time 10 min. 55 sec.

At the conclusion of the meeting the cups were kindly presented by Mrs. Sangster.

Equitation School, Saugor

Horse Show

The Equitation School Horse Show was held on the Race Course on March 18 and 20, 1924. Entries were good, all classes being well supported. Jumping classes filled particularly well, and there were some good exhibitions over the rather difficult course, which included a railway crossing—two gates 4 ft. high, 30 ft. apart.

The following are the results :—

Class I.—British Officers' Chargers. A cup presented by Colonel Commandant P. B. Sangster, C.M.G., D.S.O.

RADIUM, br aust g (Mr. R. A. H. Massy) 1
FLYING FOX, ch aust g (Capt. G. M. Dyer) 2
GIPSY, b aust. m (Lt. T. I. Bishell) 3

Class II.—Pigstickers.

JOCK, b cb g (Capt. W. Morrice) 1
QUEENIE, br aust m (Lt. S. O. Barry) 2
REX, ch aust g (Lt. T. I. Bishell) 3

Class III.—Polo Ponies Light Weight, English and Colonial. A cup presented by Messrs. Diwan Bahadur Ballabhdas & Sons, Saugor.

LYSANDER, b aust g (Capt. J. E. Walker) 1
DUSKY, br aust m (Lt.-Col. A. G. O. M. Mayne) 2
NEDA, gr aust m (Lt. R. A. H. Massy) 3

Digitized by Google

Class IV.—Polo Ponies Heavy Weight, English and Colonial. A cup presented by Sir Frank Sly, K.C.S.I., Governor of the Central Provinces.

ALPHONSE, ch aust g (Capt. R. H. Wordsworth) 1
WIZARD, br aust g (Capt. G. M. Dyer) 2
A.B., br aust g (Lt. R. A. H. Massy) 3

Class V.—Polo Ponies Country Bred.

BIJLI, rn cb m (Lt. C. Goulder) 1
QUICKSILVER, gr cb m (Capt. P. R. Tatham) 2
RHODA, br cb m (Capt. J. E. Walker) 3

Class VIII.—Ladies' Hacks. A cup presented by P. Orr & Sons, Ltd., Madras.

SATAN, b cb g (Capt. T. C. Crichton) 1
RADIUM, br aust g (Lt. R. A. H. Massy) 2
FLYING FOX, ch aust g (Capt. G. M. Dyer) 3

Class IX.—Ponies likely to make Polo Ponies. A cup presented by H.M. The Maharaja of Jodhpur.

ARABIE, gr a h (Lt. H. G. Lambert) 1
SAROLA, br aust g (Capt. P. J. Hilliard) 2
CHERRY, b aust g (Capt. P. J. Hilliard) 3

Class X.—Horses, English and Colonial.

RADIUM, br aust g. (Lt. R. A. H. Massy) 1
FLYING FOX, ch aust g (Capt. G. M. Dyer) 2
BUSTER, br aust g (Capt. R. N. Nunn) 3

Class XI.—Horses, Country Bred.

WHITE HEAT, b cb g (Capt. S. N. de H. Whatton) 1
SOULT, ch cb g (Capt. P. J. Hilliard) 2
NOAH'S ARK, br cb g (Lt. H. R. C. Frink) 3

Class XII.—Best Stable of Three.

Stable of Three (Capt. G. M. Dyer) 1
Stable of Three (Capt. P. J. Hilliard) 2

Class XIII.—Indian Officers' Chargers. A cup presented by H.H. The Maharaja of Mysore.

LIONESS, ch e m (Jem. Ahmad bin Mohammed) 1
PATHAN, ch cb g (His Maj. Khauj Mohd. Khan) 2
BRIGADIER, b aust g (Jem. Kartar Singh) 3

Class XIV.—British N.C.O.'s Troop Horses.

SHEIKH, gr aust g (Sergt. Brooks) 1
FLY AWAY, b aust g (Sergt. Rowles) 2
TOBY, ch aust g (Sergt. Roberts) 3

Class XV.—Indian N.C.O.'s Troop Horses.

MOTI, gr aust g (L.-Dfr. Sumandar Khan) 1
BIJLI, b aust m (L.-Dfr. Sabit Ali Khan) 2
RANI, bl aust m (Dafdr. Chain Chand) 3

Class XIX.—Open jumping. A cup presented by H.H. The Maharajah of Kashmir

KITTY, br aust m (Lt. C. Goulder) 1
BAJ, b aust g (Jem. Washdeo Singh) 2

Digitized by Google

Class XX.—The 2nd Lancers Cup. Individual jumping, British Officers, for a challenge cup presented by the officers, 2nd Lancers (Gardner's Horse).

KITTY, br aust m (Lt. C. Goulder) 1
RADIUM, br aust g (Lt. R. A. H. Massy) 2
ABSENTEE, b aust g (Lt. H. R. C. Frink) 3

Class XXI.—Pony Jumping. A cup presented by Major-General Sir Louis Vaughan, K.B.E., C.B., D.S.O., G.O.C., C.P. Dist.

PADDY, b aust g (Capt. J. Wilson) 1
BABS, ch aust g (Sergt. C. E. Gibbons) 2

Class XXII.—The Rimington Cup. Teams of four Remounts from each Ride. A challenge cup presented by Major-General Sir M. F. Rimington, K.C.B., C.V.O.

'E' Ride 1

Class XXIII.—Jumping—Indian Officers. A cup presented by Major-General C. A. C. Godwin, C.M.G., D.S.O., A.D.C., Major General Cavalry.

GULAB, b cb g (Jem. Mohd. Zaman Khan) 1
RAMZAN, b aust g (Jem. Mohd. Zaman Khan) 2

Class XXIV.—Jumping—British N.C.O. Students.

BABS, ch aust g (Sergt. C. E. Gibbons) 1
SANDFLY, b cb g (Sergt. C. Bently) 2

Class XXV.—Jumping—Indian N.C.O. Students. A cup presented by H.H. The Maharaja of Bhavnagar.

GAISLY, b aust g (L.-Dfr. Bakshi Singh) 1
SUNDAR, b aust g (Hav. Dadam Khan) 2

Class XXVI.—Jumping—Equitation School Staff.

BAZ, b aust g (Jem. Washdeo Singh) 1
COUNTESS, ch aust m (S.S.M., R.I. H. N. Watts) 2

Class XXVII.—Best Horse in the Show. A cup presented by H.E. The Viceroy.

RADIUM, br aust g (Lt. R. A. H. Massy) 1

Class XXVIII.—Best pony in the Show. A cup presented by H.E. The Commander-in-Chief.

BIZLI, rn cb m (Lt. C. Goulder) 1

Pigsticking

We have received the following appeal for the Muttra Tent Club :—

The 4th Hussars left Muttra on February 7 for Lucknow, and no mounted unit is relieving them.

Since 1892 Muttra has been one of the chief centres for pigsticking in India, not only for the regiments stationed there, but also for many officers who have wished to spend their leave pigsticking.

Up to 1914 the average bag was over 200 boar, but during the four years of the war, when no preserving was done and the Tent Club virtually ceased to exist, the yearly bag diminished till in 1919, when Major Gannon reformed the Tent Club, only 40 boar were accounted for. On the arrival at Muttra

Digitized by Google

of the 19th Hussars preserving was again commenced, and the bags steadily increased, so that during the last two years, whilst the 4th Hussars have been in Muttra, the annual bag has exceeded 200.

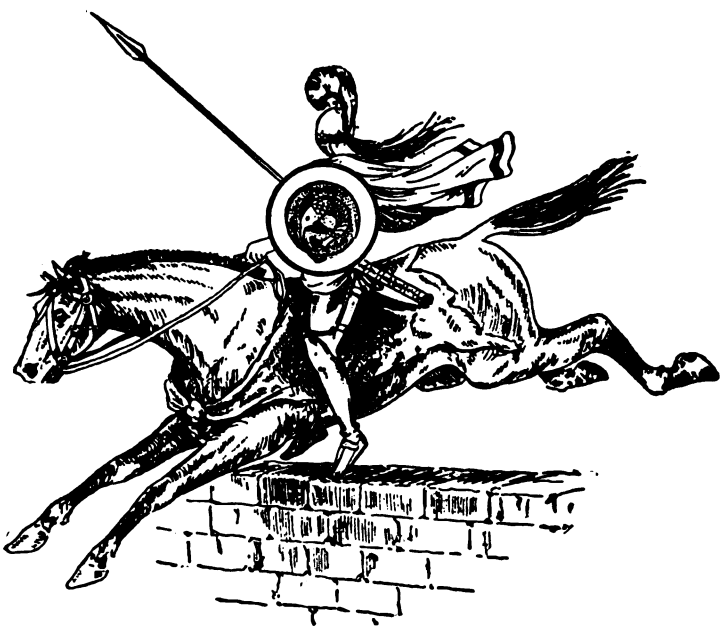
The supply of pig this season seems greater than ever, and will continue to increase if preservation is continued.

It would be a pity in these days, when so few Tent Clubs have been able to attain their pre-war standing, that so sporting and well-stocked a district as Muttra should be allowed to deteriorate.

Rs. 120 per mensem or Rs. 1,440 per annum is sufficient to pay the Chowidhars in the various jungles and the permanent staff of the Tent Club. At the present time the Tent Club funds are slightly in credit; with this amount the Club can be maintained only for the remainder of the season, when Mr. T. H. Parr, the District Agricultural Officer, will take over the duties of Hon. Secretary as long as it is financially possible to continue the Tent Club.

Doubtless many sportsmen from various parts of India will wish to come to Muttra to spend their leave, but unless the country can be kept in order the supply of pig will again diminish.

It is hoped that many individuals and Officers' Messes would like to make some subscription to the upkeep of the Muttra Tent Club, and for this reason I write on behalf of the present Committee to request your views on this subject and to ask up to what extent you would be prepared to assist.



Printed by Eyre and Spottiswoode, Ltd., His Majesty's Printers, East Harding Street, E.C.4.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA

Digitized by Google

One of a series in Mr. R. Knightley Orlebar's Collection.

"STEEPLECHASING." By Henry Alken.

Reproduced by the kind permission of "The Connoisseur."

THE

CAVALRY JOURNAL

OCTOBER 1924

THE LESSONS OF THE EAST PRUSSIAN CAMPAIGN

By Major-General Sir Edmund Ironside,
K.C.B., C.M.G., D.S.O.

After every war there have been controversies upon the subject of the organisation, training and equipment of the various arms. Around the question of Cavalry these controversies have been particularly fierce. The Russian Cavalry in East Prussia had everything in their favour—superiority in numbers and suitability of *terrain*—and yet one can find only examples of how not to employ mounted men in the field. The advent of mechanical vehicles and aircraft has altered the employment of the mounted man in war, and it must be admitted at once that the conditions which prevailed in East Prussia in 1914 are unlikely to recur in any future first-class European War. Still, there will be wars of lesser dimensions, fought out in less civilised areas and between opponents who cannot both place large numbers of these latest adjuncts in the field, and in these wars the opportunity of the mounted man will be as great as ever. In the small wars which lie before the British Army, it will be the duty of the Cavalry to turn to their own advantage these new inventions, so that their task may be lightened and their strength preserved for the decisive moment.

Digitized by Google

It is, therefore, proposed to discuss some of the points of interest which have been raised in the previous articles.

Orders and Instructions.

The Orders and Instructions issued to the Russian Cavalry by the superior Commanders were uniformly bad, and the failure of the Cavalry may be attributed largely to the fact that they did not know what was required of them.

Commanders of the future may have much greater facilities for intercommunication, and by means of aeroplanes they may be able to visit their subordinates or summon them for personal interviews even from long distances; but written Orders and Instructions will be as necessary as ever. Mobile Forces, moving as they do at a greater rate than that of the remaining fighting arms, are always liable to find themselves out of touch with their superior at the moment when a decision is required. It is to Commanders of Mobile Forces, therefore, that Instructions are of particular importance. Definite Orders to fit every imaginable circumstance are beyond the human brain to devise or to understand; and it is therefore necessary to paint a picture of the end it is desired to achieve, leaving the detailed execution in the hands of the subordinate. Instructions should be a kind of 'vade mecum' for reference in moments of doubt.

Any attempt to issue daily orders to Mobile Forces, as the Russians attempted to do, must lead to disaster.

The Russian Instructions should be compared with British Instructions issued during the late war. One such British Instruction, issued by Lord Allenby on September 9, 1918, to the Desert Mounted Corps, may be found in 'An Outline of the Palestine Campaign,' by General Bowman-Manifold, and published by W. J. Mackay & Co., Chatham.

Strategic Reconnaissance.

The Russians were surprised strategically upon many occasions. Their system of sending forward isolated squadrons

Digitized by Google

to long distances without support, led to no results and to a general exhaustion of horseflesh. The Russian columns thus moved forward blindly without reference to the position of the enemy, which the Russian Cavalry had failed to locate.

A systematic collection of information is the only means by which a Commander is enabled to bring his fighting troops to the decisive point at the right time, and in such a manner as to defeat the enemy in battle.

The Russians, in almost every case, hampered their Cavalry by giving them the dual *rôle* of Reconnaissance and Protection. It cannot be too clearly impressed upon all authorities issuing orders that these two *rôles* are incompatible, owing to the fact that different tactics are required for their execution. Reconnaissance means dispersion, whereas Protection means concentration of force. The authority issuing the orders must decide upon the relative importance of these two services at the moment, and must then allot his available troops in the required proportion.

During peace, the General Staffs collect information upon the subject of possible enemy forces and their probable plans of campaign. Before taking the field, a Commander is supplied with all the available information bearing upon his particular area of operations. He will then employ his aircraft to verify his information and to construct for himself a picture of the main features of the enemy's opening movements. So long as the enemy's movements by road or rail remain upon a big scale, and given a fair proportion of good days, aircraft should be able to supply the necessary information. The Commander will thus be able to keep his Mobile Forces concentrated, avoiding any unnecessary movement.

As the opposing forces draw closer together, the enemy's movements will become more tactical. He will disperse his forces and make increasing use of the darkness and cover against observation from the air. Movement will become too variegated and confused for aircraft to render reports

Digitized by Google

accurate enough for building up into a general whole. During this period the aircraft should be employed to reconnoitre the communications in rear of the enemy's forces, the direction and volume of traffic giving the Commander some idea of the proportion of enemy troops about to be maintained in each area. The Commander will now send forward his mobile troops to complete the information required for the preparation of his battle plan.

More than ever will the Mobile Forces have to fight to obtain this information. The germ of a mechanical protective screen can be seen in the dispositions of Von François in front of Gumbinnen—motor machine-guns, armoured cars, mechanical artillery, and infantry in mechanical vehicles thrust forward down all available roads and tracks and connected to the rear with columns of all arms by means of wireless and motor-cyclists. Mounted men alone will never be able to penetrate such a screen, nor will they be able to outflank it, for the mechanical vehicles possess greater mobility than the horses of the mounted men. We therefore see a general tendency to constitute the Mobile Forces of the future so that they can operate effectively against such screens.

The Mobile Forces detailed for strategic reconnaissance will, therefore, consist of three categories of troops :—

(i) A Mechanical Fighting Force. Tanks, armoured cars, motor machine-guns and mechanical artillery.

(ii) Mounted men and horse-drawn artillery.

(iii) Infantry in mechanical vehicles.

Each of these categories is essential for the work in hand and there must be complete sympathy and co-operation between them at all times. The mounted men and their horse-drawn artillery will locate the enemy screens, brushing away the forward troops and exploring the general line that the enemy has chosen to hold. The Mechanical Fighting Force will then be brought up to create a gap, through which

Digitized by Google

small bodies of mounted men will make their way to explore the enemy's dispositions behind. The Infantry in mechanical vehicles will be brought up as soon as possible to hold the gap, releasing the Mechanical Fighting Force for mobile action in support of the reconnoitring mounted patrols. It is important that this support should be effective, picking up the messages and moving forward to deal with any resistance holding up the mounted men. Any such thing as the isolated squadrons employed by the Russians will be avoided.

The strength of a modern Mobile Force will be such that the tendency not to face strong opposition in front and to move away to a flank will be eliminated. A Commander will thus ensure that his reconnaissances are made in the direction he requires them, and do not drift off into some uneconomical direction.

Command and Administration of Mobile Forces.

The composite nature of a Mobile Force of the future has considerably increased the difficulties of command and administration.

The very nature of the two classes of men who work with horses and mechanical vehicles tends to produce a lack of sympathy between them. The supplies for each category are of a different nature, both in the rear services from which they are derived and in the bulk and weight required to keep a force in the field. The Chief Supply Officer must be a man of broad mind.

As regards command, the pace of movement, times of halting, endurance and many other qualities, the two categories differ widely. The Commander and his Staff must have a complete understanding of the nature of the troops under them. As far as possible, the old maxim 'March divided, fight united' must be observed. Any attempt to combine the two categories in one march column cannot lead to good results. The mechanical vehicles can make longer

Digitized by Google

bounds to reach the decisive point, and they can be employed more easily at night than the mounted men. A careful study of the principal characteristics of each must be made and inculcated into all ranks.

The mounted man should be freed of all impedimenta—both on himself, his horse and in his transport. No saving of a few pounds will suffice. Mounted men will be called upon for long and rapid marches if they are to co-operate with mechanical vehicles, and the weights carried at present by the horse preclude such co-operation. With a service of tracked or wheeled mechanical vehicles, it should be possible to supply the mounted man at stated periods with all that is necessary to keep both man and horse in the field in good health, leaving the man with his fighting weapons only. The mechanical transport can be called up at short notice, as was done in the 1918 advance against the Germans with tractors for the Infantry crossing the devastated areas.

The mounted men should be relieved of all services which can be better performed by mechanical vehicles—aircraft, motor bicycles, and motor cars—such as despatch-riding, *liaison* work, and general intercommunication.

Close Control of Mobile Forces.

The importance of good Instructions for Mobile Forces has already been pointed out. If the Instructions are good, and there is confidence in the Commander of the Mobile Forces, there is no need to keep a tight hand over him. The Russian Superior Command exercised no control over its Cavalry, whereas Ludendorff exercised too close a control. In the German advance against Rennenkampf, Ludendorff attempted to issue orders direct to his Cavalry. He first held them in, and finally launched them too far afield. A good Commander of a Mobile Force will create his own opportunities, and will not wait for them to be shown to him. Had Ludendorff issued a general Instruction to his Cavalry to

Digitized by Google

operate in the closest touch with Van François' 1st Corps, with a view to cutting off the Russian columns retreating in front of the German centre, or had he placed them directly under Von François, who was on the spot and able to take advantage of circumstances, he would have obtained better results.

No general can control more than a certain number of units, and the quicker these units move the smaller must be the number he tries to control.

Tactics of Mobile Forces.

A system of tactics suitable for the modern composite Mobile Force can only be evolved with time and experience. There are, however, many points which strike one at once. The German Cavalry, in their advance against Rennenkampf, suffered heavily by allowing themselves to become engaged in street fighting with the Russian Infantry. Street fighting has now become the duty of mechanical vehicles, and one can imagine co-operation between the two categories of mobile troops consisting in the mechanical vehicles clearing small towns and villages, by driving the defenders in such a direction that they can be intercepted by the mounted men as they emerge from the houses, or by isolating them in their houses until the arrival of Infantry in mechanical vehicles. Mechanical vehicles can draw fire with greater impunity than mounted men, and they will thus be employed to ascertain if doubtful points are occupied by the enemy or not. As feelers, both during movement and rest, and as supports or ambushes when operating with mounted men, the mechanical vehicles should be invaluable.

Great sympathy and understanding and constant practice in manœuvre together are necessary. Any tendency for either the mounted man or the mechanical vehicle man to draw apart and retire into his own shell must be rigorously checked if we are to get the best results in our next campaign.

Digitized by Google

THE CAPTURE OF THE MONT DES CATS OCTOBER, 1914

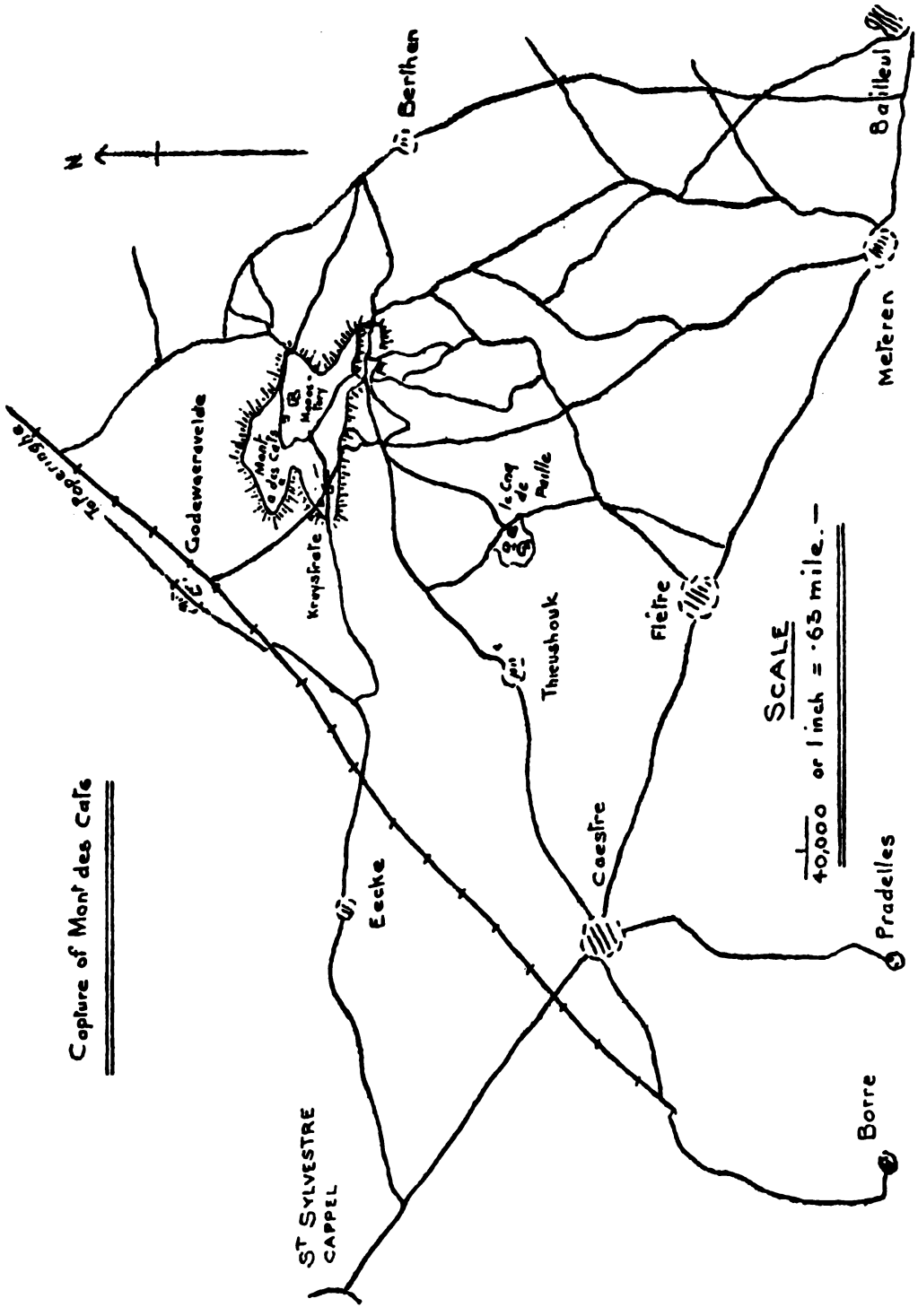
THE attack on the Mont des Cats by the 2nd Cavalry Division, under General Gough, on the 12th October, 1914, is a very useful example of cavalry work. It is, therefore, proposed to give a short account of the action and the lessons which it brought out at the time.

On the 11th October the Royal Scots Greys as well as some of the 1st Cavalry Division had a skirmish with enemy cavalry in the Forêt de Nieppe, and were later able to report cavalry patrols and infantry in the direction of Neuf Berquin and Vieux Berquin and on the high ground about Berthen.

The 2nd Cavalry Division spent the night in Morbecque, Hazebrouck, and Wallon Cappel. The 1st Cavalry Division was in the Forêt de Nieppe in touch with the right of the 2nd Cavalry Division. At 7 a.m. on the 12th the 2nd Cavalry Division moved north-east in two columns, directed in the first instance on Caestre and Eecke. These places were reached about 10.30, after overcoming slight opposition. A reconnoitering squadron of the 16th Lancers, which had been sent out at daybreak, had in the meantime reported that the enemy was apparently in strength on the high ground north of Meteren, with advanced detachments at Flêtre, and that he was also holding the Mont des Cats.

Orders were accordingly issued for the 3rd Cavalry Brigade to attack the last-named hill from the south-west and for the 5th Cavalry Brigade to co-operate from the direction of Godewaersvelde, which had been reported clear.

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

The Mont des Cats, rising abruptly from the Flanders plain and crowned by a large monastery, is a conspicuous landmark for many miles round, and is the westernmost, as well as the highest, of a succession of more or less isolated hills which extend eastward to Mont Kemmel. A complicated feature with steep sides and many deep re-entrants, its lower slopes clothed with enclosures and small buildings and intersected by narrow lanes, it was a formidable object to attack; but its possession was essential before any further advance could be undertaken. Owing to the difficult nature of the ground, and also to the fact that our right flank was threatened by the enemy's guns and infantry near Meteren, the preparations took some time to make.

A methodical dismounted attack was made by the 16th Lancers, covered by their machine guns and D Battery R.H.A., which performed particularly valuable service in preventing a strong reinforcement of Uhlans from reaching the position. The 4th Hussars was allotted the *rôle* of right flank guard in the direction of Fontaine Houck. Of the 5th Cavalry Brigade, E Battery shelled most effectively groups of the enemy who could be seen moving on the ridge north-east of the monastery, and the Greys and 20th Hussars carried out a subsidiary attack from the north-west. The left flank of this brigade was made safe by a squadron of 20th Hussars posted at the cross roads on the Franco-Belgian frontier at Beauvoorde. By 5 p.m. the 16th Lancers had driven the enemy from the hill and were in occupation of the monastery. Here they found many German wounded, amongst them Prince Max of Hesse, a near relation to our own Royal Family, who shortly afterwards died from the effect of a gunshot wound.

The complicated nature of the country as well as the enterprising character of our cavalry subalterns, is shown by the fact that during the action an officers' patrol of the 20th Hussars rode completely round the hill, bringing back valuable

Digitized by Google

information. The 3rd Cavalry Brigade spent the night on the hill, and the 5th Cavalry Brigade at Godewaersvelde. The enemy were still in Berthen, and on the right the 1st Cavalry Division, which had met with strong opposition during the day, had reached the line Vieux Berquin—Strazeele. Behind the 2nd Cavalry Division, the Third Corps had arrived at Hazebrouck.

It will be seen that this little action illustrated many details of cavalry work, viz. :—

1. Reconnaissance, action of reconnoitering squadron, its march to a selected point, then fanning out its patrols and subsequent close reconnaissance of a position.

2. Protection. Action of advanced and flank guards, driving in small hostile parties, *liaison* with neighbouring units, protecting the flank of an attack.

3. Horse artillery and machine guns covering cavalry movement.

4. Intelligent use of covered approach and dead ground so as to enable cavalry to ride right up to its fire position.

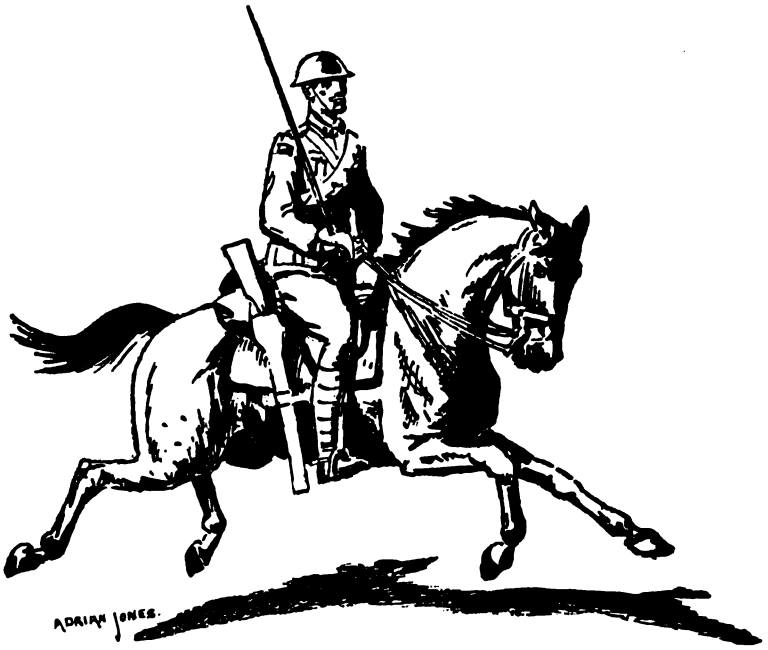
5. Development of fire superiority.

6. The ineffectiveness of enemy's guns against a moving target.

The holding of the Mont des Cats by the Germans was part of a general scheme to delay the advance of the British until reinforcements came up, and now that we know both sides of the story, it is only fair to say that they carried out their *rôle* in a successful manner. The action of the 2nd Cavalry Division was well carried out, but the whole operation took a long time, viz., from 10,30, when definite information was obtained as to the situation, until 5 p.m., when the position was finally occupied, and in view of the fact that early information was received that Godewaersvelde was clear of the enemy, it would seem that the operation might have been very much speeded up by a rapid movement in force

Digitized by Google

round the western flank. The German line of retreat would have been threatened, and although the Mont des Cats was an exceedingly strong position to hold, its weakness lay in the difficulty to get away from it, once the rear was threatened. It is easy, however, to be wise after the event. The feature of the operation is that General Gough made up his mind rapidly, issued his orders, and that the division carried out the operation exactly as he had planned it. By the capture of the Mont des Cats on the 12th October the whole line held by the Germans was sent rapidly back, the inhabitants testified on the following day to the pace at which they had retreated, and it was not till they reached the line of the river Lys that they were able to make anything like a formidable stand.



Digitized by Google

From an oil painting by Sir R. Ker Porter, the property of
The Marquess Curzon of Kedleston, K.G., G.C.S.I., G.C.I.E.

Believed to be the portrait
of
LIEUT.-COLONEL FRANCIS A. DANIELL,
Body Guard of the Governor-General of India, circa 1806, which he commanded 1802-06.

[Suggestions as to the subject of this portrait will be welcomed.]

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A TIGER HUNT IN THE CENTRAL PROVINCES

THE following account of a tiger hunt was sent home by Captain R. Cazalet, who served with the Indian Cavalry during the war and is now employed on the Jodhpur Railway.

'About the middle of March, when E. got his orders for home on sick leave, the manager gave out that there would be no "month's leave" for me this hot weather. I therefore started wondering whether I could get a little "casual" leave somewhere, before he went. R. came to the rescue with the suggestion that I should go down to a tiger jungle in the C.P., near where he had been buying sleepers.

'Wires were sent to M..... K....., a large sleeper contractor in that part of the world, who knew the jungle well, to get me a good "Block," and I left Jodhpur by the evening train.

'After a tedious journey, I got to Jubblepur on the first morning, where I met Govind, the son of the contractor, and we went on to his home at Nainpur, which we reached at six in the evening. He told me that arrangements had been made for two blocks, one on the road near a Dak bungalow, where I could easily go by motor, and the other 22 miles by cutcha road from a small wayside station. I decided on the more inaccessible place, and wanted to be off the next day; that could not be, however, as a man had to be sent on to engage carts, and arrangements had to be made for provisions, etc., there being no accommodation in the place selected.

Digitized by Google

'Govind's cousin, Prag Narain, a partner in the firm, and a keen shikari, was away on business, but as soon as he returned, would come out and join me. In the meantime, an Anglo-Indian clerk called Rodrigs, and the son of the local policeman, Zahir, would accompany me to see that everything was all right.

'The morning of the 3rd saw us start off, two hours in the little narrow-gauge train to P....., where we transferred to bullock carts; fortunately I had said that I liked riding, so a pony had been brought for me. We were off about 11 o'clock, a long slow march with several halts, getting nearer and nearer the jungle. We got to G....., a little village surrounded with wooded hills, about six in the evening. Two woodman's huts had been vacated and got ready for us, and three young buffaloes had been collected ready for tying up as bait for the tiger. We soon learnt that there were at least four tigers in the vicinity, one a man-eater, which had taken a boy two days before we arrived.

'The next day, there being no report of a kill, we decided to beat a neighbouring hill, which was said to be a favourite resort of a tiger. The local landowner came and called on us, but as his nephew was sick, could not accompany us; however, he made arrangements for his men to turn out as beaters, and, accompanied by another landowner from the neighbourhood, whom we called Khan Sahib, we set out about mid-day.

'There were about six self-called shikaris, who each gave his advice in a loud voice, and there was a good deal of argument and fuss, but eventually a machan was built in a high tree for me, and another a little way off to the left rear for Rodrigs. The latter was armed with a Mauser rifle, in which I subsequently discovered he was proposing to fire rimless cartridges. Zahir had a very old 12-bore, of which only one barrel would function, and he asked me if I minded his sitting in a tree in the rear, where he could watch the proceedings.

Digitized by Google

'The beat started about a mile away, and soon several animals were on foot. I noticed sambhar, barking deer and pig, but no tiger. When the beat came up, several of the men were very excited, and said they had seen a large tiger break back over the hill. This seemed quite likely, considering the fuss and noise there had been erecting the machans. As it was then too late to do any more that day, I enquired where the tiger was likely to go to and lie up the next day, and sent two men to make machans at once, so that he would not be disturbed the following day, before we arrived.

'When we got back to camp, Prag Narain turned up, and we talked tiger and discussed plans well into the night.

'The next day we decided to beat the island, a favourite place for tiger, as I had already arranged machans; but our intention of an early start was frustrated by the men, who showed great disinclination to turn out till they had had their mid-day food. However, we were on the way by about 11 o'clock, and were soon up in our respective trees. The place was not very big and the beat did not take long. Nothing came our way. Afterwards some cart drivers came up and said they had seen a tigress and two cubs go away on the far side towards the other river.

'We hurried along and had two more beats at the other river, but saw no sign.

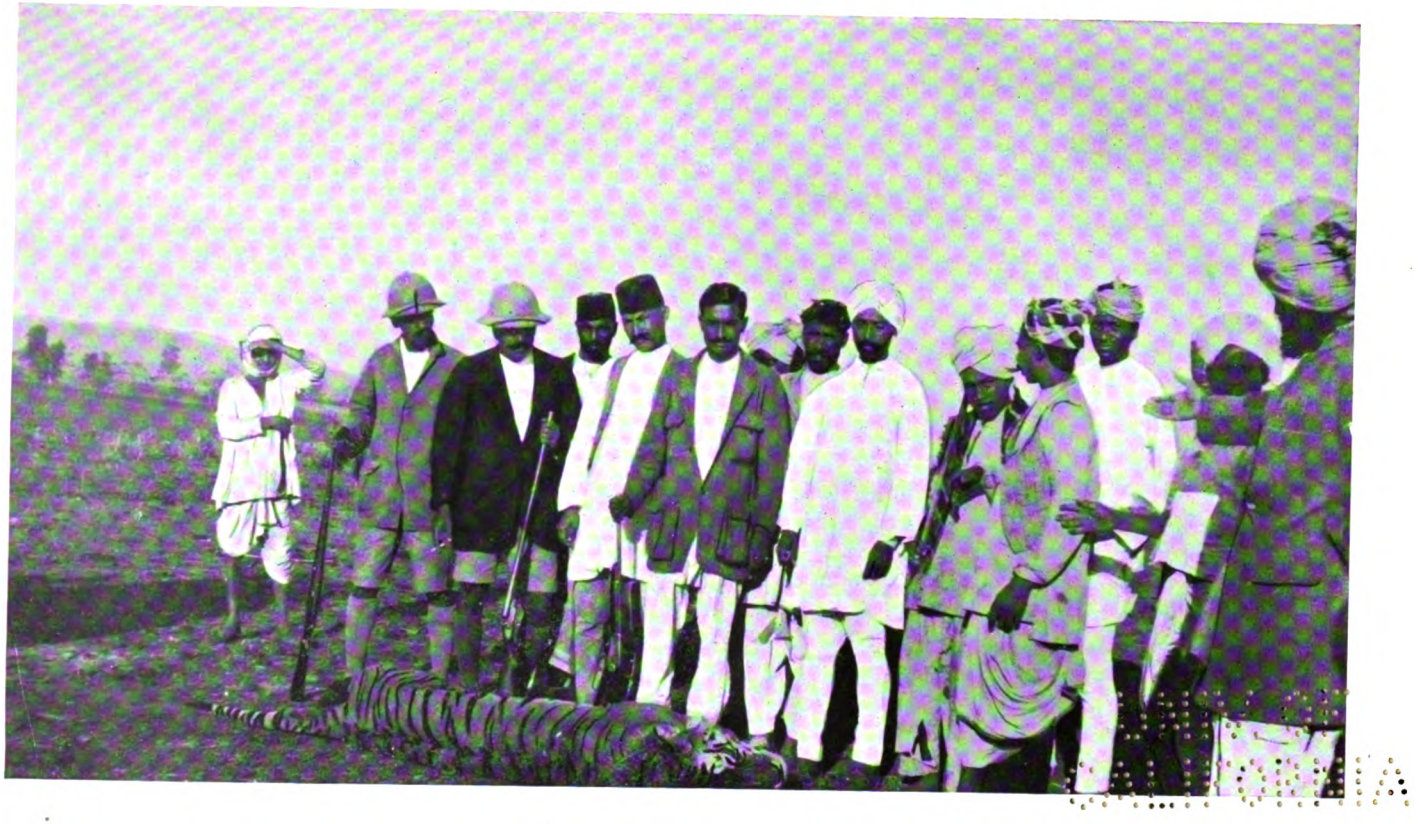
'The third day we thought we would go and shoot a sambhar, and hope for news of a kill in the further jungle, as we had disturbed the vicinity. This time both landowners turned out, and we had a lot of men. They decided to beat a large hill over a mile long. We were carefully posted on the most uncomfortable trees without machans, and the beat started. After waiting about 1½ hours the beat approached, but owing to the long beat and the large number of men, they did not keep anything like a line, and several cheetah and sambhar got surrounded by beaters and broke away. Two days later we learned there had been a tiger

Digitized by Google

also in the beat, but they had not told us about it as it was getting late, and they did not want to beat again that day. A Forest Officer, who was passing, came in to call on us, and told of a tiger about five miles away, which he thought we might have a chance of getting. So we decided to go there early the following day. About 12 o'clock that night we were woken up by a man from the village shouting that the man-eater had come into the village and was then carrying off an old woman. Prag Narain and I wandered off with a hurricane lamp and our rifles at full cock to the village. From the last house on the far side frightful shouts were coming. We reassured the occupant, an old woman, who eventually managed to tell us that she had been woken up by something pushing at the door, which she was sure was a tiger. We suggested that it was probably one of her many admirers, and returned to bed. An hour or so later, one of the camp followers, dreaming of tiger, woke up yelling and had us all up again. Later the same night, a shower of rain made us drag our beds into the hut.

'We were up at sunrise, and soon started off on the five-mile walk to the far jungle, collecting men from the various villages we passed on the way. We found an old woodman, who said very little but knew a lot, and got him to point out the place where the tiger usually lay up and to post us in good positions. As I had suspicions of the beaters, I got into a place where I could watch the beat, and soon saw that when the beaters got to a place where they thought the tiger was lying, they opened out and gave a wide berth on either side. I pointed this out to the old shikari, and he said that in the next beat he would go with the beaters and turn the tiger out. So on the way home we beat the hill we had beaten the first day. They said that if he was anywhere he would be in the bottom of a little valley, which was full of thick bushes, and that we should sit in the machans we had previously occupied. I still mistrusted the beaters in spite of the old man's assurance,

Digitized by Google



A TIGER HUNT IN THE CENTRAL PROVINCES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

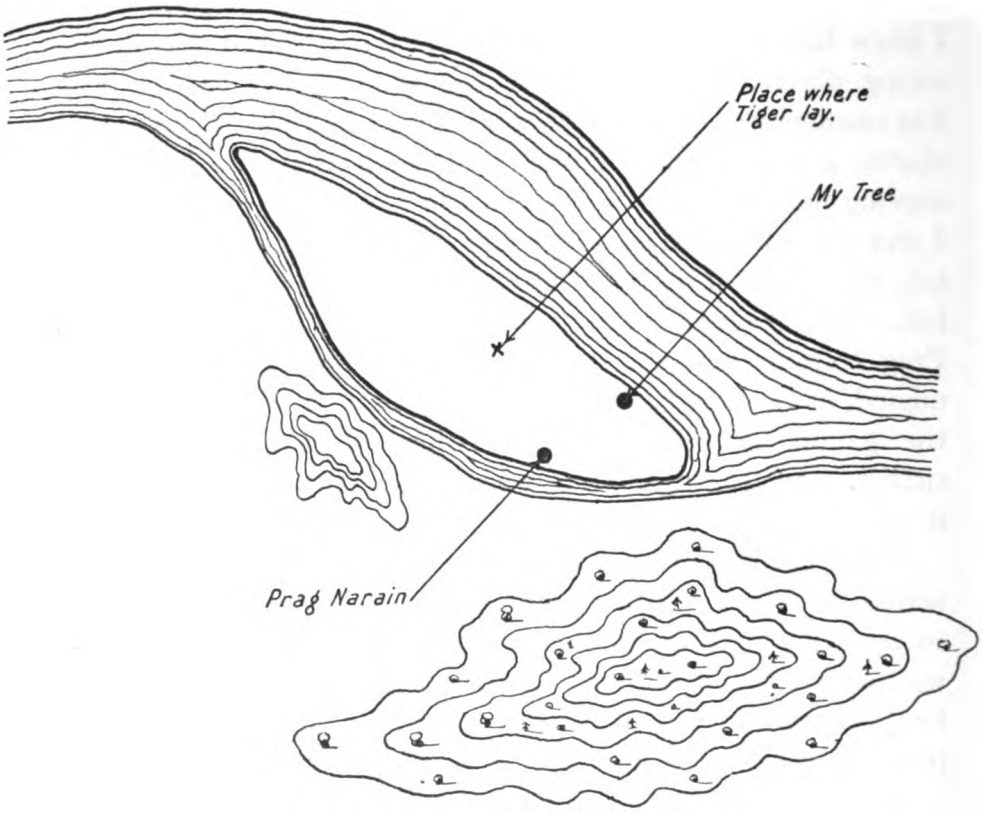
so I crept up and sat on the steep side of the valley, about 50 yards from the place where the tiger was supposed to be, thinking that I should be able to get a shot whichever way he went. Prag Narain occupied a similar position a little further along. Soon the beat started on the far side of the hill, and then I heard a man clap his hands once or twice at the head of the valley, just above the lie of the tiger. Then I knew that the old man knew his job, and that I was in the wrong place. However, it was too late to move as the beat was coming on. Then my man, whom I had put up in a tree above, got very excited and whispered that the tiger was moving along through the bushes in front of me. And there I was with the tiger passing within 50 yards of me and I could not see him! I jumped up. I ran along the side of the hill. I fell down over some loose stones and nearly cried. Prag Narain then saw the tiger and had a shot, but I think missed, as I heard his bullet ricochet. It then passed at the gallop under the machan where I should have been sitting, and Rodrigs, who was there, let off his rifle and it jammed.

'The men then said that it would go over the hills and across the river into the next hill, and that if we could get to the river first we would have a chance at it crossing. So we hurried round and sat on the bank of the river till dark, but saw no sign. I was very depressed, as I had to start home early the next morning, empty-handed.

'We were up early and got the carts off with the kit before seven; I then got on the pony, and Prag Narain in a trotting bullock cart, to follow. We had gone a mile or more, when the old man caught us and said that a buffalo had been killed in the night and dragged towards the island, he himself was certain that the tiger was there. That was good enough for me; off went a man to stop the carts and bring them back; off went another to collect beaters, while we sat in the nearest village and waited. As the water was low at that time of year

Digitized by Google

the island was joined to the mainland on one side; it was about 300 yards long and 150 wide. Water on one side, a dry bed bordered by a rocky ridge on the other, and the jungle-covered hill joining it at the top. The island itself was covered with very thick green bushes and a few flood-stunted trees.



'The old shikari took Prag Narain and myself right round and we waded across the river and got quietly into the trees in the places shown. Zahir was put near the small hill as a stop, he had his old 12-bore to keep his courage up. The beat started at the opposite end of the island at about 12 o'clock. Soon after the start I heard a shot and a tremendous roar from the tiger in the direction of the small hill. I said to myself, "My last chance, and the other fellow

Digitized by Google

has shot it." Soon followed more shouts and more roars, and I gathered that the tiger had gone back into the thick stuff of the island. A man on the top of a tree on the high hill behind us then started yelling to the beaters to climb up trees, as the tiger was wounded. Men soon began to show in the sky, swaying in the thin branches of the tallest trees. The Khan Sahib was with the beat, with his old Winchester rifle; he did not climb so fast as the others, and I saw him slowly appear with his gun. The tiger spotted him also, for I heard a great roar and saw an enormous paw flash past his legs; he, however, coolly hung by one hand and had a shot at it with the other. Then all was quiet for a bit. Whenever anyone shouted or fired the tiger would roar and charge about in the thick bushes out of sight. Presently, by the noises I judged he was about 100 yards in front of my tree; so, standing on my branch to get a better view, I got Prag to have a shot into the bushes.

'With more roars he dashed down to the water's edge in front of me and sprang up on the stump of a tree, biting and tearing it with his claws; his back and shoulders were just visible through the branches, and, leaning well forward so that the kick would not knock me out of the tree, I had a shot with my big rifle. He fell back off the tree and went again into the thick, this time a little nearer my tree. An old man on a tree on the other side of the water now said that he could see him, that I had hit him, and that he was badly wounded. I told the old man to come across to me, as I could not climb down the tree with the rifle, and I did not want to leave it behind. He came; but, before getting down, I got him to climb another tree a little to my front, to see if he could see anything from there. We more or less located the position in which the tiger was lying; and then I climbed down, after four hours in the hot sun on a bare branch.

'Din Mahomed then appeared on the far side with a bottle of beer and bread and cheese; I sent the old man to fetch

Digitized by Google

Prag Narain, and we discussed the beer and the tiger; we had had nothing since tea at six in the morning.

'It turned out that Prag had not been able to get a shot, but that Zahir had seen the tiger passing about eighty yards away and had given it a charge of buckshot, with the idea of turning it to us; then he had given it a few more. The general idea was that Zahir could not have done it any damage, only made it angry, but that my big bullet had probably taken effect; this was all the more likely, as, since I had shot, he had stayed in more or less the same place and had not made so much noise. The beaters were getting anxious, as they did not dare come down, and if we did not get him they would have to stay in their trees all night, and they didn't want to.

'P. and I then decided that if we went together along the water edge we could probably get a sight of him at close quarters, and, being wounded, we could stop him by firing together if he charged out. We posted men in every convenient tree to watch and then crept along the water edge and cautiously peeped over the bank into the bushes, but could see nothing.

'The men were very excited and kept calling to us to climb trees. There was a little tree near us and I told Prag to climb that and see if he could look down on him. We were then about thirty yards away from the lair, but there was a deep wide ditch between him and me, which gave me confidence.

'No sign, no sound. I then collected a few stones from the river and went to the end of the ditch and let him have one; a roar and out he dashed—fortunately at right angles to my approach and up to the top of the island. I had a snap shot as he passed, but no result. On reaching the open at the end, he turned and came galloping back, passing me again. This time, however, I got him through the neck, and he went over like a rabbit shot crossing a ride.

'As soon as the news went out that he was dead, men

Digitized by Google

sprang up from all sides, and we soon had him out in the open to examine.

'We found two buckshot pellets, one on the ribs and the other near the root of the tail. The bullet the Khan Sahib had fired as he was climbing the tree had passed through the fleshy part of the cheek and done no damage; my other two shots had missed.

'The tiger was unanimously awarded to me; although Zahir had drawn first blood, he had only made it angry. The fact of the bushes being so thick had prevented me seeing the tiger, but they had also prevented him seeing me, which was lucky. Still, I have great faith in my big rifle.

'It was then nearly dark; the homeward procession was triumphal: all the villages turned out, the women with lights on their heads, singing and dancing. I found I had to give everyone bakhshish.

'As it was then too late to skin, and we had to start early the next day to catch the 2 o'clcok train, we transported him whole to Nainpur. The station master made rather a fuss about booking it. I said it was my personal luggage; but that wouldn't do. Eventually it was classed as Wild Animals Dead and booked at full parcels rate. I got them to skin it in Nainpur and send the skin off to the Army and Navy in Bombay, while I got the evening train for home.

'I think the title of this should be "How not to go Tiger Shooting"'

Digitized by Google

THE BELGIAN CAVALRY SCHOOL

THE Equitation School of the Belgian Army was founded at Ypres in 1840, a few years after Belgium achieved independence.

There were originally three groups of buildings: the principal block, in which the *personnel* lived, had been an old Dominican Convent; the second, in a spot called the 'Arsenal,' part of Vauban's defence works, contained the riding school and *manège*; here all school work, training of chargers and *haute école* were performed, and show jumping fences were erected. The third block, an ancient Capuchin chapel, had been transformed into a gymnasium, with a jump course and a large *manège* attached.

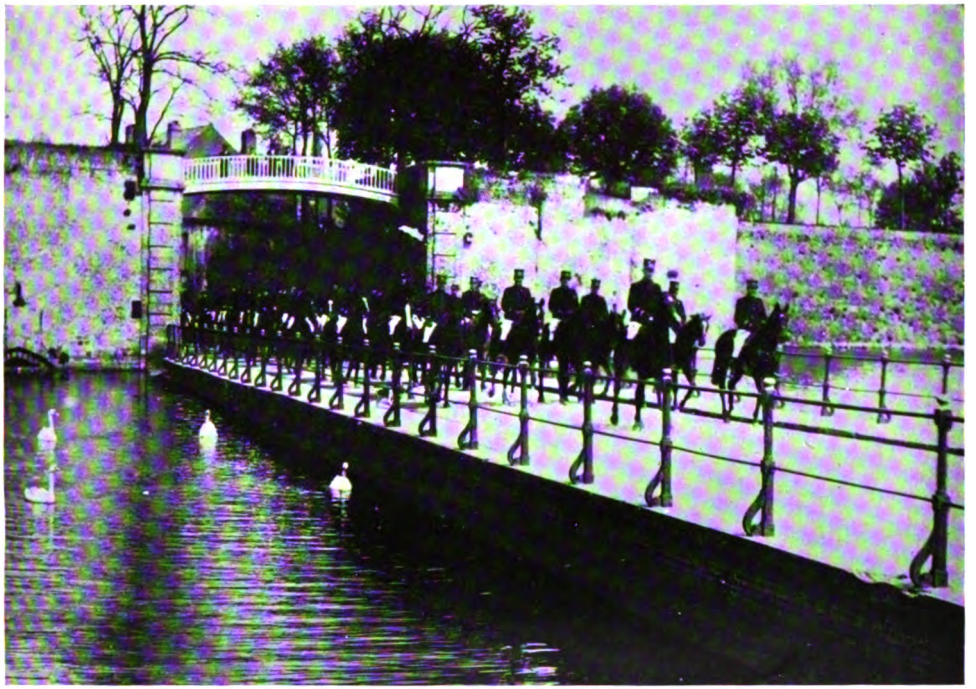
There were racecourses both for jumpers and on the flat at Zonnebeke.

Up to 1914 the School was organised into six divisions; the courses lasted 10 months. The First Division consisted of officer instructors, officers who had left the Ecole Militaire and had already done a course as pupil officers, and Officers from units who had only done a course as N.C.O.s. The Second Division consisted of officer pupils, officers who had been through the Ecole Militaire and officers from units who had never done a course as N.C.O.s. The Third Division consisted of N.C.O.s of the instructional staff. The Fourth and Fifth Divisions consisted of non-commissioned officers under instruction. The Sixth Division consisted of farrier sergeants doing a veterinary and shoeing course.

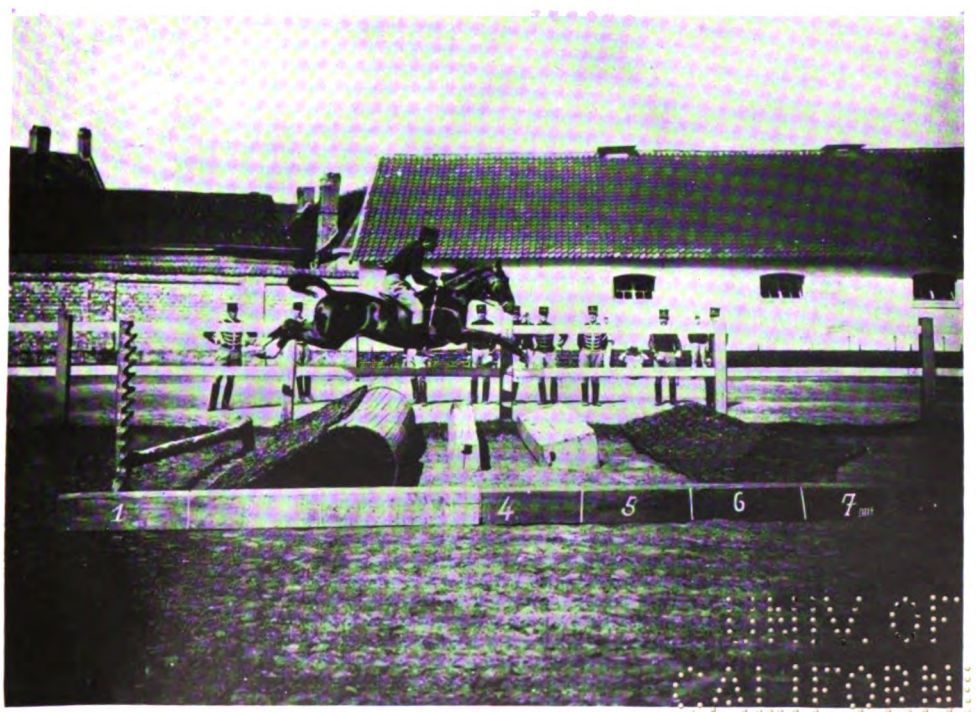
There was also a six months' course for infantry officers of the General Staff.

In 1914 the School changed its name to 'Cavalry School' and was in the course of reorganisation on more modern lines when the War broke out.

Digitized by Google

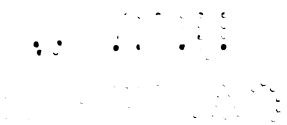


THE EQUITATION SCHOOL AT YPRES. LEAVING THE LILLE GATE.



A JUMP AT THE ARSENAL.

UNIV. OF CALIFORNIA
Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

MAIWAND

A Cavalry Study of 'How not to do it'

By Lieutenant-Colonel E. B. Maunsell

Part I.

The incidents leading up to the Maiwand disaster furnish an interesting study of the employment of cavalry attached to a small force of all arms. Future small wars in which the British Army may be called upon to take part will, in all probability, produce similar situations.

In this particular campaign there would have been every possibility of avoiding the disaster had the unfortunate G.O.C. made proper use of his mounted troops.

It is true that one particular feature, leading to the *débâcle*, was the fact that there did not exist any properly organised intelligence service under the military authorities. The whole was under the Political Officer, who acted independently of the General. To put it mildly, its nature was sketchy.

There were extraordinary divergencies, even in topographical matters, between political intelligence reports and the results of cavalry reconnaissances.

Reliable contemporary accounts, moreover, indicate that the Political Officer habitually pooh-poohed reports brought in by the cavalry.

In this connection, however, it must be borne in mind that most of these reports were brought in by officers of only some four years' service or so, while the recipients were

Digitized by Google

probably well-advanced in years according to our present-day standards—for the passion the Indian authorities had for keeping men in positions for which they were too old, still existed in the early eighties. An officer of four years' service would have been in those days a mere child to the senior officers, and his reports might in many cases have been treated accordingly.

The fact remains, however, that if the G.O.C. had only known how to employ his cavalry, he might quite possibly have averted disaster.

The events leading to the battle were, briefly, as follows :— On July 2, 1880, the following troops were detailed to march from Kandahar to Girishk, on the Helmund, to look out for Ayub Khan, who was advancing from Herat, and to support some Afghan levies under an official appointed by the British, termed the Wali :—

Cavalry Brigade—

3rd Sind Horse, 200 sabres.
3rd Bombay Light Cavalry, 300 sabres.
"E" By. R.H.A.
66th Foot.
1st Grenadiers, Bombay Infantry.
30th Bombay Infantry.

On the approach of the British force, the Wali's troops mutinied and made off towards Herat.

The Cavalry followed them up, but the mutineers got away, leaving their guns and camp equipment.

In view of the fact that the Helmund was very low and by now passable everywhere, and that there was a desert 25 miles wide in his rear, the G.O.C. fell back on July 15 to Khushk i Nakhud, where he could block the main Kandahar route from Girishk directly, and that *viâ* Maiwand indirectly. The area was also a good one for supply. There were at that time no signs of any Afghan troops within 30 miles of the

Digitized by Google

Helmund, but advanced bodies of Horse arrived there on the 17th.

By July 20 the Afghan main body was along the line of that river between Haiderabad and Girishk.

The Political estimate of Ayub's strength was about 1,500 regular cavalry, 5,000 regular infantry and 30 guns, besides tribesmen, mounted and dismounted, totalling some 15,000. This estimate could only be given very roughly, owing to the fact that spies could not get through the screen of hostile tribesmen and Afghan Horse. The inhabitants, moreover, had become more and more disinclined to talk as Ayub got closer.

To enable the G.O.C. to forestall Ayub, should the latter move on Kandahar by a track other than the direct Khushk i Nakhud route, it was essential to have information of the route by which Ayub was moving at least eight hours before, so as to be able to get on the move in time.

It was not reasonable to count on this information arriving soon enough if espionage was the principal means of obtaining intelligence. Reconnaissance was the only method.

The method of despatching these reconnaissances, therefore, merits attention.

The custom was for a patrol of forty sabres to visit Sangbar, 16 miles to the front, daily, returning at nightfall. Patrols, probably of similar strengths, visited, in like manner, Garmab and Band i Taimur, 12 miles to the North and South, respectively.

The width of front reconnoitred daily was thus 25 miles, with a distance of 15 miles in the enemy's direction. To despatch patrols of such low strength such a long distance away from support was not the best way of overawing the inhabitants so as to induce them to talk. Nor was it calculated to foster that spirit of enterprise, so essential to good reconnaissance, that well-supported detachments would have had.

Furthermore, these weak parties could hardly be expected

Digitized by Google

to make prisoners of the well-mounted Afghan Horse, for, under the stress of hard work in a desert country on indifferent rations and in extreme heat the horses wore out rapidly—and prisoners were badly wanted.

A particular point which required clearing up was whether the Afghan Horse which crossed the Helmund on July 22 belonged to an Afghan Sirdar called the Luinab, for this sirdar was known to be acting independently of Ayub. The best manner of doing so was to get some prisoners.

The first contact occurred on July 23, about 8 miles from the British camp at Khushk i Nakhud, just as the Sangbar patrol under Lieutenant J. Monteith, Sind Horse—an officer subsequently well known in the Bombay Cavalry—was starting out.

About five hundred regular Afghan Horse were encountered. Some idea of the quality of these Afghan troopers may be gauged from the fact that, although the country was absolutely open and that they were well mounted, no attempt was made to rush the small party, which held its ground with carbine fire.

Two squadrons and a couple of guns, in camp, turned out to support Monteith, and the Afghans made off.

Two days later, on July 25, however, it is no matter of surprise to read that a portion of the Sangbar patrol, furnished by the Sind Horse, was overwhelmed by Afghans just outside that place, owing to the horses being too exhausted to enable the men to get away. A recurrence of such incidents might have gravely affected the *morale* of the cavalry—we know that similar occurrences did in the early days in Mesopotamia.

The same day a reconnaissance under Lieutenant Smith, Sind Horse, elicited the information that enemy patrols had reached Garmab, 7 miles from Maiwand, and that Ayub was expected at the latter place on the 27th—a report which turned out to be correct.

Had the G.O.C. acted on this, he would have forestalled

Digitized by Google

Ayub; but the attitude of the Political Officer towards all cavalry reconnaissances doubtless caused the G.O.C. to ignore it.

On July 26, the Political Officer received reports confirming Ayub's probable move on Maiwand, but indicating that, if our troops marched on the 27th, they would forestall Ayub by at least a day.

The G.O.C. was evidently still under the impression that a large body of Afghan Horse reported at Garmab were the Luinab's men and not Ayub's—a point which might, as said before, have been cleared up by prisoners.

He accordingly marched on the 27th on Maiwand—and we know the result.

It is suggested that by pushing the cavalry brigade, plus a couple of horse guns, forward to the main junction of the Afghan line of advance at Sangbar, and letting it remain there, a suitable centre from which short-distance, but none the less quite effective, reconnaissances could be despatched would have been secured.

The strength of the detachment would have overawed the inhabitants and might have made them talk, prisoners might have been taken, and horseflesh would have been saved.

The Political Officer would, furthermore, be more reluctant to scoff at results of reconnaissances brought in by the Cavalry Brigadier than he was at those of young officers.

An objection may be raised that this was a dangerous detachment. Now, all reconnaissances are detachments, and to strew them over a front of 25 miles, as was done, is far more risky than to concentrate them on some important objective. With a weak force of cavalry it is impossible to reconnoitre in every direction simultaneously, and it is up to the commander of the force, not the cavalry commander, to make up his mind definitely in which direction he will make his main effort.

Taking into consideration the fact that two detached

Digitized by Google

squadrons of the Sind Horse had engaged and routed 1,500 tribesmen, killing large numbers, the previous year in the same neighbourhood, and the pusillanimous conduct of the Afghan Horse when opposed to Lieutenant Monteith's forty sabres, the danger of a mobile detachment like the one suggested being overwhelmed was not great. The country on three sides of Sangbar was open for miles, and it would have been a very difficult matter for any force to approach unseen.

The line of advance *viâ* Band i Talmur was an unlikely one owing to supply, while the Mahmund Pass meant a long *détour*, news of which, if attempted, might be given away by the inhabitants.

The Sangbar route would, moreover, be watched at night. The dominating factor was, however, that reports from Sangbar would arrive in ample time to enable the British to get on the move and forestall Ayub at Maiwand, if necessary.

It is a natural consequence of a disaster that some scapegoat or scapegoats be found, and among them were the cavalry, who were blamed for not furnishing information.

It is a fact well known to officers who care to study war that indifferent cavalry, given some definite task to do, will produce better results than first class *personnel* given but a vague mission.

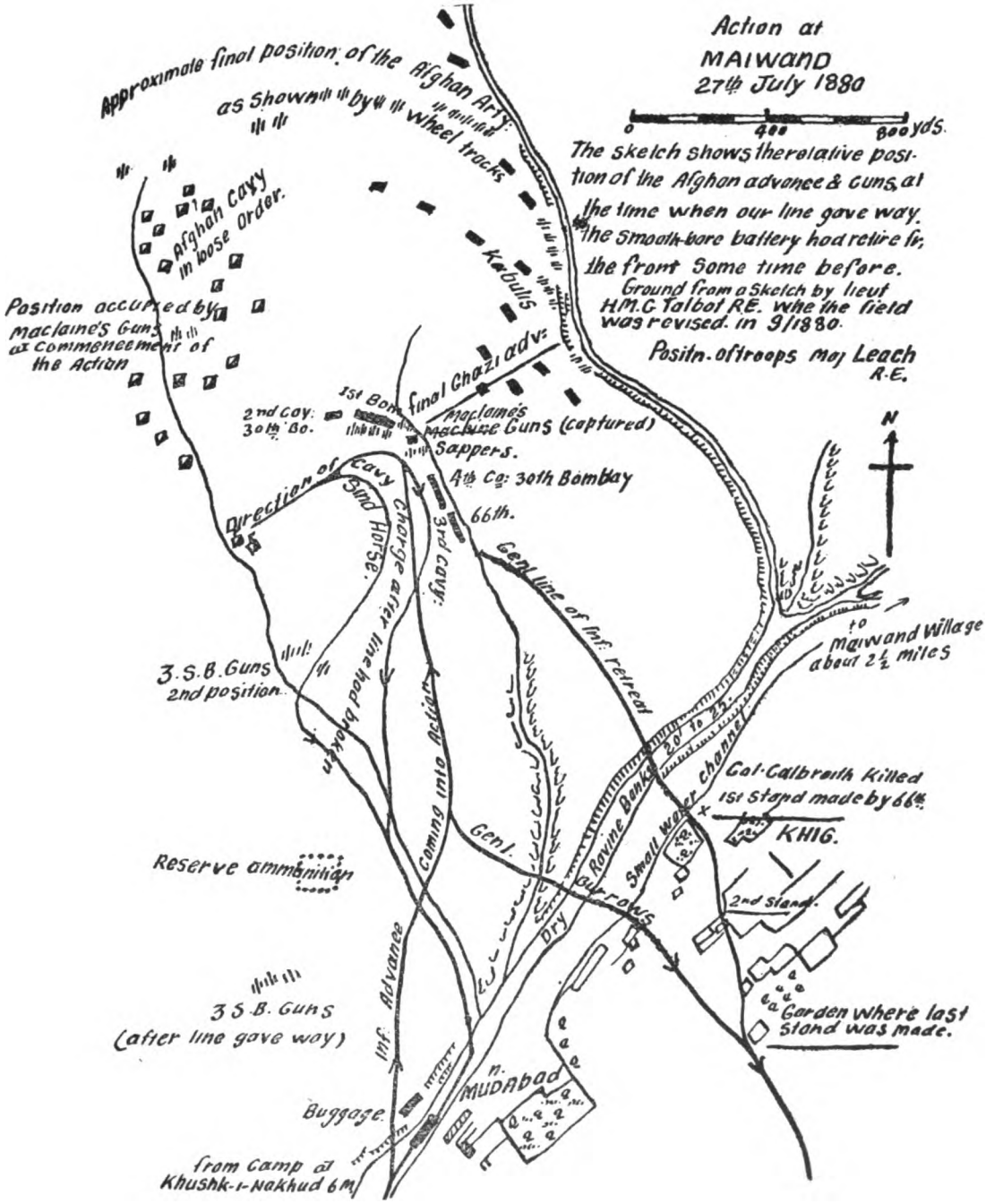
The blame in this case rests on the Force Commander primarily and secondly on the Cavalry Brigadier. To blame the unfortunate troops, as was done, was absurd. 'A commander despatching a reconnaissance will obtain the information he deserves.'

Under present day conditions the G.O.C. would in all probability have the assistance of some aeroplanes and probably some armoured cars.

The country is well suited to air reconnaissance, as there are but few trees and landing grounds are everywhere.

Ayub would have had considerable difficulty in concealing his indifferently disciplined troops, and an advance by day

Digitized by Google


Action at
MAIWAND
27th July 1880
0 400 800 yds.
The sketch shows the relative position of the Afghan advance & Guns, at the time when our line gave way. The Smooth-bore battery had retire fr. the front some time before.
Ground from a Sketch by lieut H.M.C. Talbot R.E. who the field was revised. in 9/1880.
Positn. of troops Maj Leach R.E.
Approximate final position of the Afghan Artly as Shown by Wheel tracks
Afghan Cavy in loose Order.
Kabulis
Position occupied by Maclaine's Guns at Commencement of the Action
final Ghazi advc
2nd Coy. 30th Bo.
1st Bom
Maclaine's Macluse Guns (captured)
Sappers.
4th Co: 30th Bombay
66th.
3rd Cavy.
Sind Horse.
Charge after line had broken
Direction of Cavy
Genl line of Inf. retreat
N
to Maiwand Village about 2½ miles
3.S.B. Guns 2nd position
Coming into Action
Small water channel
Ravine Bank 20 to 25.
Col. Calbraith Killed
1st Stand made by 66th
KHIG.
2nd Stand.
Reserve ammunition
Genl.
Dry Watercourse
Inf. Advance
3 S.B. Guns (after line gave way)
Garden where last Stand was made.
Buggage
n. MUDABAD
from Camp at Khushk-i-Nakhud 6 M

Digitized by Google

would be in full view. His only chance would be a night advance.

If the country is anything like the normal Baluchistan country, as it is supposed to be, armoured cars would be of considerable value over the routes some three or four miles from the foothills, viz., the Band i Taimur route, the Khushk i Nakhud—Yakchal route and the Khushk i Nakhud —Sangbar route.

The Maiwand—Garmab—Sangbar route would, in all probability, be broken up with water cuts and, close to villages, with flooded fields. Considerable saving in horseflesh would result and the Cavalry could be reserved to support the cars and for those reconnaissances where identifications and prisoners were wanted. It is probable, however, that aeroplanes and armoured cars would not have much moral effect unless in very large numbers indeed. Armoured cars, moreover, as judged from Mesopotamian experience, have a habit of getting into trouble, and to expect them to supplant cavalry even in a very open country like this is ridiculous. In the intensely hot weather, again, their crews would find life almost unbearable.

The suggestion that the cavalry brigade be pushed forward to Sangbar would apply with equal force to the present day. With the great fire-power possessed nowadays there would be even less likelihood of the detachment being overwhelmed.

Improved means of signalling would, in addition, be available if trouble occurred.

Part II.

The Force was to move at 04·30, but did not get clear of the ground till nearly 07·30, encumbered by a very unwieldy baggage.

The leading cavalry, the 3rd Bombay Cavalry, were not much more than half a mile ahead, the Sind Horse furnished the flank and rear guards, all not more than half a mile out.

Digitized by Google

The country was very open, and there would have been but little risk in pushing the cavalry three or four miles out. In view of the fact that the object was to forestall Ayub at Maiwand or strike him *en route* there, the proper use would appear to be to have pushed all the cavalry not immediately required for local patrolling—say the whole Brigade, less one squadron, plus a couple of horse guns—ahead to secure the place.

About 200 or 300 ghazis were reported to be there, and Afghan Horse, in strength, at Garmab; but our cavalry should have found but little difficulty in coping with them. It was intensely hot, and the unfortunate infantry marched in a most fatiguing formation.

There were constant halts to get the transport together. About three hours after the start—that is, about 10.00—a spy brought in information that Ayub's troops were in Maiwand in force.

The G.O.C. decided 'it was too late to go back and that the advance must continue.' What he proposed to do if he went back is not known.

Meanwhile the young British Officer with the vanguard reported he could see large bodies of troops moving across his front towards Maiwand. This was confirmed by the flank guard of the Sind Horse.

It is somewhat significant of the attitude towards young officers' reports that the vanguard commander was told first of all that he was creating false alarms, and it was only after the Cavalry Brigadier had himself looked through his glasses that this report was accepted.

This would be about 10.30.

The guns and cavalry were pushed forward and engaged hostile cavalry about a mile north of Mundabad.

The infantry meanwhile were suffering greatly from heat and thirst. They were, moreover, not a little fatigued owing to the unsuitable formation in which they had marched

Digitized by Google

Nevertheless they were hustled along after the cavalry without being given a chance of getting a drink at a stream which was crossed. This had a serious effect later. For some reason the infantry were halted in rear of the guns and lay down.

In the meantime, Ayub, emboldened by our delay to advance, brought up his artillery.

About noon the G.O.C. ordered the infantry to advance, which they did with the utmost steadiness.

As the fire grew hotter they were ordered to lie down, practically in a line with the horse battery.

This was the only effort at an advance.

In the meantime the cavalry, who had gone forward as escort to the guns, had remained close to them.

They were mixed up in a most extraordinary manner, three troops of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry and two troops of the 3rd Sind Horse being sandwiched in between each other and the guns, quite irrespective of regiments.

It is said that it was impossible to withdraw them as the Afghan Horse threatened to rush the guns.

This would be conceivable before the infantry came up, but not so afterwards.

The 30th Bombay Infantry were full of young recruits, and it has been stated in some quarters that a withdrawal of the cavalry from close to them might have upset them. The remainder of the cavalry were some three or four hundred yards to the left rear of the line.

The infantry lying down had a certain amount of cover, but the batteries and the cavalry were absolutely exposed.

Meanwhile the Afghans began to encircle the force, and attack the baggage, which was left close to Mundabad.

An examination of the ground some months after the battle showed that the position taken up, in absolutely open ground, had a nullah affording excellent cover—and one by which the Afghans brought up their artillery—running within 600 yards of the front.

Digitized by Google

Etching by Major Giles, Sind Horse.

LIFE AT THUL CHOTIALI. 2nd AFGHAN WAR, 1879-80.

Digitized by Google

TROOPER OF THE SIND HORSE, 1880.

Digitized by Google

A smaller nullah ran about the same distance round the left flank and rear.

The position was altogether as bad a one as could be imagined. A glance at the map will suffice.

Battery after battery of Ayub's guns came into action, and their fire was very accurate. Our artillery was unable to cope with it and the force found itself a focus of fire from almost a semi-circle of guns firing at ranges not exceeding 800 yards—the present equivalent of, say, 3,000 yards.

Afghan Horse swarmed round our left flank and harassed the baggage. As they were well mounted they could evade our troopers on their tired horses.

For the first two hours of the action at all events—say till 13.00—there is no reason to suppose that our infantry would have failed to respond to an order to advance, for until then their losses had been slight, the gunners and cavalry suffering most. Horses were coming down in every direction under the shelling, and it was computed that the 3rd Sind Horse must have lost some 80 horses out of 200 odd when the line went.

As the gun-fire began to tell, however, the unfortunate infantry, lying under a roasting sun and suffering severely from thirst and fatigue, must have begun to be affected as regards *morale*.

As regards the cavalry, the Cavalry Brigadier had directed a conglomeration of men of the 3rd Sind Horse and 3rd Bombay Cavalry, who had been posted towards the right flank, to charge a body of ghazis moving round that way.

The men had moved off to charge, a fact which in itself indicates that their *morale* was not yet affected, when he counterordered it. The men fell back to a position in rear of the centre of the infantry.

The Brigadier evidently made no attempt even then to sort out the troops of the two regiments and get them under

Digitized by Google

their own Officers in some order. The men still remained distributed by troops mixed up.

From a study of the operations, the Cavalry Brigadier would appear to have been absolutely devoid of initiative, though a brave man.

At somewhere about 15.00—that is, some four hours after the action began—a ghazi rush broke the left of the infantry and a panic spread along the line, the 66th alone remaining firm.

The general confusion of the battle makes things hard to follow, but this would seemingly have been the moment for the Cavalry Brigadier to act on his own, if ever. A counter-charge delivered at this moment might have saved things, provided it was delivered before the demoralised infantry had reached the cavalry.

As it was, the Brigadier waited until the G.O.C. came up to him and asked him to charge. By then the confusion was such that orders could not be heard. Ghazis and sepoys had got mixed up with the cavalry, who were in small parties. The numbers with the Brigadier did not exceed some 180 all told, consisting both of men of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry and 3rd Sind Horse. The rest of the cavalry was inextricably mixed up with the infantry and guns.

The men were, moreover, shaken by their four hours' passive exposure to artillery and musketry fire. To pretend that good European troops would not have been affected under similar circumstances would be absurd. It says much for them that they did charge, though not in the direction wanted. By this, the 1st Bombay Grenadiers were saved from utter destruction.

It might be imagined that it would have been a hopeless procedure to rally after a charge like this. Nevertheless the Brigadier did collect the men again. This fact should be noticed; for, with the stream of fugitives (including British troops) and the general demoralisation that existed, it would have been an easy thing to clear off with the rest.

Digitized by Google

The cavalry retired, moreover, at a walk.

As may be expected, it was the 66th Foot who held staunch and eventually saved things, in a measure, by their stand at Khig.

Nevertheless, the affair developed into a rout, though the cavalry retained their formation.

It had generally been believed that the G.O.C. had been killed, but it was not until the retreat had proceeded about two miles that he suddenly came up from the rear, riding behind the Woordie Major of the Sind Horse (both being on the same horse). About the same time three other British officers were brought in in the same way by men of the Sind Horse.

The Afghan pursuit petered out very soon, as the tribesmen were busy looting.

The demoralisation of the infantry was such that they would not even wait by some water, as they thought the Afghans too close.

On reaching the Khushk i Nakhud river, a troop of the Sind Horse held the left bank and covered the retirement until carriage had been found for most of the wounded.

During the retreat the rear of the guns was the last point protected, and the cavalry has been criticised for not remaining further to the rear, by which means many stragglers and wounded might have been saved.

Granting that it might have been difficult to induce the cavalry as a whole to charge again, there is much evidence to show that had any attempt been made to keep it further in rear it could have been done. From accounts of officers who were present it would seem that the unfortunate Force Commander had now lost his head and received no backing from the Cavalry Brigadier.

An opportunity to water the cavalry at Khushk i Nakhud was let slip.

Had this been taken, the rear of the infantry would have

Digitized by Google

been protected. The shakiness, which was accentuated by thirst, heat and fatigue, would have quite possibly calmed down, and many men might have been saved.

In particular, it would appear that no attempt was made to keep the cavalry behind at Hauz i Hadat, where the exhausted stragglers were watering. The excuse tendered was that the G.O.C. was afraid there might be a panic, as Afghan artillery were reported approaching. The fact that a troop of the 3rd Bombay Cavalry did actually remain on there till the stragglers were clear indicates that the G.O.C. exaggerated the state of demoralisation.

This particular troop reached the neighbourhood of Kandahar at 14.00 next day, some six hours after the G.O.C. got there, which is of itself a sufficient indication of the spirit of the men.

On this disastrous day no less than nine Indian ranks were awarded the Order of Merit in the 3rd Sind Horse alone —a very high proportion considering only some 220 sabres were engaged.

The more one reads of the miserable affair, the more painful becomes our display of leadership, and, until Kitchener reformed the Army in India some twenty-five years after Maiwand, the Bombay troops were subjected to abuse and ignorant criticism as being inferior fighting material.

It must be remembered, however, that, until then, inter-Presidential feeling ran high. A peculiar brand of *esprit de corps* of gloating over mishaps to other units was, furthermore, very prevalent right up to the beginning of the Great War.

Again, Hensman, a writer who accompanied part of the Army, seems to have written largely with the idea of boosting the portion he was with, while not taking into sufficient account the incompetent leadership.

Had the Bombay troops had a man like Roberts in command, the tale would have been very different.

A peculiar feature with regard to the criticism was that

Digitized by Google

the composition of the units at Maiwand included really comparatively few Bombay-enlisted men, and of these there were hardly any Mahrattas and no Rajputana rajputs. One infantry battalion was recruited entirely from the Punjab, while the two cavalry regiments were chiefly from the Rohtak and Delhi districts—districts which have been proved in the Great War to furnish some of the very best horse soldiers in India.

'In war it is the man, and not the men,' and the man was absent.

Digitized by Google

A CAVALRY MARCH

By CAPTAIN THE HON. R. A. ADDINGTON, *8th K.G.O. Light Cavalry*

THE following account of a march may be found interesting, illustrating as it does the work of the Cavalry in the Mahratta and Pindarri Wars, 1814 to 1817.

The squadron belonged to the 7th Madras Light Cavalry, and was under the command of Captain Riddell.

The regiment formed part of Brig.-General Sir John Doveton's force, which was operating in Berar against the Pindarris and endeavouring to keep them out of the Deccan. The season was April.

'Captain Riddell received orders from General Doveton to make for a certain point, distant about 30 miles from camp, and to endeavour to obtain information of a body of Pindarris expected in the direction of the Ajunta Pass, near to which the British were encamped.

'He marched at 7 o'clock at night, and on the road received various reports of their approach, which he transmitted to the General; but, on reaching the point to which he was ordered, all traces of them were lost, for, in fact, they had passed on some miles distant from camp before this officer received instructions to quit it.

'In about half an hour, a trooper made his appearance with an order for his immediate return. The squadron accordingly retraced its steps, and found the force had moved 6 miles beyond its former ground.

'On approaching camp about ten in the morning, Riddel

Digitized by Google

received directions to remain 2 miles from camp as an outlying squadron; in a short time after, he was desired to join the force, and on his arrival at 2 o'clock in the afternoon he found the whole Cavalry mounted, and had only time to take up his position in the line when the force moved off, marched 25 miles, found the enemy gone, rested two hours and came back to their original ground (25 miles more) by ten next morning—making a distance of 116 miles in 39 hours.'

Digitized by Google

SHOWING THE FLAG IN INDIA

By Snake Patrol

There had been a steady drizzle all night, unusual for the time of the year—early February—and which foreboded ill for the early stages of our march. The morning, however, broke bright and sunny, in spite of a few heavy clouds in the east; and as for the first day, we had only a short march to accomplish, we made no hurry of our start, and it was not until 10.15 that the Trumpet Major was given the order to sound the 'Mount' and 'Walk' march.

The regiment had been quartered at Muttra, in the United Provinces, for about two and a half years, and our destination and new station was to be Lucknow.

Muttra is a small single cavalry regiment station situated between Agra and Delhi, on the River Jumna; it is a cantonment of the old fashioned type, with big cool grass-roofed bungalows and large compounds; nor does it yet know of such modern luxuries as electric light, pipe-water supply, or telephones, except at the main line railway station.

It is, however, a station much beloved and sought after by the cavalry soldier, as it boasts the best pigsticking in India; and the small game shooting in the surrounding districts would be hard to beat in most parts of India.

Many of us, therefore, as we turned our backs to Muttra and our faces to the east and Lucknow, did so with many regrets, and the memory of all those good hunts we had taken part in with that champion of all sportsmen the wild boar came surging back to our memories, and a good many registered a vow that, so long as we were in India, Muttra had

Digitized by Google

not seen the last of us, but that a well-earned leave would again find us hunting its Khadir and canal country, at a not very distant date, we hoped.

It was sad to think that Muttra was no longer to be a British Cavalry Station, but financial stringency cannot be denied, and the strategic placing of troops must naturally depend on the amount of money the Government allots to the upkeep of its Army.

On my last evening I drove down to the British Cemetery to see if the renovation to the graves of past members of my regiment had been properly carried out, and, wandering round the cemetery, I inspected various old graves and monuments: in nearly every case they belonged to past soldiers or civil servants, who had died in the execution of their duty and in the making of India and its history. Some of the monuments dated back to 1804, and amongst them I particularly noticed one to Major General Henry Fraser, which bore the following inscription :—

Sacred
To the memory of
Major General Henry Fraser
of His Majesty's 11th Regiment of Foot
who commanded the British Army at the
Battle of Deig on the 13th November, 1804,
and by his Judgment and Valour achieved
an Important and Glorious Victory.
He died in consequence of a wound he received
when leading on the Troops and was interred here
on the 25th November 1804 in the 40th year of his
age.
The Army
laments his loss with the deepest sorrow, his
Country regards his heroic conduct with grateful
admiration,
History will record his fame and perpetuate the
glory of his illustrious deeds.

General Fraser was wounded when descending from the village of Aow, leading on his troops; the shot struck him above the ankle, and the leg was taken off just above the wound, and

Digitized by Google

history relates that he appeared to be doing well within a day or two previous to his death.

As I left the cemetery, I could not help pondering on what the doughty old General who had fought such a stout fight at Deeg (as it is now spelt) would have thought of India of to-day; and whether he would consider the vast strides that she has made in her education and her absorption of Western ideas, intermingled with Eastern morals, would have met with his approval or not.

Our last link with Muttra was the crossing of the iron railway bridge over the Jumna River, and as we led our horses across I turned to have a final look at the river-side city, often alluded to as the miniature Benares. Very picturesque it looked, with its gleaming white houses, rising tier beyond tier from the river, whilst the temple and ghat steps were, as usual, filled with devotees performing their devotional ablutions. The east bank of the river was a kaleidoscope of colour formed by various hued suris and clothes which the dhobies (washermen) were busy washing and drying in the sun.

The road to Raya, our first halt, was dull and uninteresting. It runs parallel to the railway through particularly flat country; but, thanks to the wonderful rains this year, the fields were a mass of green and yellow, thick with waving green barley and yellow dhal, which seemed to promise what the landowner alludes to as a 16-anna crop.

Camp was reached comfortably by lunch time, and when afternoon stables were over we sauntered out with guns to get a partridge or two; then bath, dinner and so to bed.

Our next stage was to Hathras, a matter of sixteen miles, and, as our main transport consisted of bullock carts, it behoved us to start early; the camp was astir by dawn 6 a.m., and by 8.15 a.m. the transport and the column had started. Our road this day was more interesting and winding and the country, in parts, more undulating.

Digitized by Google

After about two and a half hours' march we passed through the village of Mursan, which, in days gone by, must have been a small township of some strength, as the outlines of old mud walls, with bastions at the corners, still bear evidence of its martial days in spite of many rains.

We were met at the outskirts of Hathras by the Deputy Collector and Kr Bijai Singh, the son of the Raja of Lukhnu, a local potentate, and several other leading citizens of Hathras.

There was no doubt as to the loyalty of their welcome, and they spared no efforts to ensure the comfort of the troops in the camping ground; they had erected a triumphal arch with a message of welcome, and as we rode through the city itself I also noticed another placard, with 'Welcome' on it, outside a native spinning factory. It was an encouraging sign, as non-cooperation was rife in this town at a not very distant date.

Hathras is a moderately large and busy city of some 45,000 inhabitants; its principal industry is cotton, and it boasts no less than twenty-eight ginning mills and three spinning mills, while a weaving mill is now in course of erection; it also does a large trade in ghee (native butter).

Soon after lunch the Raja Mansingh of Lukhnu came to pay his respects; he was much interested in our horses, and gave us all a cordial invitation to come and dine with him that night, which we accepted.

Later in the afternoon about nine of us attended the Annual Prize-giving at the Bagla High School, erected in 1920 by the generosity of Rai Bahadur Chiranji Lal, a wealthy millowner of Hathras, in memory of his grandfather. There are about 270 pupils in the school at present, of which about thirty per cent. can speak and read English; after the prize-giving we witnessed an excellent display by the Boy Scouts of the school, and one could not help remarking that the system of loyalty and *esprit de corps* at which the school

Digitized by Google

aims could not fail to be beneficial to the pupils, and that here at least one had nothing to doubt from young India.

We were next conveyed to a tea party at the house of Rai Bahadur Chiranji Lal; it possesses a most delightful garden, and after a refreshing cup of tea we returned to camp to tub and change.

At 8 p.m. a fleet of motor-cars arrived to convey us a distance of six miles *viâ* very fair country roads to Lukhnu, where we were to dine with the Raja Mansingh.

His house is surrounded by old fashioned stoutly built mud walls, and it was with difficulty that the motors entered the iron studded massive wooden gates.

The road was lighted throughout the last part of our drive by oil lamps and flares, and scores of the Raja's retainers lined the road and eyed us curiously as we passed.

We received a hearty welcome from the Raja and his son, and from Mr. F., the Collector of Aligarh, who, accompanied by his wife and a niece, had been good enough to motor in thirty miles from Aligarh to attend the dinner and interest himself in our march.

Having all arrived, we moved into dinner, which took place in a large tent especially erected for the occasion, and sat down to an excellent dinner specially prepared by the Aligarh Club.

The Maharaja, being a very orthodox Hindu, did not dine, but sat with us throughout the meal, and at the end of the dinner proposed the health of His Majesty the King Emperor and that of the Regiment; to which it fell to my lot to reply.

At about 11 p.m. we got in the waiting motor-cars and returned to camp, so ending a long and very interesting day.

Our next day's march was only some ten and a half miles, to Salimpur, so we did not have to make a very early start, not getting on the move until 9.30 a.m.; camp was reached soon after noon, and here again a hearty welcome from the local Rais and inhabitants met us.

Digitized by Google

The following day being Sunday, we remained at Salimpur. This district is famed for its duck jheels, and so at 5 a.m. a party left camp to enjoy a morning's shoot; the birds, however, had been much shot at and were very wild, and consequently the bag was poor.

I did not go out in the morning, but in the evening I went to the big jheel at Rati-ka-Nagla, and watched the birds flighting; I was rewarded with a wonderful sight, for duck, teal and geese were flighting to the jheel literally in thousands from about 5.30 until it was too dark to see them, and one could only hear them swishing by overhead.

We struck camp at 8.30 the following morning and by 9 a.m. commenced our march to Sikandra Rao, a distance of about ten miles.

About two miles out of Sikandra Rao we reached the Tahsil boundary, where a triumphal arch, with 'Welcome,' had been erected, and also a notice, on which was written 'Happy under British Rule.'

About half a mile further down the road, our worthy Deputy Collector, who had accompanied the Regiment since Hathras, met us, followed by all the local landowners and officials.

We were at once made the target for a bombardment of flowers, one enthusiast getting a bull by hitting me in the eye; native scent was liberally smeared upon our tunics, and I blushed to think what most of us must have smelt like.

Presentations over, we mounted, and, led by the Deputy Collector, proceeded to Sikandra Rao.

At the bridge over the Ganges Canal we found yet another triumphal arch of welcome, and a notice, on which was written: 'God save the King, Britannia rules the Waves, Britons never shall be Slaves.'

The Deputy Collector solemnly read this out, and, naively pointing to the canal, which was rather in flood, said: 'These are the waves.'

Digitized by Google

From here into the town the road was flagged and garlanded, and the entrance to the camp lined with school children, all waving flags and cheering; as we passed three cheers were called for by a local potentate for H.M. the King. My good charger took it all very well, but he strongly objected to handfuls of flowers hitting him on the head when they were meant for me; however, he soon quieted down, and we rode into camp.

In the afternoon cars and carriages were sent for us, and we were driven out to the small town of Pordulnagar, about two and a half miles west of Sikandra Rao, famous for the manufacture of glass bangles, beads, buttons, and penholders of twisted coloured glass.

The industry is done entirely by hand, six to eight men and boys squat round a circular mud oven with a domed mud roof. In front of every worker is an opening into the fire, in which each has a pot of molten coloured glass of different hues, the required amount of glass to make either a bangle or button is taken out on the end of an iron rod about one and a half feet long, and, in the case of buttons, dropped into a prepared metal mould, flattened with a small trowel, and another small piece of melted glass welded on to make the hook.

The bangles are made on the pointed end of a minute iron anvil, which is kept rotating by hand until the glass cools, when the bangle is finished.

From here we were taken to the local club, where tea and cakes of every hue were provided, after which several of us played tennis with the local champions, and, I am glad to say, managed to keep our end up.

Tennis over, the Poet Laureate of Sikandra Rao was led forth, and in the flowing terms of the East eulogised us in verse; unfortunately my knowledge of Hindustani is small, but a kindly person translated for me in a loud voice as the poor poet was reciting, but I am glad to say it seemed in no

Digitized by Google

way to disturb him. On the conclusion, once more I had to rise to the occasion and endeavour to make a suitable reply —no easy matter when one had just been alluded to as one who makes the earth tremble at his approach.

The festivities concluded with a nautch dance and fire-work display, at which the whole regiment attended, and after which the men were kindly entertained to tea.

Truly the inhabitants of Sikandra Rao had spared no trouble or expense to entertain His Majesty's troops, and we all took away with us very kindly remembrances of their loyalty and the hospitality that had been showered on us during our short visit.

Our next march was to Bhadwas, a distance of some nine miles, and our route from now to Cawnpore lay along the Delhi-Calcutta grand trunk road, Delhi being some 120 miles to the north, and Calcutta being some 760 miles to the south-east.

The country on this stage to Salimpur is flat and uninteresting, nor is there much shade along the road, but it was full of historical interest, as it was along this route in February, 1803, that General Lake led his army, in the beginning of his brilliant campaign, which was embarked on to protect the Company's territories and those of our allies against the growing Mahratta menace, and which resulted in the expulsion of the Mahrattas from the Mogul capitals of Delhi and Agra, and in the reduction of Gwalior, Scindia's almost impregnable stronghold.

About halfway to Salimpur we passed a grave at the side of the road, on which was the following inscription:

Here lieth the remains
of
Major Robert Nairn
in command of the 3rd Regiment Bengal
Native Cavalry
fell at the siege of Kutchoura
on 12th March
1805.

Digitized by Google

It would appear, however, that this inscription is incorrect, as in the diary of one Lieut. John Prester, who was present in this campaign and whose diary has been compiled into a book entitled 'War and Sport in India 1802–1806, by J. A. Devenish,' a relative of Lieut. Prester, it clearly states that Major Nairn was killed on February 21, 1803, and Lieut. Prester gives the following account regarding him:

'Nairn lost his life entirely to his rashness, in carrying down his regiment in front of our posts between them and the fort, when the firing began; he received a shot in the side, and not improbable but it came from one of our own muskets or six-pounders, which were keeping up a most destructive fire at the time on the enemy leaving the fort.

'The night was very dark, and afforded no other light than that of the flashes of our pieces and those of the enemy. None dreamt of a regiment of cavalry being in front, and particularly as orders were given for no part of the troops to advance except a small party to take possession, and the cavalry were directed to remain fast at their respective posts till the enemy should pass on to them. Instead of which poor Nairne rushed on with his corps and paid for it with his life. He was an uncommonly gallant fellow, and much lamented in the Army. Nairne was a great favourite of General Lake's, who once saw him spear a tiger on horseback, the only man, most probably, that ever was known to attempt so rash and desperate a thing. General Lake shot the tiger, which was a very large one, after Nairne had put his spear in him.

'The tiger tore it out, and instantly smashed it to shivers in his teeth. The tiger's skin and the broken spear were sent home by the Commander-in-Chief to the Prince of Wales, with an account of its having been speared by an officer of the Bengal Army, of which his Excellency mentioned his having been an eye-witness.'

That evening we tried our luck on the local jheels, but

Digitized by Google

being close to the road they had been much shot over, the birds very wild, so the bag was poor.

On the following day we marched to Etah, a distance of eleven miles; it is a small town of some 8,500 inhabitants, and being the centre of the Etah districts, boasts a Collector and six Deputy Collectors, also a small force of native police.

Etah is one of the criminal districts of India, and famous for its dacoities and murders, no less than 52 dacoit cases having been tried there during the previous 12 months.

The inhabitants of this district are principally Thakur Rajputs; the habit of dacoity and murder appears to be hereditary, and is carried out more for love of adventure than any other reason, as this district provides many recruits for the Army who become fine soldiers. We were most hospitably welcomed at Etah by the Collector and his subordinate officials; a tea and tennis party were given in our honour at the small local club, followed by an excellent display from a native conjurer.

Our march next day was only some eleven miles to Malawan, so I accepted the offer of the Collector to motor over to Kashganj and there inspect the Nadrai aqueduct, which carries the Lower Ganges canal over the Kali Nada (Black river). The Kali Nada is a tributary of the river Jumna.

The aqueduct was built about 1870, at a cost, I was informed, of, approximately, 80 lakhs of rupees, and is at present the second largest aqueduct in India; it is some 700 yards long by about 90 yards broad, and is a wonderful piece of engineering skill and well worth a visit; it is built entirely of red brick, but so well is it constructed that I saw no signs of water percolation anywhere.

In the evening we tried our luck on the jheels about Malawan, with little success, as, again, they were situated too close to the road to afford good sport.

Digitized by Google

A march of eleven miles brought us to our next camp, Kuraoli; we had now left behind the Etah district and entered that of Mainpuri.

Malawan was in charge of a Deputy Collector we had all known at Muttra, and he had arranged a camp for us in a wonderful mango grove, which afforded shade for the horses of the entire regiment; decorations had also been put up in our honour. That afternoon, having partaken of tea with the Deputy Collector, we mounted elephants, and shot a very fair jheel, about three miles distance, until it was too dark to see.

Our next march was to Sultanganj, only a short distance of nine miles: we were to stay here two days, Sunday being a day of rest. We found an excellent camp prepared, with a distributary of the Ganges Canal running alongside it, of which the men took full advantage, in spite of the water being only waist high.

The cordiality of our reception was again most marked, bombs were exploded in honour of our arrival, much to the annoyance of several horses, and we came in for the usual bombardment of flowers.

This district boasts three very excellent duck jheels, which we lost no time in visiting, and where we obtained the best of sport during our two days' stay. I fear, however, that the bag compared very unfavourably with the number of cartridges expended.

On Sunday morning the Raja of Mainpuri, accompanied by his small son, motored over from Mainpuri Fort, with the Collector, to pay his respects, and kindly asked us all to a tea party at our next camp, Bewar.

The Raja is a man of some 51 years of age, and is in succession the 103rd Raja of Mainpuri; his branch of the family has long been loyal to the British, and his ancestors did much service for the Government in the troublesome times of the Mutiny.

Digitized by Google

He was very interested in our horses, equipment and machine guns, and after a walk round the lines returned to Mainpuri.

Our march on the following day proved a very dusty one, due to a high wind, which, luckily, was a following one; after tracking for about nine miles we reached the old town of Bhongaon. Indian tradition has it that anyone staying more than two days in this town becomes a fool.

In days gone by it was celebrated for its eunuchs; even now, I understand, that amongst the ignorant, few will own, if asked, that they belong to this town.

We reached Bewar, our camp, about noon; it was most wonderfully decorated, camp streets had been laid out and named after various officers, much to their embarrassment.

The whole camp was a mass of flags and floral decorations, principally palms and branches of small trees, on which oranges had been impaled; these lined all the walks. The usual salute of bombs and flowers was also not missing.

In the afternoon tea, followed by a nautch, was provided by the Raja of Mainpuri; most of us, I fear, were not sufficiently *au fait* with the intricacies of Indian dancing to be a really appreciative audience, and, in most cases, the ladies of the East who practise the terpsichorean art appear to take so long getting ready and are so bored with the whole affair when they have started, that the average Westerner finds little amusement in watching them.

Their clothing and jewellery are always gorgeous, but the effect is, in nine cases out of ten, marred by the lady wearing a European petticoat, which obviously comes from Manchester, and a pair of man's socks five sizes too large.

That night, after dinner, the two nautch dancers were again produced, but the proceedings on this occasion were more enlivened by the arrival of six rival lady dancers from the village, anxious to uphold the honour of their town at the expense of the two professionals. We were asked if we would

Digitized by Google

like to see them and naturally replied in the affirmative. I asked the Tahsildar of the village if they were professional dancers, to which, without a smile, he replied, 'Oh, no; only ladies of easy virtue.'

The next day's march was again a very dusty one, our destination being Chhibramau, about 14 miles; the camp was poor, with little or no shade. Next day we moved to Gursahaiganj, fifteen miles. And here, again, the camp was sadly lacking in shade, and at neither camp was any shooting or pigsticking to be found.

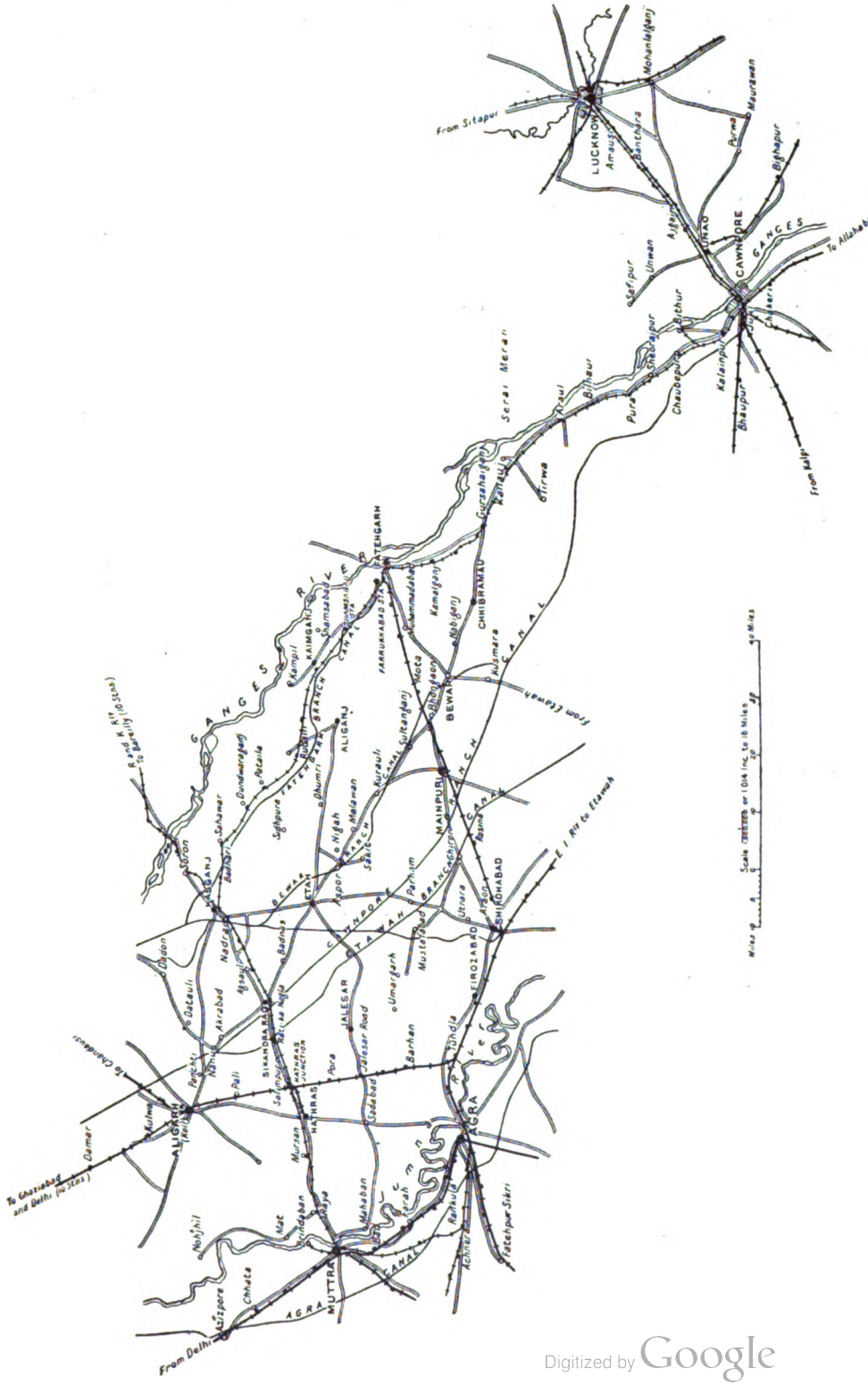
Our next march brought us to Serai Meran, fifteen and a half miles; the road runs alongside the B.B. and C.I. metre gauge system, and the country here is much more undulating, with fair shade along the roads, principally from mango trees, for which the district is famous.

Our camp was in a large shady mango grove, and here we were met by the Collector of Fatehgarh.

Serai Meran is famous for its rose and jasmine gardens, and all the surrounding villages and the town of Kanauj itself are busy in the manufacture of native scents, rose water and eau de Cologne. Of Kanauj surprisingly little is known, though it was clearly of importance in the second century B.C. It rose to a pre-eminent position in the days of Harsha about 612 A.D., and from that time forward was the seat of monarchy till its conquest and destruction by Shahab-ud-din Ghori in 1193. It is possible that the place may have been a city of the Gupta empire, and the influence of that dynasty is undoubtedly to be seen in the architecture of some of the ancient temples in the south of this district.

These bear witness to a very early Hindu civilisation, which popular legend associates with the Gautam Rajas of Argal, a principality which is without question of unusual antiquity. The proximity of Kanauj may well account for the comparatively early settlement of several of the Rajpur class in various parts of the district, though it is difficult to say

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

whether any of these actually took place much before the Muhammadan conquest.

The river Ganges in these times evidently must have flowed close to the ancient city, but it has shifted its course considerably to the east, and to-day the main river is some two miles east of the town.

Of the several scent factories which exist at Kanauj, the principal one is the London Scent Manufacturing Company, which the proprietor very kindly showed us over from here. Scent is despatched to all parts of India, Burma and Japan.

In the evening we were hospitably entertained to tea by a local Zemindar, who had taken the trouble to have everything sent out for our benefit from Cawnpore.

The following day our march was only a very short one of six and half miles to Araul and so we moved early, breakfasting on arrival at the new camp. Here for the first time on our march we got kubba of pig, and so in the afternoon some of us went out to try our luck. Several sounder of pig were seen, but only one boar, which afforded a short hunt, and then, unfortunately, got lost in the dhal.

Pura was our next camp, thirteen and half miles distant; it is in the Cawnpore district, and everything for our comfort had been arranged by Khan Bahadur A.H. the Deputy Collector. We were glad to find a good shady camp, as we were to stay here over the Sunday.

Three excellent duck jheels exist in this area some seven miles west of the main road, and we set off on Sunday morning with visions of a large bag of geese, for which the jheels are famous. On arrival, alas, it was only to find that a motor party from Cawnpore had forestalled us, and our bag was extremely poor in consequence.

Chaubepur was our next camp, and here we were entertained to tea by the local Zemindars.

The next morning our march was only a short one to Kalainpur (eight and half miles), which was accomplished

Digitized by Google

before breakfast; I therefore availed myself of the Deputy Collector's invitation to float down the Ganges in a barge to our next camp and try and shoot crocodile.

A five and a half mile ride brought us to Bandi Mata, on the banks of the Ganges. Bandi Mata is a small native village which boasts a rather celebrated temple, which is a source of income of some Rs. 5,000 a year to its lucky owner, the offerings of devotees.

The ownership of a popular temple appears to be a very profitable proposition in India; quite a large number support no priest and so the money offerings left by the faithful become a source of revenue to the owner.

On arrival at Bandi Mata we were met and introduced to the leading villagers by the Deputy Collector; two of the people I was introduced to offered me golden English sovereigns on a silk handkerchief; which, in accordance with native custom, I had to touch.

This custom is fast dying out, and, personally, I was gratified to find that it had been extended to me by these simple country folk.

Tea and native sweetmeats were produced, whilst we were waiting for our coolie with the luncheon basket to appear, who had sadly lagged behind. A native dinner followed the tea; but as it was then, however, only 10 a.m. and we had breakfasted at 7.30, our appetites were not up to the ordeal, so, thanking our extremely kind hosts, we made a move to the barge on which we intended to float down stream, and having been duly garlanded, cast off.

The barge was most comfortable, two charpois (native beds) with mattresses and covered with oriental rugs had been put on board, and on them we lay at our ease, scanning the river banks with field-glasses for crocodiles.

Our luck was not in, as although we shot seven small ones, on our eight mile journey downstream we only saw two really large ones; one we should certainly have got, but waited

Digitized by Google

too long for a favourable shot, consequently the crocodile spotted us and slid away into the river and safety. He must have been at least 14 feet long.

We left the barge at Bithur (some eight miles downstream).

Bithur is not only of the greatest antiquity, but is invested with peculiar sanctity in the eyes of the Hindus, for at this spot Brahma is said to have celebrated the completion of creation by a horse sacrifice. The spot is marked by the Brahmavartta–Ghat on the river bank, and a nail of the horse's shoe embedded in one of the steps of the landing place is still the object of devout worship.

That evening we did a night march from Kalainpur to Cawnpore, arriving at the latter place at about 2.30 a.m.; it was a pitch black night, and consequently excellent practice for the troops. The only incident of note that occurred was that one hard riding squadron leader, in endeavouring to canter along the edge of the road up to the head of his squadron, met a wire fence *en route* and he and the Sergeant following got well spatchcocked into the adjacent field.

Cawnpore and its history in those dark days of the Mutiny is known to all, and has too often been described by better pens than mine, so I shall not attempt it.

Most of our men in the afternoon took the opportunity of visiting the Memorial Well and the Massacre Ghat.

It is a very beautiful and well-kept monument, erected to the undying memory of some 200 British women and children foully done to death by the order of the Nana Sahib on that fatal evening of July 15, 1857, when he had received definite information of the approach of the British from Allahabad, and realised that with General Havelock's arrival stern retribution would be exacted from him for the innocent blood he had already spilt.

The bodies were removed from the Bibigarh, the scene of the tragedy, in the early morning of the 16th, and thrown into the well hard by, over which the Memorial now stands.

Digitized by Google

Thanks to the kindness of the Deputy Collector, I was given the opportunity in the afternoon by the Manager of the Elgin Cotton Mills of paying a visit to this well-known factory. Cawnpore is famous for its cotton mills; the majority of which are run on most up-to-date lines and installed with the finest machinery. One can see the cotton being treated from the time it is broken from the bale and put in the 'breaker' until it reaches the looms, and no one visiting Cawnpore should fail to visit this most interesting industry.

An early start was the order for our march next day to Unao, eleven miles; our road lay across the railway bridge over the river Ganges, and special arrangements had had to be made to hold up traffic whilst we were crossing.

Unao was reached by breakfast time, and here we found a cordial invitation from a local potentate to attend that afternoon part of the marriage ceremony of his small nephew, aged about 11, to a lady of about 8.

At 4.30 p.m. we drove into the town, to a large enclosure, where a big shamianah for the reception had been erected.

The shamianah was a mass of coloured decorations and flowers, and even the poles were draped with cloth of various colours and reminded one of a Neapolitan ice; I counted at least a hundred lamps and chandeliers of coloured glass, so dear to the native heart.

No less than three bands, two native and one pipe band from a native regiment, were in attendance; the pipe band was excellent, and would have done credit to any Highland unit.

After listening to a couple of selections by the pipe band, the two native bands came forward; they were each about twenty-five to thirty strong, the bandsmen being dressed in old red and blue British Infantry uniforms of about the 1890 type, whilst the bandmasters were each resplendent in old R.A.M.C. Officers' tunics.

They performed in turn, and each gave a marvellous

Digitized by Google

rendering of 'The British Grenadiers,' which I doubt even the composer would have recognised, whilst one band as an encore, gave 'God Save the King' to waltz time.

Your native bandsman likes brass and plenty of it; nearly all the performers play and hold their instruments with one hand only, and unless one has a macintosh or umbrella, it is unwise to sit near to a performer who is really concentrating on his work.

With one band I noticed a small and extremely dirty boy, whose sole clothing was an old flannel shirt; at first I thought he must be there either from curiosity or was the son of one of the instrumentalists, but I soon discovered that he was of real practical use, for on the conclusion of a piece, he went down the line and most of the bandsmen used his shirt to clean the mouthpieces of their instrument.

Tea was next provided, after which we were asked to join the wedding procession, which was about to start for the bride's house.

This most of us did in gaily decorated motor-cars, and, headed by the three bands, off we started.

The car I was in happened to be immediately behind the gorgeously decorated palanquin containing the bridegroom; the poor little fellow had the whole afternoon appeared extremely bored with the entire proceedings, and, once in his palanquin, due either to the motion or to a too liberal indulgence in native sweetmeats, was promptly overcome by an attack of *mal-de-mer*, and the whole procession had to be stopped until he was revived.

His arrival at the bride's house was signalled by the letting off of bombs and fireworks of every kind; and this, added to three bands all playing together, can be better imagined than described.

We left the proceedings at this stage and returned to camp to tub and dine.

Our march next day was to Nawabganj, a distance of

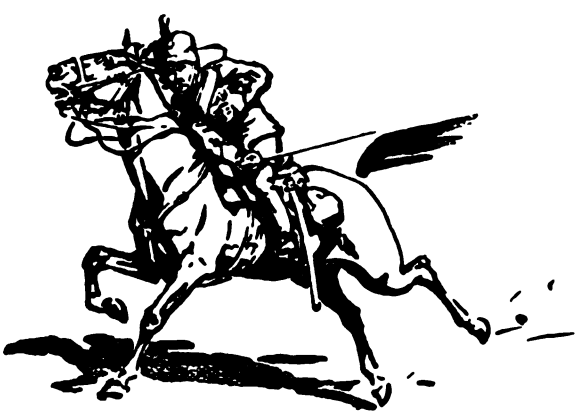
Digitized by Google

thirteen miles. Some extremely good jheels exist at this place, on which we got excellent sport in the afternoon; the bag would have been even better but it was beginning to get hot, and a good many birds had already migrated.

Banthara was our next camp, thirteen and a half miles, and here we stayed over Sunday, having a general clean up before the final stage to our new quarters in Lucknow, which we reached by 9.30 a.m. on the Monday morning.

That everyone had enjoyed the march was certain, and from a political point of view it had undoubtedly produced very practical results; unfortunately, however, it is usually far less expensive to send troops by train than by road, and consequently the latter method cannot always be indulged in.

The reception which we had received at nearly every stage of our march was wonderful, and we all carried with us to Lucknow very kindly recollections of the loyalty we had witnessed and the hospitality that had been extended to us at the hands of our many and varied hosts.



Digitized by Google

THE LAST OF THE MAMELUKES

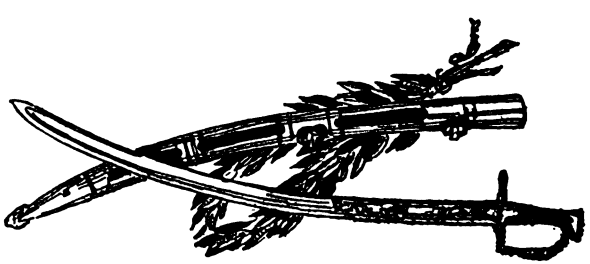
After CARLE VERNET

THE last of the Mamelukes (el akhir el memluk) was Amin Bey, who saved his life during the massacre of the Mamelukes in 1811 by riding his horse over the ramparts of the citadel of Cairo. Horse and rider fell fifty feet at a spot which is often pointed out to tourists at the present day. The horse was killed, but the rider escaped with a broken ankle and survived for thirty years.

In the picture he is being fired at by Egyptian infantry, some of whom at that period were dressed after the style of French grenadiers. It was indeed a remarkable piece of horsemanship. For the picture we are indebted to Major R. G. Casey, D.S.O., M.C., Australian Military Forces.

Carle and Horace Vernet both depicted scenes in Egypt.

An account of the Mamelukes appeared in the CAVALRY JOURNAL, No. 16 (October, 1909). N. S.



Digitized by Google

THE LAST OF THE MAMELUKES.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

A DRAGOON OF THE GUARD

By Major O. Teichman, D.S.O., M.C.

There are probably many examples of a Cavalry-man's devotion to his horse, but few can excel that shown by a trooper in Napoleon's ill-fated Russian campaign. In the 'Memoirs of Sergeant Bourgogne,' 1812–1813, we read of how M. Melle, a Dragoon of the Guard, on more than one occasion actually penetrated into the Russian camp by night in order to procure forage for his horse. It speaks volumes for the horsemastership of this trooper that he should have brought his horse safely through all the Napoleonic campaigns from 1806 to 1814, especially through the winter of 1812–13 when, apart from battle casualties, so many horses died from exposure and starvation, or were devoured by the starving soldiers.

It may be of interest to quote from the Memoirs of that stalwart soldier, Bourgogne, Sergent Velite of the Guard. [The word Velite may possibly need a word of explanation: the Velites were originally Roman soldiers, lightly armed for skirmishing with the enemy. Napoleon first raised a corps of Velites in 1801, and they were subsequently distributed among the Grenadiers and the Chasseurs-à-pied, as well as among the cavalry regiments of Chasseurs, Grenadiers, and Dragoons of the Guard. Each cavalry regiment had attached to it a squadron of Velites (125 men), and each infantry regiment two companies (300 men). To procure admission into a corps of the Velites of the Guard, a fixed income was a necessary qualification, and as these young soldiers had

Digitized by Google

been previously trained in a Military School, the more efficient were, after a few years, promoted to the rank of Sub-Lieutenant]. Bourgogne relates, a few days after the battle of Krasnoe, during the retreat—

At midnight one of our sentinels told me he could see a man on horseback appearing to come from our side. I ran at once, with two of our men, to see who it could be. I could distinguish the horseman perfectly, and in front of him a foot soldier, whom he was apparently forcing on before him. When they got near us I recognised a Dragoon of the Guard, who had made his way into the Russian camp to get food for himself and his horse. He had disguised himself by means of the helmet of a Russian Cuirassier whom he had killed the day before. He had brought away from the enemy's camp a bundle of straw and a little flour, and had wounded one sentinel, and knocked down another whom he had made his prisoner and brought along with him. This brave fellow was called Melle, and he came from Conde. He stayed with us for the rest of the night. He said that he had run this risk for his horse, called Cadet, and not for himself: at any cost he had determined to get the animal some food. 'If I save my horse he will save me afterwards.' This was the second time he had got inside the Russian camp since leaving Smolensk. On the first occasion he had brought back a horse already harnessed. He was fortunate enough to return to France with his horse . . . He might be called, with truth, one of the best soldiers in the Army. Before entering the Guard, M. Melle had already gone through the Italian campaign. With the same weapons and the same horse he went through the campaigns of 1806 and 1807 in Prussia and Poland, 1808 in Spain, 1809 in Germany, 1810 and 1811 in Spain, 1812 in Russia, 1813 in Saxony, and 1814 in France . . . The poor horse was finally killed at Waterloo, after being through more than twelve great battles commanded by the Emperor, and over thirty smaller engagements. I met Melle again during this wretched campaign on a lake breaking a hole in the ice with a hatchet to get water for his horse; and another time I saw him at the top of a burning barn, in peril of his life, getting straw from the roof for him, for the horses were as badly off as we were. The poor animals had to gnaw at the trees to feed themselves, until in their turn they fed us.'

Melle subsequently repeatedly penetrated alone at night into the Russian camp to get hay or straw for Cadet. We are told that he never returned without killing one or two Russians, or bringing back what he called a witness, viz., a prisoner.

It would be interesting to know whether there is any parallel in military history of the same horse carrying its rider for eight successive years through so many strenuous campaigns. The distances traversed between, as well as

Digitized by Google

during, the various campaigns must have been very great, viz.: Poland to Spain, Spain to Germany, Germany to Spain, Spain to Russia, and, lastly, Russia to France again; it must be remembered, also, that a Dragoon of the Guard was in those days no light weight, either as regards physique or equipment.

After the departure of the Emperor for Elba, Melle remained in the Royal Guard, awaiting his pension, and always keeping Cadet with him. On the return of the Emperor he reappeared again in the same Corps as one of the Imperial Guard at Waterloo, where he was wounded and his horse killed. Our Dragoon was subsequently created Chevalier of the Legion of Honour, but, sad to relate, owing to the change of government, he never received his full pension and died in straitened circumstances.

He is cited at the end of Bourgogne's narrative as one of the witnesses to what the latter had written.

Digitized by Google

THE HAT TRICK

By Major Ardern Beaman, D.S.O.

There was something to be said on both sides, for Dickie had only just joined, and Dafadar Faiz Ullah, with his close-shaved, gingery hair and pale yellow cat's eyes, was as villainous-looking a little ruffian as ever wore the King's uniform. Moreover, the amenities of a July campaign—with the temperature at about two thousand in your tent, and cholera effectively settling the housing problem in the villages beyond the perimeter—are not conducive to that lovingkindness and mutual trust which are so strongly advocated by King's Regulations and the Bible—though with slightly different motives.

'Of course he's a trans-border Afridi,' I said, looking liverishly at Dickie's vague outline through the solid cloud of dust and man-eating flies which occupied an unfair proportion of the Turkish bath that was humourously called our Mess—'but what about it, anyhow?'

Dickie, sorely troubled in spirit, began hesitatingly to falter out his suspicion.

'Old Risaldar Ghulam Kadir has been sort of hinting things—nothing tangible—you know how they do—and as far as I can make out he seems to think Faiz Ullah means deserting to the enemy!'

'Rot!' I retorted with emphasis, 'no stauncher fellow than that ugly little blighter ever breathed.'

'I'm awfully glad to hear it, major,' Dickie mumbled.

Digitized by Google

Nevertheless I detected doubt and sorrow in his eye; for they teach them at Sandhurst that the Mutiny befell through the infatuated purblindness of our senior officers, in refusing, mulishly, to see that which was under their noses: and Dickie, being a good boy, had perused his books with diligence. And before I could explain that the libellous Risaldar Ghulam Kadir was, above and beyond all else, a family man of the most praiseworthy zeal, who would stop at no reasonable step this side of open murder to secure for his sister's second son the next promotion to Jemadar, between which and his hopeful nephew there now only stood Faiz Ullah, a shadow fell across the Mess and the harsh accents of Faiz Ullah himself spake without.

'The Patrol is ready, Sahib,' he said to Dickie, saluting.

Now the Kumarharsen Independent Brigade was playing its annual summer round against the Mohmand Hun under Shabkadr Rules—which Rules, as everybody knows, are immutable and eternal, taking no cognizance of such adventitious matters as the invention of gunpowder, and changing not one jot or tittle since Alexander first marched down those self-same Passes. And Rule Number One ordains that morning and evening a Cavalry Patrol shall ride helplessly under the foothills, inviting the marksmanship of the enemy: it having been deduced by process of close reasoning that if shots are fired, the enemy is there. And it was ever Dickie's delight to form part of this animated target—such being a peculiarity of the British temperament.

'Keep clear of the inner hills, young feller,' I admonished. 'I'm a bad hand at letters of condolence.'

And Dickie, swinging into the saddle while Faiz Ullah held his stirrup, grinned broadly; for repetition is the soul of wit, and he had heard that remark twice daily for five weeks.

A ragged crackle of rifle fire from that tumbling, broken

Digitized by Google

maze of unorientable, fanged impossibility that we call the Frontier Hills, suddenly set the whole camp humming with excitement—for all were weary of waiting on the Mohmand's pleasure to begin—he, *vide* Rule Two, having the honour at the first hole; and now it really sounded as though he meant to drive off at last.

'Any casualties?' I asked, as the Patrol galloped in.

'Yes, dash it—they've bagged my hat!' Dickie's face was the picture of indignation. 'Shot slick off my head as we retired!'

'Casualties, *topis*, Cawnpore, one—missing, believed killed!' I laughed, much relieved. But Dickie was strangely worried about that blessed *topi* of his, and after stables he adverted to the subject again. 'I wish they hadn't bagged it,' he mourned lugubriously.

'Are there no more hats in this great big world, Richard?' I said. 'Wire in to the Quartermaster and you'll have another out by breakfast to-morrow.'

Still Dickie refused to be comforted. 'It wasn't so much the hat,' he faltered, 'as——'

He broke off with a sheepish expression and then, the light breaking, I turned quickly away, lest he should see my shoulders shake. For Dickie, like every high-spirited lad that's worth his salt, was in love—in love with a little lady of great beauty and charm, who at that moment was methodically flirting with two or four other bright lads in the scented shades of Kashmir. In other days Dickie would have worn his ladye's favour on his helm, but in this dull age of rigid Dress Regulations he could only do the next best thing, which was to wear her photo inside his hat. I had, by chance, seen it there. Poor old Dickie!

'Where do you think it is now, major?' he asked.

I looked away to where, all along the saw-edged crest line, the tribesmen bowed in sunset-prayer against a background of wild hills and blood-red sky.

Digitized by Google

'Far away up behind there, Dickie,' I told him, 'at Spin Khor, there is a grisly shrine. Among other offerings it's adorned with certain mummified limbs of young Tudor-Williams, who fell into their hands last April. By this time to-morrow your hat also will have been duly oblated there, with many rites which decency forbids me to specify.'

Dickie's jaw set and he wanted to know when I thought the battle would begin. But I shook my head.

'It's distinctly understood, as between gentlemen, Dickie, that we don't go out till they send in to say they're quite ready. Otherwise the match is off.'

Indeed, the Intelligence Services of the Great Powers might glean much of profit from a study of the Shabkadr Method. Co-operation is the essence of it, each army employing, as it were, the same Bureau, thereby effecting a hundred per cent. saving in labour—no small consideration in these unrestful days. And the spy, drawing his emoluments from both sides, is naturally a highly honoured and a privileged person in either camp, nothing in the matter of numbers, composition and intention being hidden from him. Thus are the doubts, uncertainties and many and vexatious preliminaries of battle in other lands eliminated; and that evening our H.Q. was able positively to announce the battle for 7.10 hours the next day. And Dickie came to me with a troubled face.

'I say,' he began, 'old Selfridge'—(for thus was the contractor named from whom we bought our fodder in Shabkadr village)—'old Selfridge says he's got to go and join the enemy to-night, and when I went to pay him up just now, I bumped straight into Faiz Ullah, cheek by jowl with a filthy Mohmand—who ran like a scalded cat directly he saw me. Faiz Ullah looked pretty silly, and swore it was one of the villagers—but I'll take my oath it wasn't. Looks fishy; what?'

'Faiz Ullah's alright,' I said shortly, 'put that nonsense out of your head, Dickie.'

And thereafter battle matters engrossed our attention

Digitized by Google

till, punctually to the second, we marched out to keep our appointment. The first lap, of course, was considerably hampered by the huge Derby crowd of Old Testament characters streaming on to the course from every cis-frontier village within twenty miles, whose purposeful scrambling for front seats detracted somewhat from the pomp and dignity of our advance. Under Rule Three these holiday sight-seers are strictly preserved, though there is no clause to inhibit their light-heartedly producing concealed weapons and taking pot-shots at us retiring.

At the flash of the first field gun the endless row of heads and green standards along the crest line vanished, even as a single disappearing target; and throughout the long day we lay, according to immemorial custom, in our appointed places on the hill-side, firing languidly at total invisibility: till, at the time when, under Rule Four, honour being satisfied, both sides should have been thinking of going home to tea, a grave irregularity occurred: in that a Mounted Column, arriving late in the day from Risalpur, proceeded to improve the occasion by charging up the flat on the left of the ridge's-end occupied, dismounted, by my squadron—came charging up that open space with whimsical gaiety, as the puppy will caper after the imaginary rat. And they, speedily getting into difficulties between the canal and the lower spurs, where the hidden Mohmands were enjoying themselves hugely at point-blank range, it behoved me likewise to mount and charge. And while we disported ourselves among the tribesmen, who had swarmed out from their cover, hacking and stabbing at the wounded and slashing off equipment, an explosive bullet took my horse in the belly, so that he foundered, pinning me underneath: from which situation I was embarrassed to behold a hairy Mohmand raising his knife for my unhappy despatch; when a lance-point flickered over my shoulder, and hairy Esau aforesaid departed to Paradise with an unpleasant cough—and I looked up into the ugly,

Digitized by Google

grinning face of Faiz Ullah, thinking it had never looked so beautiful.

'Take my horse, Sahib,' he said, dismounting and pulling me free.

But as I took the squadron on, I noticed with surprise that Faiz Ullah was dragging Esau's carcase into a hut among the crops—which was conduct unbecoming the character of a warrior and a gentleman.

After this one serious breach of the Rules, things reverted to the normal; and I remarked to Dickie an hour later at stables:

'Speaking as one who has a lingering prejudice in favour of life, I think your conscience owes Faiz Ullah an apology, my lad!'

And my feelings may be imagined when Dickie, regarding me with compassion, replied hesitatingly:

'I—I—forgot to report, major. He's—he's deserted after all!'

'*Wha-at!?*'

Dickie shook his head sombrely. 'No wounded were left behind—and Faiz Ullah is absent.'

'He *can't* have deserted!' I groaned; for I had long loved that ugly little ruffian as a brother. And when Dickie spoke again it was with no touch of malice at being proved in the right, but with the heavy sorrow of one stating a tragic fact.

'If he hasn't,' he said, 'I'll eat my hat.'

We were silent at dinner that night and not amused by the pyre that crackled and blazed just outside the perimeter, in front of our Hotchkis Post, or by the rows of corpses on top of it, starkly silhouetted in the blaze, that slowly rose to a sitting posture as the fire touched their spines. For at that season the obsequies of our Rajput and Dogra casualties could not be delayed. And when, suddenly, there was a wild hurroosh, and we saw, all amid the gruesome blaze, a horde of tribesmen like fiends in the nether-world, leaping

Digitized by Google

at the bodies and trying to drag them off, we found it easiest to express our feelings through the medium of the Hotchkis guns.

Much latitude is allowed to the Tribesman under the Rules. He may abduct your wife, and Government will lavish gold on him for her safe return. He may mishandle your brother officer in a manner that cannot be written, and you say it's just his way. But the one thing he may *not* do is to violate the rites of Hindu sepulture. Wherefore the night long, battle-weary men stood cursing in the perimeter, and the machine guns and rifles blazed wrathfully at the slightest sound or movement without. And when the first pale streaks of day began to show, I pointed to something lying near the still-smouldering pile of wood and flesh.

'Look, Dickie!'

Whereat Dickie cheered hoarsely.

'Thank the Lord, we've bagged one of the brutes, anyway!' he ejaculated fervently. 'Let's have a look at him.'

We scrambled out through the wire, and there, in blood-stained tribal dress, with a bullet through his thigh, lay Faiz Ullah.

It was the worst moment of my life.

'Faiz Ullah! thou, a desecrator of the dead!' I said in Pushtu, still scarcely able to believe my eyes, while Dickie gazed at him in speechless horror.

But Faiz Ullah appeared quite unmoved. 'Nay, Sahib,' he said, 'there was no desecration. They thought ye burned their kin—some are yet missing from our charge by the canal yonder—and they would have saved them for burial.'

'Ah!'

'As for me,' he continued, 'I was hit not an hour ago —when my brother should have been on sentry to let me through.'

That explained much, but still puzzled, I pointed at dead Esau's clothes.

Digitized by Google

'What means this dress, then?'

Faiz Ullah's face broke out into the old grin. 'The Chota Sahib grieved much over this,' he said, indicating something tied up in a dirty cloth beside him. 'Doubtless it held a charm. Therefore last night went I after it—even up to Spin Khor.'

Feeling twenty years younger, I handed the bundle to the wide-gaping Dickie.

'Your hat, Richard—eat it!'

Digitized by Google

YEOMANRY BADGES

(continued)

By Major H. G. Parkyn, O.B.E.

No. 16. The Hampshire Carabineers date from 1830, and had as their badge the Hampshire rose, with a crown above on two crossed carbines. They are now the 95th Hampshire Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A.

No. 17. The Hertfordshire Yeomanry also date from 1830. Their badge was that of a hart crossing a ford, and is that of the county. They became the 86th East Anglian Herts. Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A.

No. 18. The Royal East Kent Yeomanry, The Duke of Connaught's Own Mounted Rifles, displayed the well-known badge of the White Horse, as do also the Queen's Own West Kent Yeomanry (*see* No. 19). The former regiment dates from 1830 and the West Kent from 1831. Quite recently both regiments were given the title of 'Hussars.' Both corps are now represented by the 97th Kent Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A.

On the occasion of King William IV. visiting Bromley one of the Royal postillions became ill and his place was taken by a Yeoman of the Chislehurst Troop of the West Kent, which formed His Majesty's escort.

No. 20. The Lanarkshire (Lancers) Yeomanry. Formed in 1819, have as their badge a two-headed eagle, which forms part of the arms of the county.

No. 21. The Duke of Lancaster's Own (Dragoons) Yeomanry. The regiment was formed in 1819. As a badge

Digitized by Google

they display the red rose of Lancaster below a ducal coronet. On the helmet plate of the regiment is displayed the arms of the duchy.

No. 22. The Lancashire Hussars Yeomanry were formed in 1848, and had as a badge the red rose of Lancaster. They became under the reorganisation the 106th (Lancashire Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A.

No. 23. The Leicestershire (Prince Albert's Own) Hussars. Formed in 1803. The badge of the regiment is that of the crest of the late Prince Albert.

No. 24. The badge of the Lincolnshire Yeomanry was that of the arms of the City of Lincoln, *i.e.*, a shield with a cross, having in the centre a fleur-de-lys. The regiment, which was raised in 1901, is now disbanded.

No. 25. The City of London (Rough Riders) Lancer Yeomanry were formed in 1901. Their badge was at first that of a spur and the letters 'R. R.' This was replaced by one which displayed the arms and motto of the City of London inside a crowned circle, inscribed with the title 'The City of London Yeomanry,' and a wreath of laurel outside the circle with scrolls entitled 'Rough Riders' and 'South Africa, 1900–02.' They have now become absorbed into the 11th Hon. Artillery Company and City of London Yeomanry Brigade R.H.A.

No. 26. The 1st County of London (Middlesex) Duke of Cambridge's Hussars date from 1831. Their badge was the Royal cypher, inside star of eight points, inscribed with the motto 'Pro aris et focis' and the title 'Middlesex Yeomanry.' First known as the Uxbridge Yeomanry, they were raised to help deal with the civil disturbances in that neighbourhood. They received the title 'Middlesex Yeomanry' in 1871, and that of 'Duke of Cambridge's Own' in 1884. Under the late reorganisation they have become the 2nd Cavalry Divisional Signals.

No. 27. The 2nd County of London (Westminster) Dragoons

Digitized by Google

Yeomanry display as a badge the arms of the City of Westminster, granted to the city in 1601. In 1902, upon the creation of the Metropolitan Boroughs, Westminster was again created a city and its ancient arms restored, together with supporters. The roses are those of the United Houses of Lancaster and York, while the design between is that of the arms of the holy King Edward the Confessor, viz., 'a cross patonce between five martlets, one in each quarter and another in base, all or.' Under reorganisation, they have become the 22nd London Armoured Car Company (Westminster Dragoons) Royal Tank Corps.

No. 28. The 3rd County of London (Sharpshooters) Hussars raised in 1901. Their badge was crossed rifles behind a crowned circle, inscribed 'County of London Yeomanry,' the numeral '3' in the centre, and a scroll below inscribed 'Sharpshooters.' They have now become the 23rd London Armoured Car Company (Sharpshooters) Royal Tank Corps.

No. 29. Lovat's Scouts Yeomanry, raised in 1903, are now known as Lovat's Scouts. They retain the badge of a stag's head, the crest of the Lord Lovat, their Colonel Commandant.

No. 30. The Lothian and Border Horse Yeomanry trace back to the East Lothian Yeomanry, and were raised in 1846. They became the Lothian and Berwickshire Yeomanry in 1888, and received their more recent title of Border Horse in 1908. The badge of the regiment was a garb (wheatsheaf). They are now the 19th (Lothian and Border) Armoured Car Company Royal Tank Corps.

No. 31. The Montgomeryshire Yeomanry were formed in 1831. Their badge was of later years the Prince of Wales's feathers and coronet, but prior to this they had displayed the badge of the red dragon, the ancient badge of Cadwallader, Prince of all Wales. The regiment have now been converted into infantry, and form two companies of the 7th Battalion Royal Welch Fusiliers.

Digitized by Google

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

16. Hampshire Yeo. (Carabiniers).
17. Hertfordshire Yeo.
18. Royal East Kent Yeo.
19. West Kent Yeo.
20. Lanarkshire Yeo.
21. Duke of Lancaster's Yeo.
22. Lancashire Hussars.
23. Leicestershire Yeo.
24. Lincolnshire Yeo.
25. City of London Yeo. (Rough Riders).
26. Middlesex Yeo.
27. 2nd County of London Yeo. (Westminster Dragoons).
28. 3rd County of London Yeo. (Sharpshooters).
29. Lovat's Scouts.
30. Lothians & Border Horse.
31. Montgomeryshire Yeo.
32. Norfolk Yeo.
33. Northamptonshire Yeo.
34. Northumberland Hussars.
35. Sherwood Rangers (Notts Yeo.).
36. South Nottinghamshire Hussars.
37. Q.O. Oxfordshire Hussars.
38. Pembroke Yeo.
39. Scottish Horse.
40. Shropshire Yeo.

Digitized by Google

No. 32. The Norfolk (The King's Own Royal Regiment) Dragoons Yeomanry now exist as part of the 108th Norfolk Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A. The Yeomanry of Norfolk, as in the case of many other counties, had a rather chequered career, and in this particular instance were raised and disbanded no less than five times, the present corps dating from 1901. As a badge the regiment wore the Royal Arms. H.M. the King was Colonel-in-Chief of the regiment, while the King of Norway was Hon. Colonel before its reorganisation.

No. 33. The Northamptonshire (Dragoons) were formed in 1902, and took as their badge the White Horse of Hanover, which had been displayed on the standard of the Northamptonshire Yeomanry Cavalry which existed at the close of the eighteenth century. The regiment are now the 25th Northamptonshire Yeomanry Armoured Car Company Royal Tank Corps.

No. 34. The Northumberland (Hussars) Yeomanry. Date from 1819, and display Alnwick Castle as a badge.

No. 35. The Nottinghamshire (Sherwood Rangers) Hussars trace back to 1794. Their badge is that of a bugle horn.

No. 36. The Nottinghamshire (South Notts) Hussars date from 1826. The Greendale oak figured on medals presented to the Nottingham Troop of Gentlemen Yeomanry in 1803 by Lord Newark to commemorate their services during the Grain Riots of 1800; oak sprigs also were displayed on the guidon of the Wollaston troop of the regiment, which is now hung in the Museum of the R.U.S.I.; about 1900 the regiment adopted as their badge the design of an acorn and oak leaves. Before this they had worn the letters S.N.Y.C. on two crossed swords surmounted by a crown. The regiment are now represented by the 107th (South Nottinghamshire Hussars Yeomanry) Brigade R.F.A.

No. 37. The Oxfordshire Queen's Own Oxfordshire Hussars date from 1831. Their badge was that of the cypher of Queen Adelaide, which was conferred on the regiment, together with

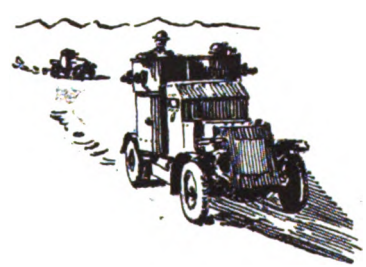
Digitized by Google

the title. to commemorate Queen Adelaide's visit to Oxford in 1835, upon which occasion the regiment furnished guards of honour and escorts to Her Majesty. The Royal mantua purple facings of the regiment were given at the same time. The regiment has now been converted into artillery as the 100th Worcestershire and Oxfordshire Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A.

No. 38. The Pembroke (Castlemartin) Hussars have the proud distinction of having an unique battle honour in that of 'Fishguard,' which they have inherited from the Castlemartin Yeomanry raised in 1793 by Lord Cawdor. In 1797 this corps, together with some Fencibles and Militia, caused the surrender of some 1,400 French who had landed at Fishguard. The badge of the regiment was that of the Prince of Wales's coronet, feathers, and motto. The corps are now represented by the 102nd Pembroke and Cardigan Yeomanry Brigade R.F.A.

No. 39. The Scottish Horse were raised at the time of the South African War, in which they served with distinction. Their badge is that of St. Andrew's cross and a thistle spray. At first the badge was worn plain, but later it was surmounted with a crown. Under reorganisation they received the title 'Scottish Horse Scouts.'

No. 40. The Shropshire Dragoons Yeomanry. Formed in 1795. Have as a badge the Arms of the Shropshire County Council.



Digitized by Google

ALEPPO DURING THE ARMISTICE

By an ex-A.D.C.

We had been at Aleppo some nine months, and had settled down to garrison life. Headquarters had been established in the Austrian Consul's old house, a large stucco building on the southern outskirts of the city, standing in its own compound, where a few palms, orange trees and oleanders struggled for a precarious existence against the high winds and clouds of dust, which in the summer combine with the heat to render Aleppo one of the least desirable residences in the Middle East.

The western side of the city is laid out somewhat after the fashion of modern Cairo; here the rich dwell in good houses, standing for the most part in their own grounds—Syrians, Armenians, Jews, and the usual nondescript gentlemen who, passing under the generic term of Levantine (or, to the British, 'Dago'), are to be found all over the Middle East.

Eastward lies the central square, with a French-looking clock tower, shops, eating-houses and cafés, a cinema theatre, and the Central Caracol, or local Vine Street. Beyond the square is the true native quarter, with its network of narrow streets, indescribably filthy, and boasting a smell which evidences a complete contempt for the elements of sanitation on the part of the inhabitants. A narrow, cobbled street with a few European shops runs under an archway; and, becoming more squalid as it goes, leads to the entrance of the Bazaar, a narrow vaulted passage built of huge blocks

Digitized by Google

of stone, nearly a mile long, 50 feet high and only 10 feet wide, with the usual Eastern shops let into its walls on either side. I could get no information as to when or by whom it was built, the best-informed Aleppines merely stating that it was over 1,200 years old.

At the upper end of the Bazaar lies an open space where the Friday market is held, and beyond that the Citadel. Like all citadels in Northern Syria, it stands on what is described in the guide books as an 'artificial mound' some 200 feet high, and must have been a very strong fortress in pre-artillery days. It was at this time used as a barracks for a small detachment of the Arab army which had marched in under Nadjir, the Emir Feisal's brother. On a hill to the left of the Citadel and clear of the city stands the old Turkish barracks, occupied by several thousand Armenian refugees, mostly women and children, who had been deported from their homes in the north, and had gradually drifted into Aleppo. The Arab Governor was one Jaffa Pasha, a fat, cheerful native of Baghdad, with a working knowledge of French and an inbred affection for a gamble. He had served as a general in the Turkish Army at the beginning of the war, and organised the Senussi rising in the Western Desert until wounded and taken prisoner by the Dorset Yeomanry, when he threw in his lot with the King of the Hedjaz, and was appointed first to a command in his army, and subsequently to Aleppo.

It seems odd, but is none the less a fact, that nearly all the officials appointed by the Arabs had previously served under the Turks; and one wonders whether such appointments were forced on the Hedjaz party by lack of talent among their own followers, or whether they were made with a view to winning the support of men of influence.

Although peace reigned outwardly in the city, there was a strong under-current of unrest, and the Mohammedan hatred for the Christian minorities was only held in check

Digitized by Google

by the presence of British troops. The policy dictated from home involved the restoration of all property taken from the Armenians during the war, the repatriation of deportees, and the return of Armenian girls who had been taken into Turkish houses either as servants or for the harems. The attitude assumed by the leading Armenians did not tend to allay the irritations caused in Mohammedan circles by these orders. An Armenian Republican Committee was formed, who openly declared their distrust of the Arab administration; claimed that Aleppo and the towns of Aintab and Marash, which had not yet been occupied, should form part of an Armenian republic; encouraged their followers to put forward impossible claims for restitution, and, harbouring themselves under British protection, left no stone unturned to inflame the spirit of revenge which had smouldered so long under Turkish oppression. Reports were continually reaching Headquarters of intended massacres, engineered by Turks and unofficially supported, according to the Armenian Committee, by the Arab Government.

Plans had long since been made by the military authorities for dealing with any riots or outbursts of fanaticism which might occur, and troops had been detailed to occupy all strategic points and to guard all Armenian schools and orphanages, should necessity arise; meanwhile the troops were encamped on the outskirts of the town, both because of the difficulty of housing them within the city and the danger of contagious disease, which, owing to the lack of sanitation, was no light one. The cry of 'Wolf!' had so often been raised by the Armenians—on an average once in three days—that we had become pretty well hardened to it, and had almost ceased to believe that the Mohammedans would dare to attempt anything whilst the troops were present. But at last it came.

It was a hot morning, and we were at breakfast, when the telephone bell rang—a riot was reported in the Friday market,

Digitized by Google

and the Mohammedans were attacking the Armenians. Orders were quickly telephoned to the brigade on duty to put No. 1 Scheme into effect at once.

The General and the staff went to their offices, to be in closer touch with the troops; excited Armenians besieged the mess and offices with the wildest reports of great slaughter: 'A thousand Armenians had been massacred'; 'the Arab police had refused assistance, they were joining the Mohammedan rioters, they were firing on the Christians from the Citadel with a machine gun'; 'the Turkish barracks had been rushed and thousands of women and children were being done to death'; 'the boys' orphanage, off the Bazaar, had been attacked'—'for God's sake, let the British save the Christians.' Then the telephone began again: reports began to come in from the troops who were already in their allotted positions. There had been trouble outside the Citadel; a Turk had drawn a knife, and called for vengeance on the Christians; a rush had been made to the Armenian quarter; a riotous crowd had appeared before the Turkish barracks, but had been held in check by a sergeant of the Royal Army Veterinary Corps, who had seen the crowd from his tent hard by, and had held the gate with his revolver until the arrival of the armoured car; patrols were busy in the Armenian quarter searching for armed Turks, and protecting the inhabitants from looters. Everything was now quiet.

By 10 o'clock it became apparent that the situation was well in hand, and the General decided that he could leave his staff to deal with the unlikely contingency of further trouble, and ride round himself to visit the posts. I was to go with him, with a couple of Indian orderlies; the horses were brought round, and we were soon trotting over the cobbles towards the square, where a Brigade Headquarters had been established in the Central Caracol. Just as we turned the corner, a two-horsed arabieh (a sort of victoria) swung round at a gallop, the bare yellow legs of some

Digitized by Google

murdered Armenians sticking stiffly out over the footboard; the driver seemed to have no idea where he was going, and swept past us without pulling rein, anxious only to get as far as possible from the scene of the trouble. Two squadrons of Indian Lancers were standing to their horses in the square, and a patrol had just arrived on foot from the bazaar with three prisoners, two Turks and an Armenian, taken with arms in their hands. After the General had an interview with the Brigadier, we went on to the entrance of the bazaar, where we left our horses and sent them round to meet us at the other end; all the shops had been closed, and we walked through a deserted thoroughfare. The first sight of khaki had been enough for the rioters on both sides, and they had made for their homes to take shelter from the forces of law and order.

It was a long tour. First, we visited the French Consulate, where a guard had been stationed in case the mob decided to wreak their vengeance on the representative of our Allies, who had no troops of his own and had taken up his quarters there; then the schools and orphanages where Armenian children offered a tempting bait to the excited populace, and finished up at the Turkish barracks. The troops were all in their right places, and everything was normal. We got home to lunch about 2 o'clock.

In the afternoon we made the round again, to see that the arrangements for the night were satisfactory, calling on the way back at the Central Caracol, as the General wanted to say a few last words to the Brigadier-in-charge. By 8 o'clock we were home once more, only to find a deputation of leading Armenians waiting for an interview. We went to the ante-room, where we found three dejected-looking individuals sitting on the sofa, their heads sunk on their breasts and their hands drooping between their knees. As the General entered, they commenced their dirge, all speaking together, in a sort of sing-song: 'We have it on the best authority

Digitized by Google

that two hundred young Armenian men have been arrested by the Arab police and are being done to death in the Central Caracol.' 'That, gentlemen,' said the indignant General, 'is impossible. I have just come from it, and there is a British Brigade Headquarters established there, and the only prisoners are a few Turks and two Armenians, taken with arms in their hands by our patrols.' 'Oh! Excellency, you are misinformed; we have it on the best authority that two hundred young Armenian men have been arrested by the Arab police and are being done to death in the Central Caracol.' 'But,' expostulated the now irate General, 'I myself have not left the place half an hour; the story is absurd—how can the Arab police commit any such atrocity in the presence of British troops?' 'For the sake of God, Excellency,' recommenced the dirge, 'be merciful and save them. We have it on the best authority that two hundred——.' But the General could stand no more. 'Gentlemen,' he almost shouted, 'you shall go in a motor-car with one of my staff and see for yourselves.' 'Oh, sir, no; we should all be murdered, your officer with us.' 'Well, if you are so nervous, I will send you in an armoured car, so that you can come to no harm.' He left them, and I was sent round to bring the armoured car and to accompany them. I had lost my dinner, but Fate favours the just; by the time I had got back, with the car, the delegation, unable to face the imaginary danger, even in an armoured car, had taken advantage of my temporary absence and sneaked away. They were heard of no more, and I was able at last to sit down to my hard-earned meal.

Digitized by Google

REGIMENTAL ITEMS OF INTEREST

1st King's Dragoon Guards, Kalk Barracks, B.A.O.R.

RHINE ARMY HORSE SHOW, 1924

(*Jumping Competitions.*)

In the 'Other Ranks jumping,' the King's Dragoon Guards took the four first prizes, and in the 'Section jumping,' the first three prizes. In the 'Novices jumping,' King's Dragoon Guards' Officers secured 2nd, 3rd, 9th and 10th prizes.

In the 'Championship jumping' there were five Officers of the King's Dragoon Guards in the first eight, taking 1st, 3rd, 5th, 7th and 8th prizes.

Inter-Allied Team Jumping (4 *Officers per Nation*).

Great Britain: (Capt. H. S. Hatfeild on 'Drummer,' Capt. W. H. Muir, M.C., on 'Sea Count,' Lieut. L. G. L. Peacocke on 'Black Maria,' and Lieut. J. P. Moreton, M.C., on 'Pudding,' all King's Dragoon Guards) won comfortably, with 71½ faults.

France: 2nd with 95 faults. Team: Lieut. de Freminville, 21st Dragoons; Lieut. de Guirand, 19th Dragoons; Lieut. Lamazière, 5th Dragoons, and Lieut. Metzger, 5th Cuirassiers.

Belgium: Who made 74 faults on their first round alone, retired.

BELGIAN ARMY HORSE SHOW

(Held at Cleves on the 24th August, 1924.)

Inter-Allied Jumping (*Teams of* 4 *Officers per Nation.*)

Great Britain: (Captains Hatfeild and Muir and Lieut. Moreton, King's Dragoon Guards, Lieut. Cripps, King's Royal Rifle Corp) 1st, with eight faults.

Belgium: 2nd, with fourteen faults.

France: 3rd, with sixteen faults.

Open Jumping.

Capt. Hatfeild tied 1st with 0 faults.

Capt. Muir, Lieut. Moreton, Capt. Hatfeild (2), tied 4th, with two faults.

Lieut. Moreton (2) tied 10th, with four faults.

There was one plain wire fence in this course, which all British horses cleared, although never schooled over it.

Digitized by Google

4th/7th Dragoon Guards, Trimulgherry, India

A successful Gymkhana Race Meeting was held at Secunderabad at the beginning of July.

Owing to the monsoon, polo has been at a standstill.

5th/6th Dragoons, Bangalore, India

The 4th/7th Dragoon Guards invited a team to compete against a corresponding team of theirs at Secunderabad in May.

A party of about 40, all ranks, was sent, but was defeated at hockey, tennis and running—only managing to win the football out of the dismounted events. In the mounted events the teams were level, each winning three.

Polo is not going too well owing to the scarcity of ponies as the Regiment is completely cut off from the ordinary Indian market. The ponies bought in England and sent to Egypt in 1922 have turned out a real success, and without them it would have been very difficult to get going.

There is one thing about English 'made' ponies that has been noticed in all ponies that have come East, and that is—they all want six months to a year's schooling after acclimatising before they are fit for tournaments here.

Hounds have once more been started in Bangalore, with a pack of six couple.

9th Queen's Royal Lancers, Sarafand, Palestine

A Troop Mounted Competition was held on July 9.

Results: First, 1st Troop, 'B' Squadron. *Second*, 4th Troop, 'C' Squadron. *Third*, 3rd Troop, 'A' Squadron. *Fourth*, No. 3 Sub-section, M.G. Troop, H.Q. Squadron.

The competition consisted of the following events :—Troop Sergeant to go round the Jumping Course; Troop Corporal to go round Dummy Course; two Troopers per Troop, half-section tent-pegging.

Digitized by Google

A prize of £2 for each winner was given; also a cup was presented for the winning Troop.

12th Royal Lancers, Tidworth

A regimental team won the Blackmore Vale Polo Cup.

At the Royal Tournament Captain R. L. McCreery, M.C., won the Sword, Lance and Revolver Championship; he also won the Officers' Chargers Cup at the International Horse Show on Foxtrot.

The regiment won the Brigade Challenge Cup at the Horse Show held at Tidworth on July 17.

Moy day was celebrated on August 23 and there were sports in the afternoon. Many old comrades were present and showed much skill in their tent-pegging event.

The Yorkshire Hussars, York

Annual training at Ripon, June 7–21. Fourteen officers and 208 other ranks attended.

Considerable enthusiasm was aroused in Ripon, and some forty men have applied to join the regiment from that city.

The Leicestershire Yeomanry, Leicester

The annual training took place at Beaumanor Park, Woodhouse, near Leicester, from May 25 to June 11, 1924. It rained almost incessantly for the last ten days.

The annual sports were held on Whit Monday before a large audience. Two new items, a musical ride and an 'Arab display,' were introduced with success.

A Captains' escort was found by the Regiment on the occasion of the opening of the Royal Show at Leicester on July 2 by H.R.H. Prince Henry.

The Duke of Lancaster's Own Yeomanry, Manchester

The regiment, which is up to full strength in officers and men, went out to camp on June 8th to Catterick Bridge with

Digitized by Google

the 42nd (East Lancashire) Division, T.A., to which it is attached. It was inspected during training by the Inspector of Cavalry. Three days before the end of the fortnight's training the 42nd Division returned to Manchester district to take part in a Ceremonial Review at Worsley Park on June 21. The salute was taken by Sir H. Jeudwine and the regiment marched past at the walk, trot and gallop. On June 20 the regimental war memorial—a window in Manchester Cathedral—was unveiled by General Sir H. Jeudwine, and a Regimental Dinner was held the same evening in the Midland Hotel at which a number of old officers were present.

Northumberland Hussars, Newcastle-on-Tyne

The annual training was held from June 26 to July 6 in Blagdon Park, Northumberland, the camp being on the same site as in 1913. Inspections were held by the Inspector of Cavalry and the Brigade Commander (the O.C. Yorks & Notts. Mounted Brigade).

Scottish Horse, Dunkeld

The Regiment carried out annual training in camp at Blair Atholl from June 14 to 28, 1924.

15*th Lancers, Indian Army, Lucknow*

The regiment has been much split up during this last quarter. One squadron is at Muzaffarpur in Bihar protecting planters, and one squadron is at Ferozepore in the Punjab in connection with the Akali troubles. The remainder is at Lucknow. The regiment, less the Ferozepore Squadron, will march for Delhi manœuvres and Sialkote at the end of October.

17*th Q.V.O. Poona Horse, Bannu, N.W.F.*

The Rajput Squadron (' A ') has been stationed at Rasmak for the last two months. The Squadron has taken its turn in road protection duties, etc., and has found the *terrain*

Digitized by Google

sufficiently favourable to enable them to act as Cavalry. An attempt has been made to start polo on the R.A.F. landing ground; but, owing to the propensity of the Mahsud for shooting at anything presenting a favourable target, the game has to be played under the protection of a cordon of special picquets.

18*th K.E.O. Cavalry, Risalpur*

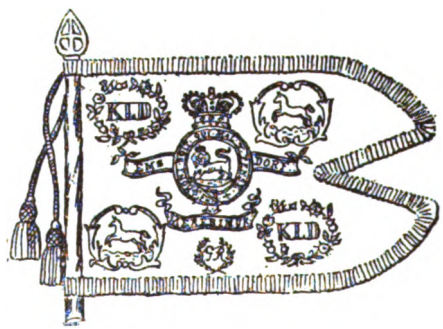
The Regiment is under orders to move to Quetta in relief in October.

A.R.A. Competitions (*India*).—The following places were secured: *O'Moore Creagh Cup* (Hotchkiss Gun), 2nd and 3rd. *Francis Memorial Cup* (Revolver), 4th.

21*st K.G.O. Central India Horse, Quetta*

The Regiment won the Quetta Junior Polo Tournament on June 21, 1924, beating 20th Lancers, who received three goals on the handicap, by five goals to four.

Team.—Lance-Dafadar Baxshi Singh, 1; Lieutenant H. A. Wansbrough-Jones, 2; Captain A. H. Williams, 3; Major C. O. Harvey, 4.



Digitized by Google

NOTES

Battle Honours

Cavalry and Yeomanry Awards

A further list of Battle Honours awarded for the Great War has been issued.

Those which have been selected to be borne on Colours or Appointments are printed in capitals :—

1st Life Guards.

2 Regiments and Household Battalion.

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15, '17,' 'Langemarck, 1914,' 'GHELUVELT,' 'Nonne Bosschen,' 'St. Julien,' 'Frezenberg,' 'SOMME, 1916,' 'Albert, 1916,' 'ARRAS, 1917, '18,' 'Scarpe, 1917, '18,' 'Broodseinde,' 'Poelcappelle,' 'PASSCHENDAELE,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'Cambrai, 1918,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

2nd Life Guards.

2 Regiments and Household Battalion.

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'Marne, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15, '17,' 'Langemarck, 1914,' 'GHELUVELT,' 'Nonne Bosschen,' 'St. Julien,' 'Frezenberg,' 'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'Albert, 1916,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'Broodseinde,' 'Poelcappelle,' 'Passchendaele,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Epéhy,' 'St. QUENTIN CANAL,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'Cambrai, 1918,' 'Selle,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

The Carabiniers (6th Dragoon Guards).

'Mons,' 'Le Cateau,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1915,' 'St. Julien,' 'Arras, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Lys,' 'Hazebrouck,' 'AMIENS,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

Digitized by Google

4th Queen's Own Hussars.

'MONS,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'Retreat from Mons,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'Messines, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Langemarck 1914,' 'ST. JULIEN,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'Avre,' 'AMIENS,' 'Pursuit to Mons,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

7th Queen's Own Hussars.

'KHAN BAGHDADI,' 'SHARQAT,' 'MESOPOTAMIA, 1917–18.'

8th King's Royal Irish Hussars.

'GIVENCHY, 1914,' 'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'Bazentin,' 'Flers-Courcelette,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'St. Quentin,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'ROSIÈRES,' 'AMIENS,' 'ALBERT, 1918,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'St. Quentin Canal,' 'BEAUREVOIR,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

11th Hussars (Prince Albert's Own).

'Mons,' 'LE CATEAU,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'Armentières, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Frezenberg,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'Arras, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Rosières,' 'AMIENS,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'St. Quentin Canal,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'Selle,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–18.'

12th Royal Lancers (Prince of Wales's).

'MONS,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1915,' 'St. Julien,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'Avre,' 'SAMBRE,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

20th Hussars.

'MONS,' 'RETREAT FROM MONS,' 'MARNE, 1914,' 'AISNE, 1914,' 'MESSINES, 1914,' 'YPRES, 1914, '15,' 'Neuve Chapelle,' 'St. Julien,' 'Bellewaarde,' 'Arras, 1917,' 'Scarpe, 1917,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917, '18,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'AMIENS,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'Hindenburg Line,' 'St. Quentin Canal,' 'Beaurevoir,' 'SAMBRE,' 'France and Flanders, 1914–18.'

The Royal Wiltshire Yeomanry (Prince of Wales's Own) (Hussars).

'YPRES, 1917,' 'BROODSEINDE,' 'Passchendaele,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'LYS,' 'MESSINES, 1918,' 'BAILLEUL,' 'KEMMEL,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1916–18.'

The Yorkshire Hussars Yeomanry (Alexandra, Princess of Wales's Own).

'ARRAS, 1918,' 'SCARPE, 1918,' 'DROCOURT-QUEANT,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'CANAL DU NORD,' 'CAMBRAI, 1918,' 'SELLE,' 'VALENCIENNES,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915–18.'

Digitized by Google

The Nottinghamshire Yeomanry (Sherwood Rangers) (Hussars).

'Struma,' 'MACEDONIA, 1916–17,' 'SUVLA,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1915–16.' 'GAZA,' 'El Mughar,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'MEGIDDO,' 'Sharon,' 'DAMASCUS,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

The Duke of Lancaster's Own Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'ALBERT, 1916, '18,' 'YPRES, 1917,' 'PASSCHENDAELE,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'AMIENS,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Epéhy,' 'CAMBRAI, 1918,' 'Selle,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915–18.'

The Lanarkshire Yeomanry (Lancers).

'YPRES, 1918,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918.' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Denbighshire Yeomanry (Hussars).

'YPRES, 1918,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'JERICHO,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Westmorland and Cumberland Yeomanry (Hussars).

'YPRES, 1917,' 'POELCAPELLE,' 'PASSCHENDAELE,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'St. Quentin,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'AMIENS,' 'Albert, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'EPEHY,' 'CAMBRAI, 1918,' 'Selle,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915–18.'

Derbyshire Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'STRUMA,' 'MACEDONIA, 1916–18,' 'SUVLA,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915.' 'EGYPT, 1915–16.'

Gloucestershire Yeomanry (Royal Gloucestershire Hussars).

'SUVLA,' 'Scimitar Hill,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915.' 'RUMANI,' 'RAFAH,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17.' 'GAZA,' 'El Mughar,' 'Nebi Samwil,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'MEGIDDO,' 'Sharon,' 'DAMASCUS,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Suffolk Yeomanry (The Duke of York's Own Loyal Suffolk Hussars).

'SOMME, 1918,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'EPEHY,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'Tell 'Asur,' 'Palestine, 1917–18.'

Worcestershire Yeomanry (The Queen's Own Worcestershire Hussars).

'SUVLA,' 'Scimitar Hill,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'RUMANI,' 'RAFAH,' EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'El Mughar,' 'Nebi Samwil,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'MEGIDDO,' 'Nablus,' 'DAMASCUS,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Digitized by Google

Montgomeryshire Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'SOMME, 1918,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'EPEHY,' 'Pursuit to Mons,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918.' 'EGYPT, 1916–17.' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'JERICHO,' 'Tell 'Asur,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Lothians and Border Horse (Dragoons).

'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915,' 'DOIRAN, 1918,' 'MACEDONIA, 1915–18.'

Queen's Own Royal Glasgow Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'LOOS,' 'YPRES, 1917, '18,' 'PASSCHENDAELE,' 'SOMME, 1918,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'ANCRE, 1918,' 'COURTRAI,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915–18.'

The Lancashire Hussars Yeomanry.

'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'ALBERT, 1916,' 'YPRES, 1917,' 'PILCKEM,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'ROSIERES,' 'Lys,' 'KEMMEL,' 'Scherpenberg,' 'HINDENBERG LINE,' 'CAMBRAI, 1918,' 'Selle,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1916–18.'

Norfolk Yeomanry (The King's Own Royal Regiment) (Dragoons).

'YPRES, 1918,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17.' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Sussex Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'SOMME, 1918,' 'BAPAUME, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'EPEHY,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'France and Flanders, 1918.' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1916–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'Palestine, 1917–18.'

Glamorgan Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'EPEHY,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918.' 'EGYPT, 1916–17.' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'JERICHO,' 'TELL 'ASUR,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

City of London Yeomanry (Rough Riders) (Lancers).

'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918.' 'MACEDONIA, 1916–17,' 'SUVLA,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915.' 'RUMANI,' 'Egypt, 1915–16.' 'GAZA,' 'El Mughar,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

2nd County of London Yeomanry (Westminster Dragoons).

'COURTRAI,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'SUVLA,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'SUEZ CANAL,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17.' 'GAZA,' 'El Mughar,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Digitized by Google

3rd County of London Yeomanry (Sharpshooters) (Hussars).

'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918.' 'MACEDONIA, 1916–17.' 'Suvla,' 'SCIMITAR HILL,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915.' 'EGYPT, 1915–16.' 'GAZA,' 'EL MUGHAR,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Northamptonshire Yeomanry (Dragoons).

'NEUVE CHAPELLE,' 'YPRES, 1915,' 'ARRAS, 1917,' 'SCARPE, 1917,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1914–17,' 'VITTORIO VENETO,' 'ITALY, 1917–18.'

East Riding of Yorkshire Yeomanry (Lancers).

'SELLE,' 'VALENCIENNES,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'EL MUGHAR,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Lincolnshire Yeomanry (Lancers).

'SELLE,' 'VALENCIENNES,' 'SAMBRE,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'EL MUGHAR,' 'NEBI SAMWIL,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

Welsh Horse (Lancers).

'SOMME, 1918,' 'Bapaume, 1918,' 'HINDENBURG LINE,' 'Epéhy,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1918,' 'GALLIPOLI, 1915,' 'EGYPT, 1915–17,' 'GAZA,' 'JERUSALEM,' 'JERICHO,' 'Tell 'Asur,' 'PALESTINE, 1917–18.'

King Edward's Horse (The King's Oversea Dominions Regiment).

'LOOS,' 'YPRES, 1917,' 'PILCKEM,' 'CAMBRAI, 1917,' 'LYS,' 'ESTAIRES,' 'HAZEBROUCK,' 'PURSUIT TO MONS,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915–17, 1918.' 'ITALY, 1917–18.'

South Irish Horse.

'LOOS,' 'SOMME, 1916, '18,' 'ALBERT, 1916,' 'ST. QUENTIN,' 'ROSIERES,' 'AVRE,' 'YPRES, 1918,' 'COURTRAI,' 'FRANCE AND FLANDERS, 1915–18.'

Ypres League

On Monday, August 4, Field-Marshal Earl Ypres attended a Reunion of the Ypres League at Ypres. He opened a British Club for the English residents in the area, and also inspected the Ypres League rest room.

A procession was formed at Ypres Station of a large body of pilgrims and residents, being preceded by a Belgian guard of honour and band.

Digitized by Google

On arriving at the Market Square, the Field-Marshal, in his speech, referred to the gallant part played by the Belgians when their territory was violated ten years ago by the German Army.

He read the following telegram to the Ypres League from H.M. King George:—

'As Patron-in-Chief, I am glad to learn that on this tenth anniversary of the outbreak of war members of the Ypres League are making a pilgrimage to the town of immortal fame, whose name they bear. In thanking them for their loyal message I am proud to join in this solemn tribute to the memory of those heroes whose graves are in the keeping of our proved and trusted friends, and my heart goes out to all those who mourn their dear ones.'

The Field Marshal then spoke in French, and alluded to the heroic defence of Liége by the Belgians and how it delayed the German advance, giving time for the British Expeditionary Force to get to France and complete mobilisation.

Disbanded Cavalry Regiments

The following additional notes to the article on 'Disbanded Cavalry Regiments,' by Major H. G. Parkyn, have been given to the author by Mr. L. E. Buckell, the well-known authority on Cavalry and Yeomanry uniforms, and help to make the story more complete.

21*st Light Dragoons* (1794–1820).

The official Inspection Return of 1809 describes the Regiment as '21st (or Yorkshire) Regiment, Light Dragoons,' although, as stated in the article, no mention of such a title is made in the Army Lists of the period.

24*th Light Dragoons* (1794–1802).

A portrait in the Taunton Museum shows an officer, evidently of the Regiment, in a blue jacket with yellow facings and silver lace. The usual Light Dragoon helmet has a leopard skin turban and a red and white hackle plume. The band of metal above the peak of the helmet is shown inscribed with the words 'or Glory' on the left side. The Regiment was ordered to wear blue instead of red in February, 1796.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE CAVALRY CLUB WAR MEMORIAL.

Digitized by Google

27th Light Dragoons.

Mr. Buckell has seen a miniature of an officer of this Regiment in which the uniform is blue, faced with white and silver lace. The Light Dragoon helmet has a red turban and plume, while on the right side of the metal band above the peak are the words 'XXVII Light.' The Regiment's number was changed to 24th in 1804.

Cavalry Club War Memorial

The illustration represents the form which the Committee adopted for a Memorial to the 272 Members of the Club who gave their lives in the Great War. It was decided that a statuette in bronze of a riderless charger entitled 'The Empty Saddle' would be an appropriate form for this memorial to take, and its production was entrusted to Mr. Haseltine and Sir Edwin Lutyens, A.R.A., who were responsible respectively for the statuette and the marble pedestal. The charger stands about 14 inches high at the withers; the height of the pedestal is 5 feet. Within a recess in the pedestal is placed a suitably bound book which contains a record on vellum of the names of the fallen by Regiments, with the crest of each unit in an illuminated border. The book can be removed from the recess at any time for inspection. The Memorial is on the landing between the two pillars outside the Club Dining Room.

The Hunters' Improvement and National Light Horse Breeding Society

At the June meeting of the Council, at 12, Hanover Square, London, W., the principal business was the consideration of suggestions in respect of the 1925 Spring Show made by the Judges and Stewards in March last. They dealt specifically with such questions as the Veterinary Examination; separate judges for young stock and hunters, respectively; the conditions of entry in the four-year-old led class; parading of group classes, etc.

Digitized by Google

Twenty-three Members of the Council were present, and after discussion it was resolved :—

Veterinary Examination : 1. That no alteration shall be made in the existing method.

2. That all animals in the Hunter Classes, other than Colts and Stallions licensed under the Horse Breeding Act of 1918, will be examined and no Horse will be eligible to enter the Judging Ring unless it is passed sound and declared free from disease by the Society's Veterinary Surgeons at the Show.

Judges : The same Judges will officiate in the Breeding and Riding Classes.

Four-Year-Old Led Class : The same rule to apply as that in force in the young stock classes—

They shall be exhibited undocked and unclipped, and manes must not be hogged.

Group Class : That the number of animals in each Group shall be reduced to three by the Judges before such Group enters the main Judging Ring. Arrangements to be made to parade the Groups on the Wednesday afternoon.

Jumping Classes : The advisability of an increased allotment of prizes to these Classes with an increased height of the Jumps was deferred to the next meeting.

Royal Show at Leicester.—A larger and representative entry of hunters in both the breeding and riding sections had been received for the Royal Show.

Hunter Fillies.—The offer of £400 in premiums for three-year-old fillies stinted to a thoroughbred or registered hunter sire, had been fully taken up this year.

Location of Brood Mares.—Seven mares had now been placed out, and the offer of other gift mares were under consideration. Applicants still exceed donors, and the Council would again appeal for the co-operation of Masters of Hounds to intercept any good mares that are intended for the kennels with a view to getting their owners to delay the day of slaughter so as to allow of their usefulness being prolonged. They would also invite members who are presenting mares privately to suitable custodians to send in full particulars to the Secretary, Mr. A. B. Charlton, for registration purposes.

Digitized by Google

SPORTING NOTES

THE Editor takes this opportunity of appealing for contributions to the Sporting Notes.

The JOURNAL being issued quarterly it is unavoidable that much of the information should be stale news to readers. At the same time it is felt that there are many subscribers abroad who may not have the opportunity of seeing the daily papers regularly, and who would like to see a short summary of the chief sporting events which have taken place during the quarter. It is primarily for them that such items as the Racing Notes are published.

Equally, many readers at home would like to hear of events in India and lsewhere, accounts of which do not appear in the English papers.

The list of Sub-Editors abroad is published with each issue of the JOURNAL. Any contributions sent to them will be forwarded to the office of the CAVALRY JOURNAL at home.

Those from India should be sent to the Commandant, Equitation School, Saugor.

It should be remembered that copy has to go to press a considerable time before publication and, in order to give time for revision, should reach the office at home a month before the date of publication.

The dates of publication are 1st January, April, July and October respectively.

RACING NOTES

Ascot

Seldom has an Ascot meeting been held under more pleasant conditions. The weather was bright and warm, the going as near perfection as possible, and the fields good. The running of the three-year-olds went to show that, with one possible exception, we have yet to see a really good horse. Sansovino certainly won the Prince of Wales's Stakes, but the opposition was not strong, and in the Hardwicke Stakes he finished unplaced to Chosroes. Tom Pinch, after a series of failures, won the St. James's Palace Stakes from a useful field including St. Germans, Salmon Trout and Green Fire; but as he was receiving 7 lbs. from St. Germans, who finished second, the form does not make him out more than useful, and was further discounted by a subsequent failure in the Rouse Memorial Stakes, in which he was decisively beaten by Twelve Pointer and My Lord. Polyphontes has been more than once well backed by the

Digitized by Google

stable and confirmed the opinion held of him by winning the Ascot Derby, Hurstwood (gave 5 lbs.) being unplaced. Like Sansovino, however, he was defeated by Chosroes and others on the Friday.

Straitlace, on the other hand, added to her reputation by winning the valuable Coronation Stakes comfortably, and will have to be seriously considered when the day of the St. Leger arrives. Mumtaz Mahal again demonstrated her inability to get a mile in good company.

The two-year-old racing likewise did not show us anything of outstanding merit, though a different story may have to be told in the autumn. The chief winners were Iceberg (Coventry Stakes), Margeritta (Queen Mary Stakes), Black Friar (New Stakes), and Diagoras (The Windsor Castle Stakes). Of the above, Black Friar, by Friar Marcus out of Throsga, has now won three races in succession, and though his sire is not noted for breeding stayers, the colt has undoubted speed.

Turning to the races for older horses, the Gold Cup proved a triumph for France, Massine and Filibert de Savoie finishing first and second. Major Cayzer may possibly regret having run Poisoned Arrow in this race, instead of reserving him for the Hardwicke Stakes, as even Childs's patient nursing could not enable him to last through a strongly-run race over this tiring course. Hopes of a royal victory in the Hunt Cup were dashed to the ground when Dinkie, starting at 50–1 and ridden by a little-known apprentice, got up in the last few strides to defeat Weathervane by a neck. Rose Prince, the winner of last year's Cesarewitch, again proved himself a fine stayer by winning the Alexandra Stakes of 2 miles and 6 furlongs. His sire, Prince Palatine, won the Gold Cup two years in succession in 1912 and 1913, though whether he would have done so had not Tracery been brought down by a man who ran out on to the course, was a matter of considerable discussion at the time.

The most noticeable thing about the meeting was that two of the most powerful stables in England, those of Alec Taylor and R. Dawson, failed to win a single race between them.

The Eclipse Stakes

This race, run for on July 18, did little to unravel the tangle of the three-year-old form. Polyphontes had finished behind St. Germans and Parmenio in the Derby, but over the Sandown course made short work of both. He was always well placed, and McLachlan ceased riding some distance from the judge's box.

The winner's last outing was in the Hardwicke Stakes, when he finished unplaced to Chosroes, but in this race he is stated to have been heavily bumped more than once, and on the present occasion there was good money for him in the ring.

He is a long-striding colt by Polymelus out of St. Josephine, and, providing all goes well with him, he should go very near winning the St. Leger. A match between him and Straitlace would be worth going a long way to see, and it is doubtful which would be made favourite.

Digitized by Google

THE ECLIPSE STAKES, a Sweepstakes of 115 sovs. if left in, with 1,500 sovs. added; owner of second to receive 900 sovs. and third 150 sovs.; breeder of winner 500 sovs. and breeder of second 100 sovs. One mile and a quarter.

POLYPHONTES, b c, by Polymelus—St. Josephine (Mr. S. B. Joel), 3 yrs, 8st. 9lb..... W. McLachlan, sen. 1
PAPYRUS, br c, by Tracery—Miss Matty (Mr. J. P. Hornung), 4 yrs. 9st. 10lb. H. Jelliss 2
ST. GERMANS, b c, by Swynford—Hamoaze (Lord Astor), 3 yrs. 8st. 2lb. F. Bullock 3

Also ran—Mr. Reid Walker's Inkerman, Lord Rosebery's Parmenio, Mr. S. Tattersall's Blue Lake, Sir A. Bailey's Burslem, Mr. G. Heath's Aerostar.

(Winner trained by De Mestre, at Newmarket.)

Betting—13 to 8 agst St. Germans, 11 to 2 Inkerman, 7 to 1 each POLYPHONTES and Parmenio, 8 to 1 Blue Lake, 10 to 1 Papyrus, 100 to 1 each against the others.

Place betting—5 to 4 agst Inkerman, 6 to 4 Blue Lake; others in proportion.

Won by two lengths; three lengths separated second and third. Inkerman was fourth, and Blue Lake last.

Goodwood

The Sussex Stakes would appear to have finally disposed of the claims of Tom Pinch to be regarded as a classic horse. He got well away and held a clear lead entering the straight, but failed to make any response when tackled by Diophon at the distance. At this point the latter appeared a sure winner, but Burslem, in receipt of 17 lbs., then challenged and eventually won somewhat easily.

The Goodwood Stakes resulted in a very easy win for His Majesty's London Cry. Marsh had evidently got him exactly to his liking and in the paddock he looked a picture. In the race Archibald always had him nicely placed, and challenging at the distance drew away to win by six lengths.

Mumtaz Mahal shewed her usual burst of speed in the earlier stages of the King George's Stakes, but began to shorten her stride after going five furlongs, and had none too much to spare at the finish In fact, in less capable hands than those of Archibald, she might easily have been beaten The way in which he balanced her and coaxed her into a final effort was masterly.

In the Lavant Stakes Lord Astor brought out a very smart two-year-old in Saucy Sue, by Swynford out of Good and Gay. She is probably the best youngster we have seen this year.

POLO

Inter-Regimental Tournament 1924

The following units were represented :—

Royal Dragoons.		*13th/18th Hussars.*	
Major F. W. Wilson-Fitzgerald ...	1	Lieut.-Col. E. F. Twist... ...	1
Mr. P. L. Wilson	2	Mr. J. Hirsch	2
Major R. Houston	3	Capt. S. V. Kennedy	3
Bt.-Major E. W. Miles	BACK	Capt. C. H. Miller	BACK

Digitized by Google

10th Hussars.		*The Essex Regiment.*	
Mr. C. B. C. Harvey	1	Major H. R. Bowen	1
Major G. E. Gosling	2	Lieut.-Col. A. Ingledon-Webber	2
Lieut.-Col. M. Graham	3	Major R. Neave...	3
Capt. I. D. Guthrie	BACK	Major J. H. Pattisson	BACK
12th Lancers.		*14th/20th Hussars.*	
Capt. R. L. McCreery	1	Major J. A. T. Miller	1
Mr. W. S. McCreery	2	Capt. G. N. Hamer	2
Major H. V. S. Charrington ...	3	Major F. B. Hurndall	3
Capt. J. de Pret	BACK	Capt. J. de Wend-Fenton ...	BACK
7th Hussars.		*8th Hussars.*	
Mr. R. B. Sheppard	1	Capt. W. Crawshay	1
Mr. F. R. C. Fosdick	2	Mr. J. E. M. Bradish-Ellames...	2
Sir Digby Warren	3	Mr. G. P. Kilkelly	3
Capt. G. Fielden	BACK	Lieut.-Col. J. Van de Byl ...	BACK
17th/21st Lancers.		*Royal Artillery.*	
Lieut.-Col. T. P. Melvill	1	Mr. H. Russell	1
Mr. D. C. Miller	2	Lieut.-Col. H. O. Hutchison ...	2
Major V. N. Lockett	3	Lieut.-Col. Corbould-Warren ...	3
Capt. D. C. Boles	BACK	Major. E. Pease-Watkin ...	BACK
Royal Horse Guards.		*Life Guards.*	
Mr. F. Ward-Jackson	1	Mr. W. Filmer-Sankey	1
Mr. H. Broughton	2	Marquess of Blandford... ...	2
Major G. Rees-Mogg	3	Col. H. C. S. Ashton	3
Mr. H. Abel Smith	BACK	Hon. A. H. A. Baillie	BACK

RESULTS.

First Ties.

Royal Dragoons beat 13th/18th Hussars 3—0.
10th Hussars beat The Essex Regiment 7—1.
12th Lancers beat 14th/20th Hussars 9—8.
7th Hussars beat 8th Hussars 5—4.

Second Ties.

17th/21st Lancers beat 10th Hussars 9—1.
12th Lancers beat Royal Dragoons 8—1.
Royal Artillery beat Royal Horse Guards 11—3.
Life Guards w.o. 7th Hussars scratched.

Semi-Final.

17th/21st Lancers beat 12th Lancers 7—2.

It looked on paper as if the 17th/21st would have a fairly easy win. but it was not until the 4th chucker that they were able to show their superiority.

The 12th Lancers were right on the top of their form during the first half of the match, and the 17th/21st, finding that they could make no headway, were playing a very wild game. Colonel Melvill appeared to lose confidence in his No. 2 and was flying about the ground trying to do everyone else's work as well as his own, with the result that when the ball did come up he was not in his place to play the brilliant forward game for which he is so well known. On the 12th Lancer side Captain De Pret put up a fine defence, turning it to attack on many occasions in a brilliant manner. We have

Digitized by Google

never seen him play so well and he kept his head throughout. Major Charrington played an excellent game at 3 and fully justified his handicap. The brothers McCreery both worked hard for their side and the combination of the team throughout was excellent. When we consider that the winners had two international players in the team, the fight made by the 12th was most creditable and promising for the future. It was quite late in the match when the 17th/21st found their true form and eventually won comfortably. The new player in the 17th team, Mr. Desmond Miller, played exceptionally well throughout the game and it is a pity that his Colonel did not realise earlier in the game how well his No. 2 was playing. However, it was good for the spectators, who saw a well-contested match, instead of an easy victory, as it should have been on form.

Royal Artillery beat Life Guards 6—5.

Final.

17th/21st Lancers beat Royal Artillery 9—3.

In spite of the fact that Saturday, July 6, was selected for His Majesty's Garden Party at Buckingham Palace, and also for the final of the Lawn Tennis at Wimbledon and the final day at Henley, the attendance at Hurlingham was as large as in pre-war days. The Duke of Connaught occupied the Royal Box and presented the cup to the winners.

When the bell rang for the match to commence there were few amongst the spectators who thought that the game could be anything but a walk-over for the veteran team, but there are always surprises in the Inter-Regimental and the fight put up by the Artillery was worthy of the old traditions of the tournament. Their combination was excellent and although there was nothing really brilliant in their play, they all went at it from start to finish with a determination which was grand to watch. Lieutenant-Colonel Warren played a great game and had they been equally mounted with the winners they might easily have turned the tables. As usual the inferiority of ponies told in the latter half of the game. Of course, there is no question that the winners were the better team, but they might easily have suffered defeat as the match was played, and it was only quite at the end of the match that the 17th again found their true form, and even then it was obvious to the spectators that the Artillery were handicapped by the inferiority of some of their ponies.

The Subalterns' Cup

In the final round the 17th/21st Lancers beat the Life Guards by four goals to three.

The other semi-finalists were the Royal Artillery and the 12th Lancers.

The polo in the final was of a high order, and the players displayed a dash and enthusiasm that has sometimes been lacking in the international trial games.

If anything, the Life Guards were better mounted, but the Lancers were better together. Probably the two best players on the day were Mr. Forester for the winners and Mr. Filmer Sankey for the losers. There is no reason

Digitized by Google

why both these two and also Mr. W. S. McCreery should not train on into international players.

At the end of the 5th period the Life Guards were leading by 2 goals, but in the 6th the 17th/21st attacked strongly, and, aided by brilliant play on the part of Mr. Forester and Mr. Walford, put on 3 goals.

The last period was very level. Each side in turn was unlucky not to score, but the 17th/21st were just able to hold on to their lead and bring off the double event.

The teams were—

17th/21st Lancers.—R. B. Cooke, No. 1; H. C. Walford, No. 2; D. J. C. Miller, No. 3; and H. W. Forester, back.

Life Guards.—R. A. F. Thorp, No. 1; W. Filmer Sankey, No. 2; the Hon. A. M. A. Baillie, No. 3; and R. C. H. Jenkinson, back.

Cairo Season 1923–24

Lady Maxwell's Cup

Three teams competed :—

R.H.A.—Capt. C. Allfrey, Capt. W. R. E. Harrison, Mr. C. Nicholson, Mr. B. J. Fowler.

5th/6th Dragoons.—Major H. L. Jones, Capt. J. M. Graham, Major H. O. Wiley, Mr. D. R. Frazer.

9th Lancers.—Capt. C. H. M. Peto, Lieut.-Col. Green, Major G. F. Reynolds, Lieut.-Col. F. W. L. S. H. Cavendish.

In the semi-final, played January 9th, the R.H.A. beat 5th/6th Dragoons by 2 goals to 1.

The final was played on January 16th and produced a hard fought game. The R.H.A. had the best of the game to start with, but the 9th made a great effort and were leading by a goal in the sixth chucker. The R.H.A. scored the equalising goal just before the final gong. Extra time was played and the R.H.A. hit the winning goal amid great excitement.

Inter-Regimental Cup

R.H.A.—Mr. B. J. Fowler, Capt. W. R. E. Harrison, Mr. C. G. Nicolson, Capt. C. W. Allfrey.

3rd Hussars.—Mr. H. M. Naylor, Mr. T. Price, Lieut.-Col. F. R. Burnside, Capt. C. F. Clarke.

9th Lancers.—Hon. D. C. F. Erskine, Capt. L. H. Harris, Lieut.-Col. F. Cavendish, Major G. F. Reynolds.

15th/19th Hussars.—Capt. N. W. Leaf, Mr. J. G. Leaf, Lieut.-Col. Hon. J. D. Y. Bingham, Major J. Godman.

In the semi-finals, played February 6, the 9th beat the R.H.A. by 5 goals to 3 after a good game and the 15th/19th beat the 3rd Hussars by 6 goals to 2.

The final was played on January 8 and produced a well fought game. The 15th/19th, who had only landed in the country ten days, led by 4–2 at half time. In the second half the superior condition of the 9th Lancers' ponies told. The final score was 7 goals to 5 in favour of the 9th Lancers, who thus secured the cup for the third year in succession.

Digitized by Google

The Subalterns' Cup

R.H.A.—Mr. L. G. Holmes, Mr. B. J. Fowler, Mr. C. G. G. Nicolson, Mr. S. C. Kirkman.

9th Lancers.—Mr. J. D. Gilroy, Mr. C. C. Lomax, Hon. D. C. F. Erskine, Mr. H. A. Macdonald.

15th/19th Hussars.—Mr. T. J. Arnott, Mr. R. L. Agnew, Mr. J. G. Leaf, Mr. C. Cockayne-Frith.

3rd Hussars.—Mr. C. D. Phillips, Mr. H. M. Naylor, Mr. T. Price, Mr. W. G. Dalrymple.

Semi-final, played March 3, 15th/19th Hussars beat 9th Lancers by 6 goals to 4.

R.H.A. beat 3rd Hussars by 3 goals to 2.

Final, played March 5, the R.H.A. beat 15th/19th Hussars by 5 goals to 3 after a very good game. The score was 3 all at the end of the 3rd chucker and was unaltered at the beginning of the 6th. The R.H.A. made a great effort in the last chucker and won a hard game by 5 goals to 3.

The Open Cup

Tournament began March 31.

R.H.A.—Mr. B. J. Fowler, Capt. W. R. E. Harrison, Mr. G. C. Nicolson, Capt. C. W. Allfrey.

9th Lancers.—Hon. D. Erskine, Lieut.-Col. J. Greene, Capt. L. H. Harris, Major G. Reynolds.

3rd Hussars.—Capt. L. F. H. Wiston, Mr. T. Price, Lieut.-Col. F. R. Burnside, Capt. C. F. Clarke.

Vagrants.—Wing-Commander J. E. Baldwin, Prince Omar Halim, Mr. C. M. Patrick, Count M. de Zogheb.

15th/19th Hussars.—Capt. N. W. Leaf, Mr. J. G. Leaf, Lieut.-Col. Hon. J. D. Y. Bingham, Major J. Godman. (Mr. T. J. Arnott played in first round in place of Mr. J. G. Leaf.)

1st Round.—9th Lancers beat R.H.A. by 7 goals to 4.

Semi-finals.—9th Lancers beat 3rd Hussars by 12 goals to 2, 15th/19th Hussars beating Vagrants by 9 goals to 2.

Final.—The final was played on April 4 and produced a really good game. At the end of the fourth chucker the score was 4 all and 6 all at the end of the 6th chucker. After six minutes' extra time a good bit of passing enabled Captain Leaf to score the deciding goal with a very long shot, the 15th/19th Hussars winning by 7 goals to 6.

H.M. King Fuad's Cup

The winners of the open cup are entitled to play for H.M. King Fuad's Cup against a team selected by the Polo Committee.

The team selected was Mr. C. M. Patrick, Captain L. H. Harris, Lieut.-Col. J. Greene, Captain C. W. Allfrey.

The 15th/19th Hussars, who were better mounted than in previous matches, thanks to the generosity of some of their late opponents, had no great difficulty in disposing of the above side by 8–3.

Digitized by Google

The prospects for next season are very good. The 9th Lancers, although they have been moved to Palestine, will still be able to compete in the principal tournaments.

The 16th/5th Lancers have arrived from India, bringing a fine stud of ponies.

A considerable number of trained Government ponies have been issued to Infantry battalions on the £4 hire system, and it is hoped that they will enter teams in many of the tournaments.

One ground has been completely renewed and steps taken to improve the other two.

A long programme, including many tournaments for low handicap teams has been arranged.

Simla

Simla holds two tournaments each year—one the Beresford Open tournament and the other the Viceroy's Staff Handicap tournament. This year, in the Beresford tournament, six teams entered—Patiala A, Patiala B Snowdon, Indcav, the Foxhunters, and the K.S.O.B. Lancers (Bharatpur). That keen sportsman, Lord Rawlinson, was unable through an injury in an earlier polo match to play for Snowdon, but he had the satisfaction of seeing his team reach the final. Patiala A, with Major Jaswant Singh, Colonel Jogendra Singh, Lieutenant Thakur Singh and General Chanda Singh playing, had a team handicapped at 34 goals, and it was expected that they would take away the cup. In the semi-finals, however, the K.S.O.B. Lancers, for whom H.H. the Maharaja of Bharatpur was playing, put up a plucky fight against them, to be beaten in the end by nine goals to five.

To reach the final, Snowdon had to play two games. They defeated the Indcav team by five goals to three and the Foxhunters by eight goals to four. In the final, Patiala A had an advantage in ponies, and Snowdon also found it hard to contend with the very accurate hitting of Jaswant Singh, whom English opponents of the Tigers last year will remember. Patiala won by nine goals to two. Snowdon's team comprised two "Piffers," Major J. C. R. Gannon and Major F. A. Macartney, Major L. M. Gibbs (Coldstream Guards) and Captain G. E. Younghusband (11th Hussars). The Indcav team comprised Colonel H. Ward (formerly of the 2nd Lancers), Major Beresford (Hodson's Horse) and Captain E. S. Prinsep (Probyn's Horse) and Captain C. H. Law (8th K.G.O. Light Cavalry). The Foxhunters' team included three of the Viceroy's A.D.C.s—Captain D. B. Daly (of the Blues), Captain J. F. B. Combe (11th Hussars) and Captain H. L. Mostyn Owen (19th K.G.O. Lancers). The fourth was Major D. Pott (6th D.C.O. Lancers).

In the Viceroy's Staff Tournament the finalists were Indcav and Patiala B. The former were outplayed and Patiala won by nine goals to two.

These tournaments were played in May. The monsoon puts an end to polo in Simla in June or early July, and the picturesque ground at Annandale becomes a jungle until October, when polo is resumed. Mention of Annandale will probably bring back happy memories to those readers of the Cavalry

Digitized by Google

JOURNAL who soldiered in India in days gone by. They will recollect, too, General Chanda Singh. He played in tournaments at Simla over 30 years ago; and now, despite his grey hairs, he can play a vigorous and clever game.

RIFLE SHOOTING

The following are the results of the chief overseas matches—

Queen Victoria's Trophy.

India.—1st, 11th Hussars; 2nd, Queen's Bays.

Abroad elsewhere than India.—1st, 9th Lancers.

King George's Cup (Officers).

1st, Suffolk Regiment; 2nd, 11th Hussars.

Royal Irish Cup (W.O. and Sergeants).

1st, Suffolk Regiment; 2nd, Queen's Bays; 3rd, 11th Hussars.

Squadron Shield.

1st, H.Q. Squadron, 11th Hussars; 2nd, 'B' Squadron, 11th Hussars.

Duke of Connaught's Cup (Revolver).

1st, Queen's Bays; 2nd, 14th/20th Hussars.

The outstanding feature of the competitions was the success of the 11th Hussars.

Many of our older readers will remember the remarkable run of successes gained by this regiment whilst quartered in Ireland from 1903–08, and they now appear to have quite regained their old form.

THE INTERNATIONAL HORSE SHOW

Five countries competed for the Prince of Wales's Cup, the competitors being as under—

Italy.—Don Chisciotte, Captain Count Borsarelli; Sorriso, Major Tappi; Molly Rolly, Captain Cacciandra; Miramare (reserve), Captain Forquet.

France.—Manitoba, Lieut. Lemoyne; Herseur, Lieut. de Briolle; Quien Sabe, Lieut. Bizard; Pantin (reserve), Capt. d'Antras.

U.S.A.—Miss America, Major Barry; Bally McShane, Lieut. Bouteau; Little Canada, Major Taulbee; Nigra (reserve), Major Sloan Doak.

Switzerland.—Admiral, Capt. H. von der Weid; Girandole, Lieut. W. Stuber; Sailor Boy, Capt. Buhler; Weber (reserve), Capt. Ch. Kuhn.

England.—Daddy Longlegs, Lieut.-Col. G. F. H. Brooke; War Baby, Capt. de Fonblanque; Woodcat, Lieut. C. H. M. Brunker; Togo (reserve), Capt. J. H. Dudgeon.

Digitized by Google

The result was a brilliant win for England, whose representatives only lost 10 points. Italy was 2nd with 15½ faults and the United States 3rd with 17½.

It is only a few years ago that we were quite unable to compete with the best of the foreign representatives, but this year both the riding and the schooling were almost perfect.

The Connaught Cup was won by the Weedon Equitation School with Wanton. The School also turned out other good prize-winners in War Baby, Delia, Daddy Longlegs and Winstowe, and the performances of these horses reflect the greatest credit on the officers responsible for their training.

Events in the open jumping were won by Lieut. Bouteau's (U.S.A.) Bally McShane and Major Tappi's Sorriso.

Aldershot Command Horse Show

The above was held on July 25 and 26. A large number of entries had been obtained, and the general arrangements were excellent.

In the show classes that for chargers was won by Diplomat, a fine upstanding chestnut by Sir Edgar. He was bought by Colonel Wood and sent to his present owner, Captain Dudgeon (Scots Greys), from the Cavalry School at Netheravon.

The heavyweight hunters class was won by Oliver, a very good type of weight carrier, bought in Ireland by Colonel Alexander for the Army and issued to Major Derek Richardson (10th Hussars).

There were several nice horses amongst the lightweight hunters, and Mr. P. Donner (10th Hussars) brought out an exceptionally nice horse in Wing Wall. He is a brown horse, 7 years old, by Warmslane, by Walmsgate, out of Wild Delight, and was bought by his owner in Ireland. Full of quality and with smooth action he looks a lightweight hunter all over.

The majority of the spectators anticipated the judges' verdict when he was placed first in the King's Challenge Cup for the best horse in the Aldershot Command.

The jumping was of a high standard. Captain Farrelly's Achchha should be up to the best international class. He is an Indian countrybred, 8 years old, and was bought from the Remounts in Mesopotamia. Well schooled and a natural jumper, he has just that knack of putting in a short one at the last moment that makes all the difference between winning and losing. Major Walwyn showed us another fine jumper in Stuck Again, a big bay full of quality, and several others were little behind these two.

The N.C.O.s' jumping was won by a perfectly schooled chestnut mare from the R.A. Depôt Brigade, Woolwich, well ridden by B. S. M. Greig.

The Musical Ride by the 13th/18th Hussars was well up to the high standard usually reached in this event, and the Cossack riding by a party of the same regiment was extraordinarily good, the horsemanship being of a standard a very long way out of the ordinary.

Digitized by Google

The attendance was moderate. This was partly accounted for by the weather, which was unfavourable on both days, but perhaps more so by the fact that the show is now more in the nature of an inspection in which 'best turn out' events predominate. These have little interest for the general public.

2ND CAVALRY BRIGADE HORSE SHOW

Held at Tidworth on July 16, and was, luckily, favoured with fine weather, which enabled a large gathering of spectators to enjoy a most interesting exhibition.

The show was inaugurated last year and on that occasion the 17th/21st Lancers carried all before them.

This year they were, if anything, better, but met more than their match in the 12th Lancers. This regiment gave a wonderfully fine display and eventually gained a well-deserved victory.

In the inter-troop competition, No. 3 Troop 'C' Squadron 12th Lancers defeated No. 2 Troop 'A' Squadron of the same regiment by 2 points, No. 1 Troop 'A' Squadron 17th/21st Lancers being third.

The class for Officers' chargers was won by Captain McCreery's (12th Lancers) Foxtrot, this horse standing out both as regards training and conformation.

That for the best trained remount was remarkable for the high standard and uniformity of training, the eventual winner being Trooper McCabe, 17th/21st Lancers.

The jumping of all ranks was well up to the standard, and if the form in the various events of the assault at arms was scarcely as good, this was accounted for by the hard state of the ground, which rendered the task of taking pegs off 'scotching' horses a very difficult one.

The best exhibition in these classes was given by the 14th/20th Hussars, who won both the Tent Pegging and the Lance, Sword and Revolver competitions.

LATE NEWS

THE ST. LEGER

Until a few days before the race this looked like being the most interesting Leger that had been known for many years, but an epidemic of coughing ran through many stables, completely destroying the chances of several fancied candidates.

First Straitlace was stricken down. Then the Manton stable was affected, and St. Germans, Bright Knight and Hurstwood were all withdrawn. Green Fire and Reggio survived until the morning of the race, but both succumbed at the last moment.

Digitized by Google

Sansovino had been under suspicion of lameness, and appeared to be scarcely wound up, and although his trainer had hopes of repeating his Derby victory the starting price of 7—1 was significant.

Polyphontes had been a firm favourite since the withdrawal of Straitlace, and held the position until the end. In the race he apparently had only Santorb to beat at the distance; but in the last few strides Salmon Trout, beautifully ridden by Carslake, swept down on the pair, and eventually won by two lengths.

The winner is the third Tetrarch colt to win the St. Leger, and there can be no doubt about the ability of this horse to sire long-distance winners when mated with mares that come of a staying family.

THE ST. LEGER STAKES of 50 sovs. each; h ft., or 5 sovs. if declared, with 4,000 sovs. added; for entire colts and fillies foaled in 1921; breeder of winner to receive 500 sovs.; owner of second 400 sovs.; and owner of third 200 sovs. St. Leger Course (about one mile, six furlongs, and 132 yards).

SALMON TROUT, b c, by The Tetrarch—Salamandra (The Aga Khan), 9st. B. Carslake 1

SANTORB, br c, by Santoi—Countess Torby (Mr. A. Barclay Walker), 9st. G. Hulme 2

POLYPHONTES, b c, by Polymelus—St. Josephine (Mr. S. B. Joel), 9st. McLachlan, sen. 3

Also ran—Mr. A. de Rothschild's Arcade, Sir A. Bailey's Bucks Yeoman, Lord Glanely's Cape Horn, Sir H. Cunliffe Owen's Eaglestone, Sir G. Bullough's Great Barrier, M. M. Boussac's Irismond, Sir R. Jardine's Obliterate, Lord Derby's Sansovino, Sir E. Hulton's Spalpeen, M. L. Mantacheff's Transvaal II., Captain A. H. Thistlethwayte's Watford, Mr. J. Shepherd's Winalot, Major G. Loder's Zodiac, Mr. A. J. Ash's Hurrybelle.

(Winner trained by R. Dawson, at Whatcombe.)

Betting—100 to 30 agst Polyphontes, 6 to 1 SALMON TROUT, 7 to 1 Sansovino, 10 to 1 Irismond, 100 to 6 Cape Horn, 20 to 1 each Winalot and Transvaal II., 25 to 1 each Obliterate and Spalpeen, 33 to 1 each Arcade and Watford, 40 to 1 Santorb, 50 to 1 Great Barrier, 66 to 1 Eaglestone, 100 to 1 each against the others.

Won by two lengths; half a length separated second and third. Obliterate was fourth, and Spalpeen last.

Printed by EYRE and SPOTTISWOODE, LTD., His Majesty's Printers, East Harding Street, E.C.4.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

RETURN TO the circulation desk of any
University of California Library
or to the
NORTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
Bldg. 400, Richmond Field Station
University of California
Richmond, CA 94804-4698

ALL BOOKS MAY BE RECALLED AFTER 7 DAYS
2-month loans may be renewed by calling
(415) 642-6233
1-year loans may be recharged by bringing books
to NRLF
Renewals and recharges may be made 4 days
prior to due date

DUE AS STAMPED BELOW

LIBRARY USE AUG 22 '86

LIBRARY USE OCT 24 '89

Digitized by Google

M86381

UE1
C3
v.14

THE UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google